



EMPEROR'S DOMINATION

BOOK 11

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Emperor's Domination

(帝霸)

by

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

(厌笔萧生)

Synopsis

One million years ago, Li Qiye planted a simple water bamboo into the ground.

Eight hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye had a koi fish pet.

Five hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye cared for a little girl.

.

.

.

In the present day, Li Qiye woke up from his slumber;

The water bamboo reached the apex of cultivation;

The koi fish became a Golden Dragon;

The little girl became the Nine Worlds' Immortal Empress.

This is a tale regarding an immortal human who was the teacher of the Demon Saint, Heavenly Beast, and Immortal Empress.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Bao @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001: Wang Clan

“Ah—” Miserable screams echoed continuously as the disciples of the school fell one after the other. They kept on rushing forward in an attempt to cull the bamboo tree, but no one was successful. All of them were killed off one by one!

Their blood went beyond just staining the ground. It slowly converged into a stream that flowed downhill.

One could see corpses everywhere along with broken treasures scattered about. At the same time, the shrill cries of the disciples that had yet to die turned the school into a purgatory!

After seeing this scene, the majority of the experts watching in the distance shivered. Even though the Saber Emperor School was not an imperial lineage, it was still an amazing great power. But today, such a lineage was destroyed and the worldly energy under its ancestral ground was sucked dry. This meant that this area had now become a wasteland. Even if some disciples survived, they still wouldn't be able to rebuild the school.

An expert quivered and commented: “Just what is that thing? It's too horrifying...”

He wasn't the only one, many people felt the very same fear. Earlier, the school had erected a great defensive perimeter, yet in the blink of an eye, it was turned into hell with flesh splattering everywhere. The majority of its disciples all died miserably in this place.

No one knew that this green bamboo that took root in the school was Giant Bamboo's divine protector. Of course, it naturally didn't come here in person.

This was possible because of the World Seal! Li Qiye had imprinted the divine protector into his treasure. In a sense, he was able to copy the entire bamboo tree!

Even though there was still a sizable disparity between the copy and the real deal, the tree was ultimately one of the two great demon forefathers of the Stone Medicine World. This copy wouldn't have any issues with destroying a Saber Emperor School.

This was the most heaven-defying aspect of the World Seal. It was able to copy anything, including even Immortal Emperors. Of course, in order to do so, it required the emperors' cooperation!

If an emperor agreed to do so, then the seal would be able to carry out this task. This meant that Li Qiye would have an emperor to fight for him!

"Ah—" Eventually, a very sad cry came about. The most powerful ancestor of the school was nailed to the ground by the green bamboo. His blood gently flowed down the streets.

"Rumble!" At this point, the ancestral ground began to crumble. After draining it of its worldly energy, the mountains here collapsed one by one.

“Boom!” Finally, the green bamboo dragged the school’s treasure trove out from the ground and turned back into the World Seal before flying off to the horizon.

The crowd was still stunned as they looked at the mess that was the school!

Not long ago, it was a powerful lineage, but after a short period of time, it now laid in ruins.

It could even be said that Li Qiye didn’t lift a single finger from start to finish. He didn’t even take a step inside the school.

In this manner, he destroyed the Saber Emperor School. The whole process seemed like an unbelievable legend!

“Shit, is Li Qiye still a person?” A commenter had his butt on the ground since his legs were too weak to let him stand.

An ancestor took a deep breath and murmured: “Lin Tiandi, Jikong Wudi, they can’t be better than this. No one will be able to complete with Fierce.”

At this time, people had already ranked Li Qiye above Lin Tiandi’s group.

A great character quietly whispered: “Fierce, his notoriety is real.

A quarrel will result in a sect destruction. He was heaven-defying in the past, and now he is even more heaven-defying.”

“What did you say?” The person next to him asked.

“Nothing, just talking to myself.” The great character shook his head and didn’t say anything else. Without a doubt, some people had figured out Li Qiye’s identity, but they didn’t reveal it. They wanted to see Li Qiye pierce through the sky as they were eager to watch the fun!

Li Qiye continued to move, but the World Seal caught up to him. He recalled it and threw the Saber Emperor School’s treasury into his fate palace without bothering to take a look at it.

In his eyes, a lineage like this school couldn’t reach the apex. Destroying it easily was to be expected.

“Li Qiye is going to the Wang Clan!” Those who were tailing him noticed his direction and immediately knew where he was going.

They immediately sped up to the Wang Clan. Everyone wanted to see what kind of methods Li Qiye would employ to destroy the clan. At this moment, many considered the Wang Clan’s destruction to be sealed in stone.

The Wang Clan was a prestigious clan, one of the oldest in the Blood-devil Tribe. It had actually produced an Immortal Emperor before, so it could be considered an ancient imperial lineage!

It covered a wide area. Looking around, one would find many rolling hills and majestic mountains. There was also a surging river that ran across the sky-reaching mountains. Ancient temples were right next to each other.

Such a grand atmosphere left people in awe. It resembled a fierce beast crouching down, deterring people from taking half a step forward!

Outside of the Immortal Emperor, it also produced some leaders of the Blood Race. They held control of the Blood-devil Tribe for several generations as well. Thus, it was logical for the Skybearing Monarch that hailed from the Wang Clan to be the future leader of the Blood-devil Tribe.

Because of its ancient and majestic atmosphere, those who had never seen much of the world would not dare to enter.

Right now, its gate was wide open. The entire clan was quiet, and there was no sign of powerful protectors or guarded forts. It seemed to be very welcoming of guests. The only thing was that there was no sign of anyone in the Wang Clan.

A big clan like this should have more than ten thousand disciples and almost a thousand families. However, not even a single shadow could be seen inside the clan. This painted quite a creepy scene.

Li Qiye stood outside of the entrance and smiled after looking

through the entire clan.

The spectators were watching from a safe distance. No one dared to come close. Some lineages even opened their heavenly mirrors to illuminate this area so that they could see the conclusion of this conflict.

Li Qiye's method of extermination for the Saber Emperor School was quite frightening and chill-inducing so at this moment, many were eager to see how Li Qiye would take care of the Wang Clan.

Li Qiye went past the gate and entered the Wang Clan. The spectators grew nervous after he entered and looked forward to this great upcoming battle.

However, there was no battle contrary to their expectations. Li Qiye did not meet any resistance. The clan seemed to be welcoming him inside. The grounds was an empty fortress. There were no disciples hiding in the shadows to ambush him either.

Li Qiye quickened his pace in this deserted clan and crossed one ancient temple after another.

"No one is there?" Someone murmured in surprise: "Don't tell me the Wang fled without fighting? There's no way."

This thought crossed some people's minds. However, throughout the entire clan, there were no signs of escaping because all the buildings were quite neat. They weren't messy and dirty from a

chaotic withdrawal. This was true for the rest of the clan as well.

“What is the Wang Clan doing?” Someone murmured after seeing the ghost town devoid of resistance.

A brilliant ancestor realized something and uttered: “The ambush has to be there!”

Li Qiye crossed one fort to another. Eventually, he stepped inside their ancestral ground and climbed to the highest peak inside.

A dragon throne was placed there as if it was prepared for Li Qiye, awaiting his arrival.

Li Qiye smirked after seeing this type of chair. He sat on it without any hesitation. On his throne, he looked around at the sceneries ahead and took them all in.

All the experts were nervous when they saw Li Qiye’s mighty attitude and his general disdain for all things while sitting on that throne. Many were aware that this was the calm before the storm.

“I’m already here with no thoughts of escaping, it would be a waste of your welcoming reception!” Li Qiye leisurely smiled: “Go for it, use whatever means you have. I want to see what your Blood-devil Tribe can do!”

“Buzz!” The moment he finished speaking, a portal opened above the Wang Clan. A black expanse poured out like a flood.

A gigantic army rushed out from the portal and instantly split into two groups to completely surround the Wang Clan.

Chapter 1002: Wang Dongtian

This great army descended from the sky like a flood bursting a dam. It was endless and surrounded the Wang Clan without leaving a single inch unoccupied. They became a great wall that suppressed the area.

It meant that once one was inside the Wang Clan, they could no longer fly out.

After the army besieged the clan, the scene became black with flashing steel and dancing banners. An aggressive aura suppressed the entire clan, causing others to be short of breath. Even an expert would feel their legs giving in.

This was not just an army of tens of thousands, they numbered in the hundreds of thousands! What was even more frightening was that they did not make any sounds while moving. It was a smooth deployment, the result of being well-trained!

“This, this is truly an invincible army!” A shivering soul murmured after seeing this.

After witnessing the army that numbered in the hundred thousands with Virtuous Paragon ancestors presiding over the ranks, any sect or race would quiver with fear.

“All of the lineages of the Blood-devil Tribe are participating in this war. Their elites are all here. This is nothing short of using their full strength!” A big shot spoke with apprehension.

Their solidarity made it easy for them to grow powerful. An enemy like Li Qiye warranted their full force. The elites of all thirty-five lineages came out for this battle. Their seclusive paragons and sealed ancestors all came into being without hesitation.

No matter one's race or lineage, even if they were from an imperial lineage, they would be trembling with horror before this showing!

Even an imperial lineage wouldn't have such unity within their sect, but the Blood-devil Tribe did. Just how frightening was it for dozens of lineages to come together like this?!

Li Qiye remained on his throne and gazed at the great army before him. He was still smiling and calm. In his eyes, not to mention this army of hundreds of thousands, even an army of a million strong was only a common sight for him.

All of the members in the Blood-devil Tribe right now had a cold expression, ranging from the gray-haired ancestors to the vivacious disciples.

There were more than one hundred Virtuous Paragons in this formation. All of them were at the ancestor level who wouldn't normally come out very easily. However, this was a crisis for the tribe, thus they came out without any hesitation.

Heavenly Kings were too numerous to count. All of their blood

energy ran strong with boiling momentum. It was as if a battle to the very last man was fine if it was to protect their tribe.

The spectators were dead silent. Such a great showing from the tribe left them utterly shocked.

Li Qiye revealed a smile as he glanced at the army: “No matter what, it has to be said that your Blood-devil Tribe is indeed incredible. From just a few short generations, you were able to grow from a medium size tribe to a great power. This was due to your solidarity that the other races lack, especially the humans.”

The human experts in the horizon became flustered after hearing this. Li Qiye was right, humans only worried about themselves and worked for their own wellbeing. If the humans could act like the Blood-devil Tribe, then they would be terrifying. No race in the Mortal Emperor World would dare to oppose the humans. They could even potentially sweep through the nine worlds!

“You know of our unity so you should also understand that we Blood-devils will not bow down to any enemy.” A coarse voice came about: “We will fight to the end until we destroy our enemies, no matter who they might be!”

An old man stepped out to appear before everyone. He was adorned with an imperial robe and had God-Monarch circles pulsing around him. Despite his gray hair, he gave off a vigorous feel. There was a strong momentum that seemed to declare that he was a blade that had yet to age!

The more dreadful part was the God-Monarch aura that he emitted. He let his aura run rampant, allowing it to roar like a gigantic dragon.

Without a doubt, this old man was a real God-Monarch, one at great completion. Someone that barely stepped into this realm like the Storm God couldn't compare to him at all.

“Who is he?” Not too many people knew who he was.

A Blood ancestor recognized this old man's identity and murmured: “Wang Dongtian! He used to be the leader of the Blood-devil Tribe and is currently the strongest ruler of the Wang Clan. I didn't think that even he would come into being...!”

Wang Dongtian! The younger generation might not think anything of this name, but many ancestors from the previous generation got chills after hearing it. This was because the bizarre solidarity of the Blood-devil Tribe started with him. His reign was the reason why the tribe became so prosperous.

Li Qiye leisurely replied: “It seems that you are very confident that your tribe will be victorious in this battle.”

Wang Dongtian stared at Li Qiye with a profound gaze and responded slowly: “I am aware of you annihilating the Saber Emperor School as well as your heaven-defying means. However, we have an army of more than a hundred thousand here—”

“Numbers are completely meaningless to me.” Li Qiye interrupted him and shook his head: “Even if you had a million soldiers here, I still wouldn’t give a damn!”

Despite this bold claim, no one dared to mock Li Qiye right now unlike the past!

“The strength of my tribe is beyond your imagination. Even if you are a Godking, don’t even dream about leaving this place alive!” Wang Dongtian spoke solemnly: “No matter how powerful or invincible you may be, our tribe will not falter against the enemy. We will fight to the end!”

“So courageous. In your opinion, should I be feeling despair right now?” Li Qiye smiled.

“My tribe can spare you a path of survival.” Wang Dongtian glanced at him and spoke: “If you swear loyalty to us, we can forgive you! However, you must make an oath with your true fate!”

His offer left the experts outside surprised. Li Qiye had killed so many people from his tribe and even destroyed the Saber Emperor School, yet he was still willing to spare Li Qiye in exchange for his loyalty. This was indeed a cause for astonishment.

“Maybe recruiting Li Qiye is a good choice!” A Blood ancestor saw something deeper and murmured: “At the moment, the Blood-devil Tribe is missing a capable successor who can take care of the bigger picture!”

“Interesting, how interesting.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile as he leisurely added: “If I am not mistaken, you must have received some news from the Blood Primal Ground.”

He paused for a moment here: “How amusing, I can understand if it was the Storm God being stubborn after receiving the news. She is a vixen who can’t tell right from wrong, all she does is whatever she wants!”

“But as for you...” Li Qiye smiled: “I have heard of your stories before. After receiving those messages, you still want to work together with the Storm God — I find this to be very interesting.”

Wang Dongtian glared at Li Qiye. A cold glint flashed across his eyes but disappeared right away. He slowly spoke: “Those who kill our tribe’s disciples are our enemies! Your hands are stained with our blood — this won’t be resolved with just a few words!”

“Good, very well.” Li Qiye clapped in response and smiled: “In a certain sense, you are a great hero to your tribe. They really should build a great monument for you. However, after today, I’m afraid you will be condemned as an eternal sinner of the Blood-devil Tribe!”

“Hero or sinner, it doesn’t matter.” Wang Dongtian ignored Li Qiye’s words and slowly declared: “Man proposes but heaven disposes! Let the heavens be the judge!”

Many were confused by the dialogue between the two. However,

a few Blood ancestors were astounded to hear this since they could faintly guess a thing or two.

Li Qiye having ties with the primal ground was no secret. If the primal ground sent a message or even an order regarding Li Qiye's situation, yet the Storm God and the Blood-devil Tribe still chose to oppose Li Qiye... this was something worth musing over.

Like Li Qiye said, the Storm God was an unreasonable vixen, but Wang Dongtian — on the contrary — was a wise man!

Why would this intelligent leader do something like this? Thus, the Blood ancestors here speculated that this had something to do with the Blood-devil Tribe's ambitions!

Chapter 1003: Meeting Old Friends Again

There were a few Blood ancestors who had heard rumors of the Blood-devil Tribe's ambitions. They believed that the tribe wanted to be the top clan within the Blood Race.

In fact, no one really suspected this rumor. After all, they had produced three Immortal Emperors in the past. The tribe itself had frightening resources, and more importantly, ever since Wang Dongtian took over, the tribe had undergone many changes. They became strong to an alarming level. After several generations of reforms, they became the unified entity of today.

Although they did not produce an emperor during this time, geniuses came out one after another. There were many paragons and even eternal existences! Some even said that the tribe was the side branch with the highest number of paragons in the Blood Race.

And there was a scarier rumor. It stated that their ambition did not stop there. The tribe even wanted to become an existence that rivaled the Blood Primal Ground. It even went beyond that; some believed that they wanted to replace the primal ground altogether.

Of course, the majority of the Blood ancestors only snorted at these rumors. They assumed that they were only propaganda spouted by the humans or the other races. The goal was to destroy the Blood Race's unity.

The truth was that these ancestors found it to be an impossible

matter. For millions of years and generation after generation, the primal ground had always controlled the Blood Race in the nine worlds. No one or any lineage could ever shake the primal ground's position in the Blood Race.

Thus, they attributed these rumors to be malicious slander. The Blood-devil Tribe couldn't be stupid enough to challenge the primal ground's position! This was simply courting death!

However, after hearing the exchange between Li Qiye and Wang Dongtian, some of these Blood ancestors with great statuses were slightly startled. They couldn't help but recall these past rumors about the Blood-devil Tribe. They trembled at the thought of them maybe being true!

The younger generation did not know the relationship between Li Qiye and the primal ground. However, the primal ground had recently sent messages to the powerful side branches of the Blood Race. Even a fool would understand that Li Qiye carried great significance for the primal ground. He could even take over the leadership of the Blood Race!

Although such speculations did not receive a direct response from the primal ground, it was enough to show Li Qiye's importance.

Yet, even after receiving these messages, someone as smart as Wang Dongtian chose to work together with the Storm God to oppose Li Qiye? What did this mean?

“Man proposes but heaven disposes. Let the heavens be the judge. Well said.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but praise: “I have to admit that you are a man with a vision. However, you have underestimated your enemy so much that this act is no longer a vision, it is simply overestimating your own abilities!”

“Overestimating my own abilities?” Wang Dongtian’s profound eyes emitted a cold glimmer as he slowly responded: “Against a supreme lord, I will admit that I don’t know my own limits. But against you, I don’t believe this is the case.”

“Hahahaha, how funny.” Li Qiye chuckled: “You will never find out what kind of enemy you are facing right now. In fact, your knowledge of the Blood Primal Ground is only scraps and pieces; otherwise, you will already be regretting the decision you made today.”

“Is that so?” Wang Dongtian retorted: “My Blood-devil Tribe will never know regret. We swear to fight to the very last man against our enemies!”

“How brave.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “Fine, you all have seen what I am capable of and should have a clear assessment of my strength. Thus, you should be well prepared. I have always been merciful and gave my enemies ample opportunities. Begin, show me everything you have. I’ll wait so that others won’t say that I never gave you all a fighting chance.”

Wang Dongtian stared at Li Qiye without speaking. His leisurely and relaxed attitude didn’t seem to be just for show. It really made Wang Dongtian wonder just how many heaven-defying means Li

Qiye had.

However, he didn't have time to hesitate. He slowly uttered: "Very well, since you are so confident, I'll let you see our great solidarity firsthand!"

"Commence!" He shouted out a command.

The tightly packed army that surrounded the Wang Clan did not immediately attack Li Qiye after the command. A battalion of disciples instantly formed formations. Magical runes appeared on their bodies.

"Buzz!" The entire Wang territory lit up. Formation arrays rose from the ground and illuminated the area.

Many chants resounded. A very powerful force in the middle of this land fluctuated. Next, series of continuous explosions blared.

"Pop!" A very mighty bloody ray soared into the sky from within the clan. It tore apart the initial firmament. Its crimson radiance turned into a formation high above as if it was about to open a timeless portal.

"What is this?" Many people felt uneasy after seeing the portal in the sky in addition to sensing the fluctuation of this timeless power.

"Interesting." Li Qiye glanced at the portal but still sat leisurely

on his throne: “I have heard of this legend before. Alas, it can’t reach the apex against me.”

His words turned Wang Dongtian’s expression sour because this portal hid the ultimate power of their Blood-devil Tribe. However, Li Qiye’s casual words were full of disdain. This was an affront to the great effort of their tribe’s wise sages!

“Such a big tone!” Wang Dongtian coldly said: “Surrender now or you won’t be able to escape death when the time comes, even if you are a Godking!”

“Really now?” Before Li Qiye could speak, another tyrannical voice sounded in the air: “You think your Blood-devil Tribe is so amazing? Try us then!”

This soul-stealing yet pleasant voice speaking in this tyrannical manner immediately attracted many gazes.

At this time, many figures soared closer. A huge snail appeared before everyone. On top of the snail were three girls wearing the same uniform.

Many eyes lit up after seeing the three. They were definitely worthy of the phrase “kingdom-toppling to an unrivaled level.”

All three had their own style and charm. One was graceful with an air of nobility, the other was as cold as ice, and the last was enchantingly sexy!

The speaker was the sexy girl. She had a tall and thin figure with ample curves. Her milky-white breasts were full and round. Her appearance was indescribably alluring and caused everyone to lose their minds.

These three supreme women would draw gazes no matter where they went.

“Who are they?” Countless youths were fascinated and enchanted by them.

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile after seeing the three. He felt a hard-to-describe feeling as if he had just seen his family again.

He was all too familiar with these three since they were quite memorable. Su Yonghuang, Li Shuangyan, and Chen Baojiao. There was also Niu Fen, who had turned into the gigantic snail.

“The younger generation shall surpass us with time!” Wang Dongtian saw the three and his eyes turned serious after he uttered this praise. As the leader of the Blood-devil Tribe, he immediately noticed certain clues after seeing them.

“The terrifying part has yet to come!” After so many years, Chen Baojiao was still as hot-headed as before. She shouted: “Young Noble, let us drive back the enemy for you!”

With that, she stepped into the sky and used an overbearing

momentum to infiltrate the great army.

With a serious gaze, Wang Dongtian commanded: “Stop them!”

With his command, a cavalry rushed out from the great coalition. Under the command of an ancestor, they swiftly rushed towards Chen Baojiao.

“Just in time!” She shouted. A terrifying storm swirled around her body. She borrowed the momentum of the world as well as the force of myriad dao. Her Tyrannical Sacred Spring Physique immediately made her combat prowess soar crazily.

“Clank!” A saber crossed the sky, capable of slashing down the stars themselves. It swung up and down, causing blood to splash right away. Heads started to fly. Several hundred experts couldn’t even stop her single slash.

The Tyrannical Spring Physique, the Tyrannical Immortal Saber, and the Heaven Traversing Eight Slashes were a perfect combination. They were enough for Chen Baojiao to meet god, slay god; meet devil, slaughter devil.

“Activate the formation!” Wang Dongtian was startled to see Chen Baojiao slaying a Virtuous Paragon with a single slash, so he immediately gave another command.

Five more cavalries rushed out from the ranks and turned into a five elements formation in order to trap Chen Baojiao.

“Slay!” Li Shuangyan uttered a powerful roar. She rushed forward and turned into an ethereal figure like an elf playing in the snow.

She went straight for the Blood-devil experts that were powering the timeless portal. Of course, Wang Dongtian didn’t need to give the order; the army absolutely wouldn’t allow her to get close to these experts.

Four more cavalries rushed out from the army to block her path. They attacked with a world-sealing momentum to stop her from taking another step towards the summoning array!

Chapter 1004: Unbeatable Immortal

Physiques

“Buzz!” The moment these cavalries from the Blood-devil Tribe sealed the area, Li Shuangyan exuded an astonishingly holy light. Time and space suddenly shook in this moment.

She stepped forward through the sealed area. Even this great trap couldn't deter her path.

“Zzz—” At this moment, people finally noticed a crest on her head. This was the ice crown she obtained from the World Tree. The moment she put it on, it immediately sealed everything with a layer of ice.

The experts who attacked her became frozen instantly. Next was a series of shattering sounds. The ones that were trapped all broke into pieces, including the Virtuous Paragons!

Void Imperfection Physique — this allowed Li Shuangyan to move freely under any problematic situations. Myriad techniques couldn't touch her while her own dao would spread far and wide. It was destined for her to resemble a transcendent lotus.

“Use fire to stop her!” Wang Dongtian was aghast. He immediately issued the order the moment he saw her ice attack kill so many experts.

“Go!” Eight new cavalry divisions ran out. They used their

longevity blood to accelerate a supreme art. It turned into a gigantic fire dragon that then flew straight for Li Shuangyan.

“Die!” Li Shuangyan was unperturbed against the eternal existence leading the eight divisions. The Heavenly Sky Plate floated above her while she wielded the Six Dao Sword; the sacred physique was her only protection. Each of her steps created a new lotus flower to pave her way into battle.

“Playing with fire? I’ll show you a real dao of fire!” Seeing the fire dragon formed by the eight divisions, Su Yonghuang shouted and soared forward as well, leaving behind a path of flames in the air.

An endless extreme Yang fire descended. A sun began to rise from in front of her chest. She seemed like a Golden Crow immersed in the sun, scorching the entire world.

Her own fire dragons roared. This extreme Yang fire turned into fire dragons and swept by everything. Miserable screams came about; many Blood-devil disciples were instantly burnt to ashes.

“Open!” Eventually, a Blood-devil paragon used an imperial weapon and borrowed the blood energy from several thousand disciples to support it in an attempt to stop the extreme Yang fire from assaulting the area!

“Extreme Yang Physique!” A royal lord was able to recognize the physique and exclaimed in shock as Su Yonghuang terrorized the world with her flame.

“I’m here as well!” Niu Fen also shouted. He didn’t need to transform and continued to rampage as a snail as large as a mountain. He slammed into the Blood-devil army and caused blood to flow. Wherever he went, one could hear the breaking of bones. Mangled flesh scattered all around him. Even a regular paragon would be blown flying while spurting blood from a shattered body.

This sect master had taken a vacation at the Grand Middle Territory before. He murmured in amazement while watching this scene: “The Cleansing Incense’s three great beauties as well as their three Immortal Physiques! I have heard stories about their recent rise; it seems that they were indeed the case. One sect with three Immortal Physiques — this is more than enough to sweep through any sect or lineage!”

“It really is scary.” All the spectators couldn’t help but feel astonished. A paragon commented: “Three young geniuses have already become Virtuous Paragons with half-completion Immortal Physiques. The three of them together is simply unstoppable!”

“Void Imperfection Physique, Extreme Yang Physique, but what is the last one?” A great character from the previous generation checked out the three’s physiques. However, he couldn’t recognize Chen Baojiao’s physique.

“Maybe it is the Furious Immortal Tyrannical Physique, one of the twelve.” A different big shot responded, but he wasn’t completely sure and only speculated.

“They came from Cleansing Incense, why are they helping Li Qiye right now?” A junior was confused about the three suddenly assisting Li Qiye.

The sect master explained to his junior: “You haven’t been to the Grand Middle Territory so you don’t know. Li Qiye came from Cleansing Incense; he is their prime disciple. Back when he was at the Hundred Cities, he murdered thousands in a furor and personally destroyed the Tiger Howl School! This is back when he was very young. Later on, he disappeared for a long time, so everyone assumed that he was dead. Who would expect him to show up now in the southern region.”

“Brother Hong, so you have been aware of Li Qiye’s identity much earlier. How come you didn’t tell us?!” A different school master looked at the sect master with wide-open eyes.

“Li Qiye is famous for his notoriety, and the Blood Race just happens to want to fight him. Why should I let them know?” This sect master smilingly spoke.

Li Qiye quietly sat on his throne and watched the four kill with a grin on his face. They were all groomed by him, so he was very happy to see their current accomplishments!

Chen Baojiao was swinging her saber that had an unstoppable sharpness; Li Shuangyan was untouched by myriad arts and had a supreme and free presence; Su Yonghuang’s flame incinerated the sky and bullied the world. Lastly, Niu Fen was ferocious with raw power. His gigantic body made it difficult for the enemies to hurt him.

In just a moment, the four of them tempestuously fought inside the great army. Even though the paragons from the Blood-devil Tribe had taken out imperial weapons, they still couldn't stop the four.

The spectators outside were quivering while watching this scene in shock. The younger generation was even more disturbed.

“A paragon with a half completion Immortal Physique is unstoppable even when facing an imperial weapon.” An ancestor commented with a tinge of emotion.

“Grand Middle Territory, so many geniuses are there...” In the far distance, Bai Jian watched with several ancestors protecting him. He gently sighed during his observation.

Back during his youth, he had traveled the world and went to the Grand Middle Territory as well as the Eastern Hundred Cities. He understood the situations in these places very well. Now, watching Su Yonghuang's group being unstoppable inside this army left him feeling sentimental.

“There are so many Immortal Physiques over there. Just the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect alone has three. Then the Mortal King of the Jewel Pillar Sacred School also has a half-completion Immortal Physique. They also have Jikong Wudi... It is true that their younger generation is far better than the Barren Earth's, better than the Blood Race's as well.” Bai Jian sighed once more.

Even though the southern region had the “One Emperor, Five Saints”, the truth was that as one of the five, Bai Jian knew very well that they were not even a match for Ye Chuyun, let alone Jikong Wudi.

Despite the southern region being dominated by the Blood Race, it seemed that the current young Blood generation was not as great as those in the other domains.

In fact, he was not the only one who felt this sentiment. The other Blood experts who were watching this fight, especially the big shots, were amazed as well. The Immortal Physiques were simply unstoppable.

After seeing Chen Baojiao’s group dominating the grand army, Li Qiye chuckled and looked over at Wang Dongtian: “How long do you think your army can hold out for? If your side only has one God-Monarch — you... I’m afraid this won’t be enough.”

“I’d like to see what you can do!” Wang Dongtian turned serious. He glanced at the portal in the sky. His God-Monarch rings pulsed even more with a great celestial world floating behind him. In the blink of an eye, he was the ruler of this celestial world, instilling fear and awe in all.

He finally wanted to take action and unleashed their tribe’s ultimate attack. He was simply testing Li Qiye to see all of his methods prior to this.

“You alone are not worthy of testing the Young Noble.” As Li

Qiye was still sitting leisurely on his throne, a voice next to him answered Wang Dongtian who was ready to attack.

A person appeared next to Li Qiye. Even Wang Dongtian couldn't clearly see how he appeared. He wore a paper hat; it was Arcane Guru.

A little bit ago, he was blown flying by the Immortal Emperor's sentiment. Nevertheless, Li Qiye wasn't worried about him at all. He had a heaven-defying treasure protecting his body, so it wouldn't be easy to actually kill him.

Wang Dongtian stared at him. His profound eyes narrowed and emitted a frightening glint.

“You all want to go big, so what's the point of keeping it hidden!” Li Qiye laughed at Wang Dongtian: “Just let those hiding in the dark come out. How can you still remain calm while watching your disciples be killed like this?”

Wang Dongtian's eyes slightly shifted after hearing this before raising his voice: “Elders, it is time for us to end this. Please come and subdue these juniors.”

After these words were spoken, three figures suddenly floated into the sky. Their appearance heralded God-Monarch auras that flipped over the firmament like a rising tide. They had imperial weapons ready.

“Boom!” The weapons shattered the void and went straight for the three girls in the middle of the grand army.

The spectating ancestors in a safe distance palpitated when they saw God-Monarchs using imperial weapons. The vast aura caused many youths to directly kneel down from the pressure.

The three girls roared and, with a slash, Chen Baojiao let free of her eight saber techniques. The Tyrannical Immortal Saber cut through devils and immortals to stop the imperial weapons. Meanwhile, Li Shuangyan’s sword turned into the six dao while her Heavenly Sky Plate stopped anyone from reading the heavenly fortunes. In addition to this, her crown made out of ice reversed the universe in an attempt to strike down the weapon.

Su Yonghuang had a crimson halberd in her hands. Her expertise made it resemble a soaring true dragon or a great sovereign making his appearance. Under her endless extreme Yang fire, everything was annihilated in the firmament. She alone stopped one of the weapons as well.

“Rumble!” The three girls managed to stop the weapons’ offense. However, one could easily imagine the power behind these weapons when God-Monarchs were controlling them. Although the three girls were strong, they were knocked flying with blood dripping from the corners of their mouths.

Chapter 1005: The Leader

“Kill them!” The three God-Monarchs wanted to kill the three girls in one fell swoop without giving them a chance to breathe. The imperial weapons surged once more and recommenced their attack.

“Formation!” Li Shuangyan shouted and summoned a formation array. The three of them quickly came together and formed a vast formation!

One side of this formation was an endless sea of flames. The Extreme Yang Physique refined this place into a fiery domain. On the other side was an extremely sacred land as if it was a world of deities. In the third domain, a terrifying storm ravaged the earth like those in the legends; it wanted to tear myriad laws asunder.

Three Immortals Formation — this was a supreme formation built on the basis of the three’s Immortal Physiques. It borrowed their physiques’ power to support the arrays. It not only unleashed their greatest potential but also fused them together perfectly to reach a frightening level.

“Boom!” The formation received the attack from the three imperial weapons without being damaged at all. Next, it instantly trapped the three God-Monarchs within.

“Rumble!” At this time, the endless storm erupted. The immortal flame instantly engulfed the three monarchs. In the realm of the deities, a sacred power suppressed them and began to separate

their grand dao...

Many were astonished to see the three monarchs suppressed within.

A Blood ancestor said with fear: “They, they are the three oldest ancestors of the Blood-devil Tribe!”

The great army wanted to shatter the Three Immortals Formation in order to help the monarchs. However, Niu Fen alone stopped their progress and shouted: “Scram!”

He had turned back into his humanoid form at this time. After a loud cry, it seemed that he had figured out the mysteries of this world. His body became very large and majestic. An endless heavenly glow shone on him, making it seem as if he had turned into a great deity. His blood energy soared to the sky and became dazzlingly bright. Each strand of his blood energy emitted a divine aura.

He shouted again and unleashed a strike that destroyed all the celestials in the way. The earth moldered and almost ten thousand Blood experts were crushed in an instant!

“What is that?” People were startled to see his divine strands of blood energy. Not too many had ever seen a cultivator’s blood energy emitting a divine aura such as this before. It looked like something that only belonged to a godly race of the legends!

“The bloodline of a true god, so incredible!” An ancient voice came about. A huge palm came from the sky. Niu Fen roared and thrust both hands up to meet this incoming palm.

“Boom!” The exchange shattered mountains and rivers. Niu Fen’s gigantic body took several thumping steps back and smashed apart the hills behind him. Even with the eighteen solutions at his disposal, he was still not a match for this new enemy.

“It really is a descendant of a true god!” A person showed up in the sky and was surprised to see Niu Fen survive his palm attack.

He emitted an aura that would make paragons tremble. He stood in the distance in a supreme and sacred manner. It seemed that each of his gestures could reverse the universe and control the world.

“A Godking...” Not to mention the younger generation, even the big shots from the previous generation were startled and became timid.

A Godking had finally made his move. This meant that this storm was about to end.

“He is not only a Godking, he is one of the past leaders!” A Blood ancestor recognized this person and felt his scalp tingling: “He is the most amazing leader of the Blood Race after Immortal Emperor Chen Xue, the one who had control of all the Bloods in the nine worlds!”

“It’s that leader?” Another big shot from the Blood Race quivered and responded: “But he isn’t from the Blood-devil Tribe, why is he helping them?”

Those in the Blood Race who knew about this leader became quite jolted. This person ahead was a very old ancestor. Rumor has it that he had been sealed for a while and wouldn’t come into being ever again. Who would have thought that he would come out today for the Blood-devil Tribe?

The one standing in the high sky above looked down on the entire battlefield. Even if he didn’t try to put on airs, he still emitted a suffocating aura as a very powerful Godking. Moreover, he had once ruled over the Blood Race in the nine worlds and was considered the best leader after Immortal Emperor Chen Xue!

His eyes fell upon Li Qiye as he slowly uttered: “You do indeed have some amazing means. However, I have met many others with amazing means as well. It is your honor to have me personally come out today.”

“You shouldn’t have gotten involved in this matter, but since this is already the case, my old bones will have to check you out then.” A different feeble voice rang. Someone instantly jumped into the firmament.

This was an old daoist who was dressed quite shabbily. His robes were so dirty that no one would know when the last time he washed was. His eyes were full of drowsiness, making it seem as if he would fall over into a deep sleep at any given moment.

An old daoist coming out of nowhere and challenging the leader left many people confused. Everyone knew the leader. He was definitely a terrorizing Godking whose fame was not just for show.

However, this daoist that resembled a beggar who came out of nowhere and challenged him left many spectators speculating his identity.

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile after seeing the daoist. He was from the Heavenly Dao Academy, Peng Keng!

“Heavenly Dao Academy.” The leader was definitely worthy of his prestige. He immediately recognized Peng Keng's background — truly incredible.

His eyes seemed to pierce the eons as he gazed at Peng Keng: “Even though your dao is heaven-defying, you are still not my match.”

“Even an Immortal Emperor thought highly of you back then, so I know that you are very unfathomable.” Peng Keng didn't seem to mind as he drank a gulp of wine and smiled: “However, how many moves do you think you will need to defeat me? Five hundred or maybe one thousand?!”

This response shocked many experts. If the leader who was even praised by an emperor needed five hundred to one thousand moves to defeat this old daoist, then just how powerful was this old daoist?

The leader glared at Peng Keng as if he wanted to see through him and find his weakness to deliver a fatal blow. However, Peng Keng was still relaxed and continued to pour wine into his mouth.

“Rumble!” At this time, space suddenly quaked. The portal in the sky finally opened. A bloody brilliance descended and blocked out the world. The entire Barren Earth could see this brilliance; it was truly too magnificent.

A vast country emerged from this bloody light. It was endless like a sea of blood with countless citizens living within. There were deities above these citizens, and even greater than them were three majestic figures that controlled this kingdom of blood!

The appearance of this bloody kingdom left many people astonished. Many sects in the far-reaching southern regions felt an extraordinary aura.

Needless to say about the spectators on site, they were rendered speechless from shock. The Blood cultivators had an even stronger reaction. They felt an urge to prostrate in worship as if this kingdom was the home of the Blood Race, the heavenly kingdom in the hearts of the Blood disciples! To be able to live in this kingdom was a great honor.

“It is done...” Even a big shot like Wang Dongtian revealed a happy expression after seeing the kingdom appear in the sky.

A very old Blood ancestor in the horizon lost his voice: “This, this

is the Immortal Blood Kingdom!”

“Immortal Blood Kingdom? What’s that?” A junior had to ask since he had never heard of this name before.

“It is merely a legend, I didn’t expect it to be real.” The old ancestor stared at the kingdom in disbelief and murmured: “In the legends, the first Immortal Emperor of the Blood-devil Tribe had a vision — to build a supreme kingdom for their tribe...”

“... However, there was no news about this later on. The future descendants all thought that this emperor had failed. Who would have thought that he didn’t fail and only established it in a different form? Moreover, the other two emperors of the tribe exerted their efforts as well.”

At this point, this ancestor quivered and knew why the Blood-devil Tribe had the ambition to compete with the Blood Primal Ground and maybe even replace it.

The great army also looked up with strong emotions. If it wasn’t for the ongoing battle, they would have prostrated on the ground in worship.

It was just like what this ancestor had said, this kingdom of blood was created by the three emperors of the Blood-devil Tribe. They even used their own longevity blood to refine it. It had mysticisms beyond comprehension and stored an unimaginable power within!

Chapter 1006: Massacre

Because of this Immortal Blood Kingdom, the tribe finally had the ambition to think about replacing the Blood Primal Ground.

“Today, even if your academy’s Realm God comes himself, he still wouldn’t be able to reverse the tide!” The leader smiled and glanced over at Peng Keng with full confidence.

Next, he turned back at Li Qiye and slowly uttered: “The kingdom of blood is here; it shall herald a new golden age for the Blood-devil Tribe. Today, all of you will be the first sacrifice.”

“Being confident is not a bad thing. Unfortunately, you all will never find out who you are facing.” Li Qiye smiled and clapped his hands: “Okay, ladies, enough warming up and playing around. Come back, it is time for your Young Noble to take action.”

Li Qiye’s words were not sonorous, but everyone here heard them clearly.

“Boom!” The Three Immortals Formation opened and the three girls quickly retreated. Meanwhile, the monarchs inside looked especially distressed. If it wasn’t for the imperial weapons protecting them, they might not have been able to survive inside.

Many people gasped after seeing this. These three girls were a bit too heaven-defying! They were actually capable of trapping God-Monarchs to death!

Li Qiye glanced at the group and said: “The Blood-devils came for me, so you all can back off. There is a very good saying — every injustice has its perpetrator, every debt has its debtor. My feud with the Blood-devils will end today.”

“We’re waiting to see Young Noble’s domination.” The first to leave the battle was Niu Fen. He jumped out without any hesitation and laughed.

Arcane Guru instantly disappeared without another word. Peng Keng drank another gulp of wine then looked over at the leader and the grand army before shaking his head with emotion: “Blood-devil Tribe... I’m afraid it will become history after today.” With that, he turned around and left as well.

Wang Dongtian and the leader didn’t try to prevent them from leaving. Their only goal was Li Qiye.

However, this did indeed shock many people. If it was someone else, why would they not take advantage of the help from such powerful supporters? Li Qiye, on the other hand, chose to fight the entire tribe alone — one versus hundreds of thousands.

“Though we are enemies, I must admit that you are quite heroic for a junior.” The leader stared at Li Qiye and stated: “Unfortunately, you shouldn’t have opposed our tribe and destroyed your own future in the process!”

The leader was an amazing Godking. He once rampaged across

the nine worlds and then accepted the Blood Primal Ground's proposition of becoming the new leader of the Bloods!

Later on, he sealed himself and didn't come out. As someone who had obtained supreme glory, very few things in this world could tempt him. The possibility of making him come into being was even lower.

But now, the Blood-devil Tribe was able to do so. This meant that they must have given him an offer that couldn't be refused, the kingdom of blood! This was the thing he wanted the most!

Otherwise, how could a famous Godking like him come out for the Blood-devils?!

Li Qiye simply smiled and shook his head: "Xu Situ ah Xu Situ, you were once an incredible Godking and became the spokesman for the primal ground. Just imagine, oh how bright your vision used to be. Alas, you were blinded by greed and have ruined your lifetime's prestige. You have grown old and senile."

The leader's eyes lit up and stared at Li Qiye. He felt astonished as well. Very few people in the current generation knew his name.

Li Qiye ignored the leader and glanced over at Wang Dongtian: "And as for you, you were quite brilliant back then as well, to be able to unify the Blood-devils like this and allowing them to flourish under your control. It is a shame that your brain has rotted from old age, to be this arrogant and think that with just your tribe and kingdom of blood, you would be able to challenge

the primal ground's authority!"

"You simply don't know the primal ground at all!" Li Qiye laughed and shook his head: "Xu Situ knows how powerful it is but chose not to tell you. The only thing he wants is this kingdom of blood."

Li Qiye's revelation of the Blood-devil Tribe's ambition of replacing the primal ground left many experts dumbfounded. Both Bloods and members of the other races were startled by how grand this goal was!

"Your effort of creating a rift between us is useless." The leader slightly shook his head: "Those who are not part of our race will always have ulterior motives. No matter what you did to confuse the primal ground, a Blood disciple has the obligation to maintain our pure bloodline!"

Li Qiye stood up from his throne: "Whatever you say. Regardless of whether your actions are for the tribe or for the kingdom of blood, let us end this."

Having said that, he looked up at the kingdom in the sky and couldn't help but reveal a beaming smirk.

Wang Dongtian's heart suddenly skipped a beat the moment he saw this smile coming from Li Qiye. An ominous feeling stirred inside him.

Wang Dongtian spoke with a deep voice: “Li Qiye, it is not too late to surrender.” His profound gaze was fixated on Li Qiye. The moment Li Qiye showed any opening, he would immediately subdue him.

“Surrender?” Li Qiye shook his head: “Wang Dongtian, you are too arrogant and are simply underestimating this situation. Even if your tribe wants to avoid trouble starting from now, I am no longer willing to let you go. Since it has escalated to this level, if I don’t destroy your tribe, how will I build my supreme prestige?!”

“Exactly what I want!” The leader took out an imperial weapon and raised his voice: “If there is nothing else to say, then let us fight to the death!”

“Very well, to the death!” Li Qiye grinned. The silver arrow appeared in his hand as he declared: “Watch me turn this place into hell!”

With that, the silver arrow instantly shot into the ground.

“Rumble!” The world shook while this location became submerged. In the blink of an eye, it seemed that this location was once again being rebuilt. All of the lands here disappeared, including the Wang Clan. There were no longer ancient buildings and tall peaks. Everything was engulfed in a torrential and endless chaos.

Primordial chaos was the only thing in sight, as if this was the beginning of the world. The grand dao had yet to form, and the

same went for the universal laws. This was a primal state, ruled by the primordial chaos.

“Is this the primordial world of the legends?” Even people of the ancestor level were jolted after seeing the Wang Clan being immersed in this primordial chaos.

“Boom!” In a split second, three boats appeared in the endless chaos — the vessel of life, vessel of genesis, and vessel of athanasia!

Their emergence unleashed three forces of life, creation, and everlastingness into this world encompassed within the chaos.

The three grand forces were powerful beyond imagination. The life force carried the blood energy of all the existences of three thousand worlds. The force of creation resembled a Creator God with matchless strength, beginning all things. The everlasting force was even more eternal; there was no end, even across the eons...

“Zzz—” When this surging and boundless power poured into the primordial chaos, a mighty array emerged. The world became stunned while the deities trembled. An indescribable murderous aura swept through the endless stars and crushed all existences in this world. Even the gods and emperors felt insignificant inside this formation.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” The majority of the experts in the distance immediately fell down. They were suppressed by this terrifying murderous aura despite being far away and lost their ability to fly.

In just a second, sounds of people falling came about. All the spectating cultivators met the ground and couldn't even stand up. They could only hug the ground while quivering continuously. Even ancestors were helpless under this murderous aura. They became fish on the chopping block and were overwhelmed with fear.

“Just, just what is that...” This murderous aura suppressed the entire Southern Barren Earth and spread to virtually all of the Mortal Emperor World.

Countless living beings were lying on the ground in the southern regions. They couldn't stand up at all. Even Heavenly Kings became insignificant insects, let alone weaker cultivators.

The end of the world seemed to have arrived at the Barren Earth. All trembled in fear and hoped that time could move a little bit faster since this sensation was like torture, akin to millions of years of suffering.

“Ah—” Shrill bursts of screams came from inside the primordial chaos. The experts prostrating outside were scared out of their minds!

Many cultivators had experienced life and death battles before, but they were defenseless against this murderous pressure. While listening to the miserable screams, they felt that nothing could be more frightening than this. Some even soiled their pants! This was going to be the most terrifying nightmare in their lives!

Chapter 1007: Turned Into Ashes

No one could see what was happening inside the chaos, but they could imagine the horrifying hell within from just listening to the pitiful screams.

Many were alarmed by this murderous aura; even existences sealed for many years got up from fear and became completely pale.

“Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation...” Inside Heavenguard, a very old ancestor gazed towards the horizon. He was both moved and excited as he murmured: “His Excellency has taken action. The nine heavens and ten earths shall quake in fear, the gods and emperors all have to prostrate!”

The several seclusive clans in the Holy City were alerted as well. Their archaic ancestors woke up after sensing the murderous aura that crushed all things. These ancestors didn’t know whether to feel happy or sad. One of them murmured: “The supreme glory, the pride of our human race! But how many corpses did it take to reach this level?”

“Shit, it’s just like the legends!” Inside the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain, the youth was also frightened and spoke in horror: “When an everlasting existence like this reveals his ace, even Immortal Emperors won’t want to mess with him! My luck really has to be the worst, having to meet him! Foolish Blood-devils, they don’t even know who they are provoking!”

Even in the distant south, the Blood Primal Ground was roused. There were quite a few old ancestors awakening with paled expressions from the horror.

“Ancestor, if this continues, I’m afraid the entire Blood-devil Tribe will be wiped out.” An ancestor spoke his mind to the Bloodbull Godfiend.

The godfiend still didn’t come into being. He remained lying in the coffin and answered: “All of you will never know what he is capable of. Only death awaits those who try to stop him. This has been true for many eons, so how can we stop him? The Blood-devil Tribe needs this lesson anyway. They have become too arrogant and think that they could rule the Blood Race of the nine worlds in place of our primal ground, so much so that they would pay any cost! One day, they might even cooperate with the fallen! They are simply seeking their own destruction, so let them be.”

The other ancestors could only sigh after listening to the godfiend.

Inside the battlefield shrouded in chaos, fewer and fewer screams could be heard. Eventually, with a loud battle cry, someone wanted to rush out of the chaos by flying straight into the air. This was the leader who was praised to be the greatest leader of the Blood Race after Immortal Emperor Chen Xue.

However, he was laden with wounds and covered in blood like

a dog that had lost its owner; he no longer resembled an invincible Godking.

“Emperors! Lend me your imperial blood, give us strength...” Vast runes emerged around his body as he tried to break out of the chaos so that he could reach the kingdom above to use its imperial blood.

However, he didn’t have this chance. Before he could finish speaking, a bright ray shot out with a buzz.

“Pluff!” Blood spurted in the air. He yelped miserably and fell back into the chaos. His shrill cry echoed for a long time.

The Blood-devil Tribe spent so much effort to open the kingdom of blood, yet they weren’t able to use it. In their plans, as long as they could open the kingdom and borrow the power of the emperors, the protection of the deities, and the imperial blood, they would be able to crush all enemies. Even Godkings would surely die under such immense power.

However, they didn’t know who they were facing and had greatly underestimated Li Qiye. They didn’t have time to borrow the imperial blood as well as the emperors’ power from the kingdom before being annihilated by the Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation.

“Xshh!” Another beam of light rushed out from the chaos. It instantly shattered the kingdom of blood’s portal and pierced the kingdom itself.

If the kingdom in the sky was a powerful heart, then this beam of light that pierced it was a sharp knife with a blood groove. Stabbing with it would result in a great amount of bleeding.

Sure enough, a splash could be heard after this beam pierced the kingdom. This huge volume of treasure blood that resembled a glossy, liquid cornelian poured down. It was extremely precious. Keep in mind that this kingdom had been refined by the longevity blood of three Immortal Emperors.

After the initial penetration, the beam of light drained the blood at a terrifying speed and ended up taking more than half of the treasure blood. At the same time, the kingdom reacted. One could see the sealing of the deities as the three supreme figures attacked with their Immortal Emperor laws. Each law turned into individual defensive runes in an attempt to stop the blood-sucking beam. At the same time, they began to retreat.

“Rumble!” A series of explosions resounded. The kingdom sealed the portal and began to move. It slowly disappeared from the sky. It was a lot dimmer compared to earlier. Half of its treasure blood was taken by Li Qiye’s formation.

The chaos also disappeared after the kingdom’s retreat. Li Qiye finally emerged in sight with a pale expression! This was because he used an extreme method to initiate the formation and expended a huge amount of blood energy. Even the Ginseng Ancestor wouldn’t be able to replenish him in a short amount of time.

However, he was able to seize half of the treasure blood. A great world expanded behind him and the blood was sent in there for refinement. He aimed to turn it into his own.

With this new addition, Li Qiye's blood energy began to recover and his countenance regained its color.

Li Qiye smiled and murmured: "The treasure blood refined from three emperors' longevity blood is extremely nutritious. I had wanted a piece of this nice toy for a long time now."

Li Qiye clicked his tongue and cheerfully commented: "This is too much. It's so pure and gentle, even a True Immortal Medicine would be at this level at best." Nothing in this world was more delicious than this supplemental blood!

"What a shame I only could get half." Li Qiye stared at the sky as he was not completely content.

At this point, the silver arrow appeared with a buzzing sound. Li Qiye grabbed it and looked at the tattered land to say: "A bit regrettable. My strength alone can only exert one-tenth of the power. Otherwise, everything would have been rendered to dust, and the entire kingdom of blood would be within my grasp as well."

Li Qiye used his most heaven-defying means in the form of the vessels and used their powers to open the formation. However, this force was not enough to exert the formation's ultimate strength. Otherwise, it wouldn't only destroy the leader's group in an

instant, the kingdom wouldn't have had the chance to escape either. Li Qiye could have captured the entire kingdom!

After a long time, the murderous aura slowly disappeared. The experts lying on the ground finally were able to get up. They quivered after seeing this scene.

The Wang Clan no longer existed. The mountains and rivers here were fragmented with blood and corpses everywhere. The army that consisted of hundreds of thousands of Blood-devils all fell. The majority of them were killed instantly without the chance to resist.

Even Wang Dongtian, the great leader, was nailed to the ground. His eyes were wide open and he didn't realize who he had provoked, even in death.

He was full of regret during his final seconds. As someone who had a great vision for his entire life, he was able to bring the Blood-devil Tribe to prosperity. However, it was ultimately destroyed in his hands.

He absolutely wouldn't have started this battle if he knew who he was messing with. He thought that with how strong the tribe currently was on top of the Immortal Emperors' power inside the kingdom of blood, he would be able to challenge the primal ground's position. He didn't expect that the primal ground didn't even have to come out since they were already destroyed by Li Qiye.

Unfortunately, there was no medicine for regret. Wang Dongtian paid the price for his arrogance. In the end, the tribe became successful because of Wang Dongtian and ended because of him as well.

“Blechh!” Sounds of retching came about. A young cultivator couldn’t hold it in any longer after seeing this scene of carnage and became nauseous.

Even characters from the previous generations that had weathered many storms felt their legs quivering after seeing this bloody scene!

“It is over for the Blood-devils. Even if the amount of surviving disciples is sufficient, they would be reduced to less than third-rate tribes, never to flourish again.” A paled Blood ancestor murmured after seeing the corpses paving the way for miles.

At this point, everyone trembled while looking at Li Qiye. They understood that he was a heaven-defying existence capable of slaying gods and devils.

“Well, it is finally over.” Li Qiye gently rubbed his palms together and came out from the destroyed sceneries towards Li Shuangyan’s group.

His approach made the people watching from the distance back off, including the ancestors. They receded like a tide since no one dared to be close to Li Qiye, lest they invoked his wrath and be killed in the process.

Li Qiye leisurely smiled while looking at the group: “Girls, long time no see, did you miss me?”

Chapter 1008: Meeting

One battle to shock the world; the great Blood-devil army was annihilated; its overlords were murdered. Even the leader who was considered the greatest after Immortal Emperor Chen Xue couldn't escape death.

Blood flowed through the ruins and filled the Barren Earth. Even after several days, the stench of blood remained. Anyone who smelled it would shiver uncontrollably.

In just one night, the southern region became quiet. The once-arrogant Blood race and all the other powerful existences, including Godkings and those buried underground, were all quiet.

“The Blood-devil Tribe won't be able to rise for another three generations.” Even a Blood ancestor spoke with forlorn.

All of their ancestors had died in the battle. From now on, it wouldn't be an easy task for the fallen tribe to rise again.

Some felt sorry while others were ambivalent about the end of the Blood-devils. Of course, there were those who were celebrating as well... The tribe that started from Wang Dongtian's generation had flourished too much. They were unified, unyielding, and ruthless. Eventually, they became the biggest branch among the Blood Race of this region.

Ultimately, he was the reason for their downfall. The great efforts from several generations were all ruined due to his ambition! He was both their hero and sinner.

On the second day after the destruction of the Blood-devils, a different branch of the Blood Race, the Crimson Night Kingdom, sent out a message about the inauguration of their new king.

They supported a new king overnight. Moreover, this new king was an unknown disciple from the kingdom — Si Yuanyuan!

A few disciples in the kingdom couldn't help but ask: "Who is Si Yuanyuan?"

A fameless disciple suddenly became the new king — this was a very difficult matter to accept, especially within a kingdom that had two emperors.

However, no one dared to question her crowning because something terrifying had happened in the kingdom on the day prior.

A few people managed to find out the real story. On that night, a very ancient Godking of the kingdom came into being. He personally exiled the majority of the imperial family, including more than ten ancestors.

"Immortal Emperor Chi Ye's first branch once again has control over the kingdom. All of the Storm God's confidants were either

dismissed from their post or banished!” An informed person secretly sent out this news.

The appearance of this old Godking allowed for Si Yuanyuan to become the new ruler overnight. It was a done deal, no one could do anything about it.

The complete transfer of power was the Thunder Tower Lord’s promise to Li Qiye. At the same time, this was a chance of rebirth for the kingdom.

This was because Si Yuanyuan was not only a person held in high regards by Li Qiye, the Bloodbull Godfiend had the same opinion of her. This had quite some significance for the kingdom.

Even though it was impossible to avoid spilling blood in this internal power struggle, they were able to have a new opportunity and escape the same fate of destruction like the Blood-devil Tribe.

“The Blood Race is changing completely, this is the passing of an era!” A wise man from the Blood Race recognized that something was amiss. The transformation of two great branches in the Blood Clan meant that the Bloods in the southern region will move in a different direction from now on!

While the southern region underwent these changes, Li Qiye and Su Yonghuang’s group had returned to the Holy City.

Inside their residence, a pleasant voice could be heard. This was a relaxing Buddhist chant with an unspeakable mysticism.

Su Yonghuang entered the room to find Li Qiye lying on Chen Baojiao; his head was resting on her firm and plump breasts while his legs were placed on Li Shuangyan. He closed his eyes and had a very comfortable and pleased expression.

Li Shuangyan was holding a Buddhist scripture and reading the profundities of this faith out loud to Li Qiye. At the same time, Chen Baojiao was peeling fruits and gently feeding them to her Young Noble.

Su Yonghuang, as the master, angrily glared at him after seeing him enjoying this situation so much. Alas, he deserved this type of emperor-like treatment. It was nothing compared to his overall accomplishments.

Li Qiye didn't bother opening his eyes and gently tapped the chair next to him while leisurely speaking: "Sit down."

Su Yonghuang sat down next to him and was annoyed by his complacent state: "Don't forget, I am your master!"

Li Qiye finally opened his eyes to look at Su Yonghuang who was within his reach and smiled: "I know, you took advantage of me."

["Who would want to take advantage of you!"](#) Even the noble Su

Yonghuang had a hint of coquetry as she glared at him.

Li Shuangyan stopped her chanting. Even someone as cold as her couldn't help but simper.

Su Yonghuang looked over at her then to Chen Baojiao and spoke with a noble aura: "You are resting on a beauty's chest in this debaucherous manner while listening to Buddhist chants, don't you think this is disrespectful to Buddha?"

"You are mistaken there. In this vast world, I am the greatest. Just a Buddha is nothing. And even if Buddha is the greatest in this world, doesn't he love all the common people? Anyway, he is not that different from us." Li Qiye smilingly replied in a carefree manner.

"Then why are you listening to his scriptures?" Su Yonghuang was curious. She had never seen him listen to these chants before. It had always been Li Shuangyan reading the grand dao writings to him.

"Because I am Buddha and Buddha is me. I am not listening to the Buddhist Scripture, I am accepting the charm of the Buddhist doctrine." Li Qiye smiled: "This is like a top class chef enjoying the delicacies cooked by another chef!"

"What are you trying to say?" Su Yonghuang wasn't expecting this response and stared at Li Qiye who was still resting on Chen Baojiao's milky breasts.

Li Qiye got up at this time to face Su Yonghuang. The two were only inches from each other, so close that they could even hear each other's breathing. He gently lifted her beautiful chin while she looked at his profound eyes, letting him do as he pleased.

“Look at me, yes, just like that.” Li Qiye spoke in a bewitching manner, causing others to be lost in his voice.

The two continued to stare at each other. Li Qiye carefully looked at her bright eyes. His gaze pierced through her pupils and could reach the deepest part of her mind.

At this time, both Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao thought that Li Qiye was going to flirt with her, so they couldn't help themselves from chuckling.

He continued to stare at her while her breathing became more rapid. A strange and misleading atmosphere arose, causing her heart to beat faster.

“A complete Yang Saint Physique is worthy of its fame!” Li Qiye let go of her chin and nodded: “This is a very pure version of the Extreme Yang Physique and can absolutely be considered unrivaled. You will reach grand completion before Li Shuangyan, so if she manages to surpass you... that would be too big of a letdown.”

Su Yonghuang glared at him and snappily retorted: “Letting you down? Those words should be coming from me since I'm your master!”

Li Qiye sat back down and rested on Chen Baojiao's chest once more before smiling leisurely: "Don't forget that it was me who taught you the supreme law."

Su Yonghuang snorted in response and spoke while looking at him: "I have something to tell you. Half a year ago, a woman came to our sect."

Li Qiye didn't really care, so he casually asked: "Who?"

Su Yonghuang responded: "A woman who calls herself the [Middle Continent Princess](#)! She almost flipped our sect over and only left after she heard that you weren't there."

"Middle Continent Princess!" He immediately sat up with a serious expression after hearing this.

"I almost forgot to tell you about this." Chen Baojiao quickly added: "It is that Earth Immortal back at the corpse burial ground. Young Noble, in our opinion, she is definitely antagonistic towards you."

"She is very powerful. I don't think anyone in our sect can stop her. If you know her, then you should know that it would have been easy for her to destroy our sect back then." Su Yonghuang spoke solemnly.

As the sect master, she must always be thinking about the safety

of the sect.

“What did she say?” Li Qiye slowly asked while looking at Su Yonghuang.

“She wanted to meet someone named Chu Yuntian and was unrelenting about it!” She answered.

Li Qiye became silent after hearing this. This was an ill-fated connection inadvertently caused by him. In the end, it still had to come.

He eventually lifted his head and inquired: “What else did she say?”

Su Yonghuang said: “Before leaving, she said that if we find Chu Yuntian, tell him to come to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau, she will be staying there for a while.”

Having said that, she glanced back at Li Qiye and revealed: “She also added that if Chu Yuntian doesn’t come to see her, she swears to destroy the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect one day!”

Li Qiye sighed softly after hearing this. This was started by him so it should be ended by him. Who would have thought that after so many years, this ill-fated connection still remained?

“Who is Chu Yuntian?” Su Yonghuang noticed something from Li Qiye’s expression and asked: “Why did she come to Cleansing

Incense to find Chu Yuntian?!”

The word for coquetry here can be problematic and situational in an English translation. Coquetry/flirting/coy/childish are all part of this word, 嗲. As a noun, it refers to someone who speaks and acts in an overly gentle way that others can't resist feeling charmed or frightened. As an adjective, it describes the extremely gentle quality of one's tone or actions. The word originated in Shanghai in the first half of the 20th century. It is believed that “dia” was derived from the English word “dear”. When Shanghai people first embraced “dia” in their everyday talk in the 1960s, a Shanghai newspaper launched a series of debates over it. Conservatives held that “dia” described a woman who intentionally plays up her feminine character to allure men. They saw it as a negative word. However, others argued that the word could be used in a positive sense and should be accepted. Now, the word can mean “good” or “wonderful”, although it more often emphasizes a woman's appearance and inner qualities. I suppose the equivalent for Koreans would be Aegyo.

Princess Zhong Zhou, ship arc.

Chapter 1009: Happy Time

Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao both knew a little about this issue. Back in the Heavenly Ancient Corpse Burial Ground, their group had talked to the princess about Chu Yuntian before. However, the two of them didn't know the entire story.

Li Qiye sighed softly and said: "Who Chu Yuntian is doesn't matter right now. I will go to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau to see her."

"A few things need to have a conclusion. Otherwise, it will haunt you forever." Li Qiye felt a bit helpless and smiled wryly after saying this.

"I'll go with you!" Su Yonghuang said in a serious manner: "This Middle Continent Princess is definitely not easy to mess with."

"I know, she has always been a stubborn person." Li Qiye gently shook his head: "But I have something else I want you to do. I have some treasure troves that I need you to bring back!"

"What kind of treasures?" Su Yonghuang had to ask. The word "treasure" wasn't so simple when it came from Li Qiye.

"Not much, just some secret stashes. I accidentally destroyed a few imperial lineages back in the Stone Medicine World and took in their troves, this will be good for our Cleansing Incense." Li Qiye said nonchalantly.

Such words left the three tongue-tied and wide-eyed! Secret treasuries from imperial lineages? They were naturally amazing, but their Young Noble spoke as if they were only common treasures.

If other people found out, they would definitely go crazy over them!

“Now is the time when our Cleansing Incense needs to be enriched.” Li Qiye looked at Su Yonghuang and slowly said: “It must have even stronger weapons and better resources. This responsibility lies with the sect master.”

Su Yonghuang took a deep breath and responded solemnly: “Rest assured, I will implement it without letting you down!”

At this time, the roles seemed to be reversed. Su Yonghuang, as the master, was actually listening to Li Qiye and even relying on him. He had become an indispensable part of her life. Without him, she wouldn't know what to do despite her wisdom and grace.

“Then I'll return to Cleansing Incense first.” Eventually, she deeply stared at him before speaking: “You should be careful when you go to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.”

“Don't worry, I have already planned on doing so for a while now. There are some things that I need to figure out.” Li Qiye calmly answered.

“Right, the Space Crossing Earthworm has gone to the plateau as well. I think it began its journey about six months ago.” Su Yonghuang told Li Qiye before leaving.

“Little Autumn is very powerful right now. He was so noisy about wanting to go to the plateau, but the sect master did not let him do anything recklessly. Later on, when he found out that the Nalanda Temple was opening, he couldn’t wait any longer and clamored about going. Eventually, the sect master agreed.” Chen Baojiao told Li Qiye.

“This brat.” Li Qiye shook his head. He knew why Little Autumn wanted to go to the plateau. He was not aiming for Nalanda but rather the Nihility Temple!

After Su Yonghuang left, he sat back down and rested on Chen Baojiao’s bewitching breasts.

“Young Noble, I thought you were going to kiss the sect master earlier.” Chen Baojiao pursed her lips into a smile while blinking her pretty eyes.

“Really?” Li Qiye lazily responded while slightly raising his brows.

“It seemed like Young Noble didn’t dare to do it. Is it because she is your master so you feel some dread or fear inside?” Chen Baojiao laughed softly.

Such words left Li Shuangyan slightly blushed. Chen Baojiao was far more daring than her in this aspect.

“Dread? Fear?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile and shook his head: “There is nothing that can make your Young Noble feel dread or fear. Instead of flirting with the sect master, I’m better off getting more intimate with you.”

As he was speaking, he grabbed her breasts and kneaded it through her dress.

Chen Baojiao’s breasts were plump and tall, round and full. It occupied his entire hand and felt incredible to the touch. With Li Qiye’s gentle caress, it seemed to be towering even more!

She, who was still an innocent girl, lost her mind after being touched by her Young Noble like this. She felt as if she was floating while her body became hotter.

“[Dear...](#)” She let out an intimate hum while caught up in the mood. While holding onto a glistening and juicy fruit with her mouth, she couldn’t help but bend her head down to feed it to her Young Noble.

Li Qiye gently lifted her beautiful, soul-stealing face and initiated a passionate kiss. Even though the beauty was inexperienced, she still responded steamily to her Young Noble.

Their blazing kiss turned Li Shuangyan's cheeks red while she stood to the side. She felt quite flustered as well.

When the two separated, Chen Baojiao was completely red as if she was drunk. Her initially tall and plump breasts were making powerful waves, painting quite an alluring spectacle!

Li Qiye smilingly glanced over at the blushing Li Shuangyan and gently gestured: "Shuangyan, come over here lest people say that I favor one side more than the other."

Such teasing left Li Shuangyan in shambles due to embarrassment. Contrary to her ice-cold demeanor, she was even shyer than Chen Baojiao.

Despite her shy nature, Chen Baojiao's fiery personality made her much bolder. She winked at Li Shuangyan: "Big Sister Shuangyan, one has to seize the opportunity or it will pass by."

Li Shuangyan was feeling very bashful; she looked down and played with her sleeves. Her usual arrogant self was at a loss.

Li Qiye grabbed her and laughed: "Little Shuang does not have the style of a big sister, Baojiao will make fun of you for this in the future."

While being spoiled with a hug from her Young Noble, the shy Shuangyan mustered some courage out of nowhere and kissed him softly before becoming lost again.

Li Qiye chuckled and gently cupped her chin before giving her a slow kiss full of adoration and tenderness.

Unlike Chen Baojiao, Li Shuangyan was much shyer and just left the kissing to her Young Noble. However, after his relentless passionate kisses, she also felt his love and began to respond shyly. She slightly exposed her sweet tongue like a blossoming lilac bud...

As the fiery session went on, Li Shuangyan became immersed and passionately met her Young Noble's advance. She clung to his neck and wanted nothing more than to become one with him.

"Dear, you have to love me too!" Chen Baojiao grew bolder and became aroused as well while watching the other two kissing. She couldn't stop herself from joining in as well.

In just a moment, an erotic atmosphere filled the entire building as the three continued on their kissing endeavor...

It had been several days since the group got together again. During this time, Li Qiye gave them pointers on cultivation. After handing the treasuries to Su Yonghuang, Li Qiye wanted to travel to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.

Before leaving, Li Qiye turned into a different person, a young man with an elegant and scholarly temperament. However, there

was a sense of openness emanating from his brows and an expression of freedom from looking at his back.

“Young Noble, this is...?” Both Chen Baojiao and Li Shuangyan were caught off guard because their Young Noble had never given a damn about anything and had no need to turn into someone else before.

“Chu Yuntian.” Li Qiye smiled: “Since the Middle Continent Princess wants to meet Chu Yuntian, I’ll let her meet Chu Yuntian.”

“Isn’t Chu Yuntian dead already?” Li Shuangyan was puzzled because back at the corpse burial ground when the Young Noble was talking about him with the princess, it sounded like he was already dead.

Li Qiye smiled mysteriously and slowly said: “This is a secret.”

“The princess wants to meet the real Chu Yuntian.” Su Yonghuang looked at him and asked: “Does that mean you are Chu Yuntian?”

“Chu Yuntian...” Li Qiye gazed at the horizon. After a while, he withdrew his gaze and smiled lightly: “There is no Chu Yuntian in this world. If he doesn’t exist, how could he be dead?”

The girls glanced at each other. They could guess a few secrets after hearing this, but if their Young Noble didn’t want to reveal it,

they wouldn't ask.

Near the time of parting, both Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao didn't want to leave their Young Noble. Li Shuangyan was more restrained. Her cold eyes occasionally stole glances at him. Her chilling demeanor did not lessen her charm.

Chen Baojiao was much bolder. She stood by him and held his hand with a clear unwillingness to part.

"Fine, I'll give you time to say goodbye." Su Yonghuang smiled wryly and angrily glared at Li Qiye. She understood that he had given the two girls some love potions.

After Su Yonghuang left, Chen Baojiao coquettishly put her arms around his waist and asked: "Young Noble, may we go to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau with you?"

"You have to be sensible." Li Qiye gently caressed her hair and said: "The secret treasures are of utmost importance. You are all responsible for escorting the sect master back safely. After doing so, if you want to come, then do so. I'll be staying at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau for a long time."

"Long Live Young Noble!!" The beauty sprang up and cheered excitedly. At this time, she couldn't help but give him a hot kiss.

"Okay, it is time to go." Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

Li Shuangyan was still reserved, but it was time to part. She couldn't restrain herself and gently looked up to give him a soft kiss as well.

“Go, there is still a lot of time. Wait until I'm done with the plateau, I will come back to the sect and stay for cultivation.” Li Qiye comforted her.

The icy beauty finally cracked a smile. At this time, she was extremely beautiful like the coming of spring!

“Dear” here is a complete localization. 公子爷 or Young Noble 爷 is a flirtatious or even more respectful way of saying Young Noble. There's no real direct translation here since 爷 means grandpa, old gentleman, sir, master of a house. Dear is a close one since it is still respectful and not as intimate as honey/love because that's not their relationship.

Chapter 1010: Buddhist Funeral Plateau

After leaving the Holy City, Li Qiye went to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau alone. Because he was not in a hurry, he was cultivating during the trip as well.

Back during the fight against the Blood-devil Tribe, he devoured half of the treasure blood from the kingdom. This was extremely nutritious to him and also gave him other benefits, thus he needed to digest it in order to fully utilize it.

At the same time, after unlocking the seal on his dao foundation, he became a tiger that had just left the mountain. His foundation was already solid before, but after the seal, he refined it once more. After removing the seal, if he were to enter the Virtuous Paragon realm right now, his cultivation path would surge greatly.

Of course, he was not in a rush to begin the path of heaven by rushing to open a heavenly dao. He slowly took his time and refined his dao foundation some more.

In his eyes, he must complete the Nine Ants. Right now, he had created the three vessels, but there was still a long way to go. In order to perfect the nine ants, he needed them to work together and not stay as independent existences.

At the same time, Li Qiye also had his own idea about his heavenly dao. He wanted to fuse together several supreme things in order to create a supreme grand dao that belonged only to him. It should be capable of being referred to as the number one dao in

all the eons! Thus, the path was still far off. This was only the beginning, he had a long way to go.

Despite his training along the way, it didn't take long before he eventually entered the plateau.

The Buddhist Funeral Plateau was at the westernmost point of the Barren Earth. It covered a large expanse to the extent that no one knew how big it was.

It was considered the tallest location in the Mortal Emperor World, the place closest to the firmament.

One could see the clear blue sky once they entered the plateau, as if they could touch it by merely reaching out with their hand. In this place, people could truly feel the immensity of this world.

There was also a majestic sensation. However, this aura was not overbearing or rough at all. It had an indescribable gentleness, like the gentle breeze in spring that would welcome all newcomers or like a mother softly caressing her children.

One would forget many things upon entering. This gave the gentle feeling of home. People would become lost in this sensation!

They would faintly hear the sounds of Buddhist chants. It didn't come from any other place but from the depths of their own hearts. It was as if there was a Buddha meditating inside.

“Buddhist Funeral Plateau...” Li Qiye entered and felt the Buddhist sensation touching his face. He couldn’t help but murmur: “After millions of years, it became increasingly stronger. I am actually eager to see if the day will come when the Buddhist doctrine will defeat all else!”

Li Qiye smiled while looking at this blue world that was so close to the sky before continuing on.

Despite being the highest location in the Mortal Emperor World, it was not a difficult place to get to. On the contrary, there were people everywhere here.

There were a lot of followers in this place. They would bow after every step. Many of them were cultivators; even these ones respectfully headed for the depths of the plateau.

There were towns everywhere in this place. Of course, there were more temples of the Buddhist faith. It wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that there was one temple for every peak.

Their sizes varied. Some only consisted of one room while others carried a grand aura with more than ten thousand monks as if it was a huge city.

The Buddhist Funeral Plateau was one of the twelve burial grounds. Many people would shiver when talking about these burial grounds since they understood the dangers within.

However, no one would sense anything dangerous after entering the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. This was a place with Buddha in every household and temples everywhere. Visitors and worshipers were in abundance in this prosperous land. No one would believe that this was considered a dangerous ground.

No one knew why it was considered one of the twelve. Some even said that it was safer than anywhere else in this world. There were no intersect disputes here. It was very peaceful because the citizens and cultivators here had taken up the Buddhist doctrine. Thus, they rarely competed in mundane matters.

Because of this, very few people knew why this plateau was listed among places like the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground or the Prime Ominous Grave.

Buddhism was in decline. In the nine worlds, there were fewer than few Buddhist lineages. However, there was only one lineage in the plateau, Buddhism!

Many people would bring up the Nalanda Temple after talking about the plateau or the Heavenly Buddhist Kingdom. However, not all the temples here were under the jurisdiction of the Nalanda Temple.

Among the thousands upon thousands of monasteries here, only eighteen temples were directly under Nalanda's order.

In this place, there were many cultivators who came from the other great lineages in this world; some even from the other eight

worlds.

Legend states that those who stayed at the plateau for a long time, regardless of whether they were mortals or cultivators, would start to gain an affinity towards Buddhism. Even the most powerful cultivators would join Buddhism after a long time.

It was a land of Buddhism, so not many experts were willing to stay here for long. They were afraid of the plateau affecting their dao heart.

Of course, there were also those with strong dao hearts who liked to come here. They wanted to borrow the power of the plateau to train their dao heart. Nevertheless, some failed and from then on, they would become members of the Buddhist doctrine.

Li Qiye walked among the plateau and saw all sorts of people. There were mortals, cultivators, humans, Bloods, demons, golems... People came and went, resulting in a very bustling community.

Gold and jade, as well as green bricks and white tiles, painted the numerous temples in a glorious splendor. There were also more humble temples in the form of huts...

Anyone would be astounded by the number of temples in this place. Perhaps there were more temples here than the rest of the nine worlds combined; the number from the other worlds might not reach ten percent compared to the ones here.

Li Qiye felt the buddhist affinity in this place with each passing step. He remained nonchalant and carefree. Even though this Buddhist presence in the plateau was unfathomable, it couldn't affect Li Qiye's dao heart in the slightest.

At this time, a small distortion came about. Li Qiye stopped and took out an item. It was the yellow silk cloth.

A little figure condensed on the cloth. This was the existence that Li Qiye called "little girl".

The voice of the little figure was very pleasant and clear. She asked with surprise: "Where are you at?"

Li Qiye smiled: "Buddhist Funeral Plateau. Oh? Why do you suddenly feel interested? I've been to many places, but you didn't seem to care before."

"Because there is a force I'm familiar with in this place!" The little figure tilted her head and said: "Buddhist Funeral Plateau... I've never heard of it before."

Li Qiye smiled and said: "Because it didn't have this name back then. Later on, a person named [Di Shi](#) came and changed this location, giving it the name Buddhist Funeral Plateau."

"Di Shi?" The small figure tilted her head as if trying to recall this person in her memories.

Li Qiye slowly said: “He is an extremely ancient existence to the point where people have forgotten the era he was in, to the point where people have forgotten about someone with the name Di Shi.”

The little figure was unconvinced and said with a sneer: “Hmph, even older than me?”

Li Qiye smiled: “Don’t be like that. Although you are an old grandma who can’t get any older, there are even older eras. There’s no need for me to say more about this matter.”

“You...” The little figure was quite furious after hearing this. It coldly spoke: “Bah, you’re the old grandma!”

Li Qiye continued on: “What is this force that you are familiar with? Since you don’t know the Buddhist Funeral Plateau, it wouldn’t be the Buddhist affinity.”

“A very powerful force, it controls everything in this place.” The little figure carefully sensed it and shook her head: “I have lost my body so I can’t feel it completely.”

“I know what it is.” Li Qiye answered: “Because there is a broken pot here, an unfathomable pot. You should know what it is.”

“Are you talking about that pot?” The little figure was startled before shouting: “Yes, you are right, I’ve sensed it now, it is that thing!”

“That thing has been here for a very long time.” Li Qiye chuckled: “One thought to become Buddha, one thought to become Devil... such a heaven-defying item... Alas, Di Shi was one step earlier than anyone else!”

“It is an unequaled item.” The little figure added: “If you can get ahold of this item, then you will simply be able to flip the heavens over. Meet god, slay god; meet devil, slay devil!”

“Killing gods and devils?” Li Qiye smirked: “Even without this thing, I can still meet god, slay god; meet devil, slay devil!”

Di Shi means Buddhist Emperor. You have seen him being talked about before back in the Heavenly Academy Arc. I don't know if this is a title or name, but Di Shi fits better here.

Chapter 1011: That Item

Having said that, Li Qiye paused for a moment and looked into a distant location to say: “To destroy that ultimate existence, that would really be flipping the heavens over!”

“Which is why you need that item. With that pot in your possession, there is another glimmer of hope in destroying that existence!” The little figure in the yellow cloth egged him on.

“Haha, little girl, don’t try to encourage me.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “That broken pot is a double-edged sword. It can make you eternal for countless springs or turn you into a devil for endless eras. An item like that... it is hard to say who will be able to control it in the final battle...”

“Haha, otherwise, this plateau wouldn’t exist!” Li Qiye continued on: “Although no one knows of the name ‘Di Shi’ anymore, he is wise with great insight and completely peerless. Many supreme existences cannot compare to him, but in the end, he still chose to endure it. Why? Because he doesn’t have the confidence! Even with this pot in his hand, it didn’t guarantee success!”

“But you are different.” The little figure spoke: “How long have you been preparing for? You have so many items that you’ve prepared in secrecy... If you have this pot as well, then your chances of victory would be thirty percent higher!”

“No...” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head slightly: “It seems like you still don’t understand. You simply don’t know what we will

have to face!”

“Bah, who says that I don’t know? I know way more than you!”
The figure snorted.

“Have you personally gone on an expedition?” Li Qiye smiled wryly: “Do you know what is at the end? Do you know what invincibility is? When you personally fight in that war, you will find out that all existences who were previously known as invincible are incredibly insignificant in comparison!”

“What about you?” The figure had to ask: “Have you ever seen a true god? What about that true existence?”

Li Qiye stared at the horizon and eventually replied: “I was able to come back alive because I was immortal and indestructible! Because that existence couldn’t trace back to the location of my true body. Otherwise... once found, even if I was indestructible, there would be no escaping death!”

“I see now.” The little figure spoke: “You talked about the Immortal Demon Grotto. So it is not that you can’t escape the grotto, you want to use it to hide your true body!”

“Perhaps.” Li Qiye neither denied nor confirmed this, he only smiled: “It is not that easy to attack the grotto. Even an Immortal Emperor must pay a price! A very heavy price!”

“What about this generation?” The figure asked: “What will you

use to hide your body this time? Don't forget, you are no longer invincible! Do you still have confidence in winning now? You can't afford to lose any longer! Losing means turning into ashes!"

"Don't worry, I will not lose in this generation, I will definitely sweep through all things!" His eyes became extremely profound with an indescribably domineering aura. Even the high heavens would quake from this. He slowly continued: "Nothing will stop my advance. Even that existence above the nine heavens won't do. When the time is right, I will proceed!"

"Since you are determined to fight, you will need that pot even more. I don't need to say more about its power. With that pot, you will have another powerful ace!" The figure didn't give up on its persuasion.

"Little girl, there's no need to try to convince me, I won't do it." Li Qiye shook his head and smiled.

"Well, in my opinion, you are afraid of this Buddhist Funeral Plateau. You aren't certain of defeating it either!" The small figure coldly sneered.

"After all this time, little girl, you still don't know me." Li Qiye laughed: "The Buddhist Funeral Plateau is not as simple as you think it is. Plus, I don't need to go against it anyway. The pot is not necessarily suitable for me."

"Why?" The figure couldn't help but ask.

Li Qiye smiled and looked towards the ancient temples in the distance as he leisurely spoke: “Everyone says that Buddha is merciful. However, I am waiting, waiting for the day when Buddha becomes angry and subdues all things! His rage shall cause blood to flow for three thousand miles!”

“You are certain it will come in this generation?” The figure inquired further.

“Maybe, maybe not.” Li Qiye responded: “In short, it won’t be long. That era will come, and it will be unimaginable. I’m afraid it will be even more brilliant than your own!”

“Bah, stop daydreaming. My era was supreme across the eons!” The figure snorted since she didn’t agree with the claim.

“Really now?” Li Qiye smiled: “But even that supreme era was annihilated in the end. No one remembers it now!”

This retort left the little figure in silence. It no longer wanted to talk and disappeared. Li Qiye only smiled and put away the yellow cloth then continued on.

The plateau also had magnificent sceneries. Looking further inside, one would see a great plain as well as snow-capped mountains in the far distance. Moreover, there were great rivers that resembled dragons occupying the lands afar...

This vast area had always been lively and prosperous despite its great size. Cultivators from many different origins traveled here.

Li Qiye sometimes continued to cross the mountains and rivers, and sometimes he would mingle with the long crowd of worshipers. Occasionally, he would meditate and immerse himself in the Buddhist affinity of this land...

“The first showdown of geniuses has begun. Quick, to the Snow Cloud Peak...” As Li Qiye was walking alongside a stream of people, the crowd suddenly raised a furor. A message came, causing many cultivators to step aside right away.

This news traveled very quickly across millions of miles. Cultivators in this area all gathered here.

“Who against who?” Someone quietly asked.

Someone immediately answered: “Wo Longxuan against the Jewel Pillar Mortal King, definitely a battle of the genius level.”

“War Fanatic eh, no, I have to say War God now. He has been brilliant in these last battles so we definitely can’t miss it.” Even those of the previous generation became very excited when these two were brought up. They immediately went to watch the match.

In just a moment, many headed for the Snow Cloud Peak in order to watch this fight between the two geniuses. No one wanted to

miss out on such an exciting match.

Li Qiye heard it as well, but he was not interested and continued on his way.

“Brother, don’t you want to watch?” A young man quickly asked him as he passed by.

The youth looked quite ordinary and had a flat cap on his head. He saw Li Qiye and stopped to warmly greet him.

“Oh? Will it be nice to watch?” Li Qiye looked at the youth and revealed a very deep smile.

“Definitely nice to watch. It is a duel of the genius level, Wo Longxuan versus the Jewel Pillar Mortal King!” The youth answered and introduced himself: “My name is Xiao Tianxing, what about yours?”

Li Qiye looked at him and smiled: “Chu Yuntian.”

The youth hastily responded: “So it is brother Chu, nice to meet you. Brother, come and watch. This great battle is absolutely worth watching.”

With a beaming smile, Li Qiye nodded his head: “If Brother Tianxing says so, then it has to be worth it.”

In this way, the two of them went together towards the Snow Cloud Peak. On the way, Li Qiye leisurely asked the youth that wore the flat cap: “Who is Wo Longxuan?”

“She is an amazing genius as well as a peerless beauty.” The youth replied: “She came from the Sleeping Dragon Cliff. Some even say that she is on par with the Heaven Protector Goddess!”

“On par with the Heaven Protector Goddess?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile. Zi Cuining, or the Heaven Protector Goddess, was the descendant of the Heaven Protector Palace. Someone comparable to her would definitely be amazing.

“Wo Longxuan became famous in recent years. Maybe you haven’t heard of her, but you have definitely heard of her big brother. He is Wo Longzi, the previous generation descendant of the cliff. He had trained at the Sacred Era Hall in the academy and was considered the most talented youth.” The guy explained.

“Wo Longzi?” Li Qiye pondered for a moment. He might have heard this name before back at the academy.

“What a shame, Wu Longzi was very amazing back then. I heard that after he left the academy to go back to the Northern Grand Sea, he wanted to reach the Virtuous Paragon realm. It is a pity that he couldn’t handle the Life Reduction. Just like that, a young genius of the generation fell.” The youth with the hat shook his head in pity.

Li Qiye only smiled. For millions of years now, countless brilliant

geniuses had died to the Life Reduction tribulation.

Li Qiye casually asked: “What about the Jewel Pillar Mortal King?”

“He is the current master of the Jewel Pillar Sacred School as well as the king of the Jade Valley Country. In the past, everyone called him Jewel Pillar Saint Child.” The youth elaborated: “He is not bad at all. After taking over control, both the school and the country made great progress. Many sects pledged loyalty to him, so they gave him the title of Mortal King.”

Li Qiye couldn't help but grin after hearing this. So it turned out to be an old friend!

The youth went on to say: “The Mortal King is extraordinary right now. He is not only praised by other as the War God but is also regarded as one of the four great Immortal Physique users!”

Li Qiye stared at him and asked: “Four great Immortal Physique users?”

To which the youth responded: “To be exact, they call them the four great Immortal Physique users of the Grand Middle Territory. Cleansing Incense has three while the Mortal King is the only user outside of this sect that has another! I heard that his Hell Suppressing Godly Physique is unbeatable.” The youth stared at Li Qiye at this point.

Chapter 1012: Wo Longxuan

“Hell Suppressing Physique, eh.” Li Qiye sent his gaze far away after hearing this.

The youth busily said: “I heard the Mortal King’s physique is already at half completion. A rumor even states that he managed to fill in the gaps in his school’s physique law. This is a stunning achievement; the elders of the school now call him the new leader that will lead them to prosperity, a leader comparable to the school’s founder.”

“Fix the physique law?” Li Qiye smiled. This was not him looking down on the saint child, or rather, the mortal king right now.

But how could he not know the version of the physique law they had? The school indeed had an Immortal Physique Law with the name “[Hell Suppressing Jewel Law](#).” However, this law couldn’t be revamped by just anyone. At the very least, the Jewel Pillar Mortal King didn’t have the ability to do so.

“A bit interesting, cultivating from a King Physique to an Immortal Physique, not bad at all.” Li Qiye smilingly said.

The youth quickly said: “You are completely right. Nowadays, the Mortal King is very famous at the Grand Middle Territory, much more than the three Immortal Physiques from Cleansing Incense. This is because a lot of people think that the three physique users from that sect have very few victories while the Mortal King has too many to count. Some are even putting him on

the same level as Jikong Wudi as the best geniuses in the middle region.”

“Since when did the Space Trample Mountain become the only imperial lineage of the Grand Middle Territory?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh.

The young man shrugged and said: “Everyone says so. The Southern Barren Earth’s Lin Tiandi, the Northern Grand Sea’s Wo Longxuan, the Eastern Hundred Cities’ Mei Suyao, the Western Desolate Wasteland’s Zhan Shi, and the Grand Middle Territory’s Jikong Wudi. But recently, the Jewel Pillar King has been catching up in terms of fame.”

Li Qiye only smiled without commenting. He had no interest in this type of ranking.

The two quickly arrived at the Snow Cloud Peak. Li Qiye initially wasn’t interested in this duel at all, but after hearing about the saint child back then managing to cultivate an Immortal Physique, he wanted to know what type of law it was.

Keep in mind that in the current nine worlds, emperor laws were much more readily available compared to physique laws. It could even be said that the latter was much more precious. If the Mortal King successfully cultivated the Hell Suppressing Physique, it meant that he was training with an Immortal Physique Law, perhaps a complete version!

The peak was completely surrounded by waves of cultivators

who came to watch. Some floated in the sky, some sat on the high peak, and some also chose to sit on the plains...

This was a snowy peak that towered all the way into the clouds. Normally, very few people would come here, but it was completely packed at this moment. The crowd was waiting for this great duel to begin.

Today, the Mortal King's fame was widespread in the Mortal Emperor World. Although a few years ago, he was not as illustrious as Jikong Wudi or Mei Suyao, his recent battle records from north to south had solidified his reputation.

A young man could be found standing on top of the snowy peak at this time, the Jewel Pillar Mortal King.

Even with the passage of many years, his voice and appearance remained unchanged. However, his aura was completely different. Back then, the saint child was as calm as a mountain. Now, he was much more than that!

The snowy peak was lofty, but it seemed insignificant below his feet. He stood with a straight posture as if he was a timeless and never-changing divine mountain.

He wore a gray all-around robe that was without any decorations. This made him emit a heaven-suppressing aura. Anyone standing before him would find it difficult to breathe; they wouldn't dare to even look straight at him!

Although his blood energy did not materialize externally, his half completion Hell Suppressing Physique gave him the unique image of an ancient god capable of suppressing the deities of all realms!

At this second, each of his actions and gestures made the world revolve around him. He was the center of the world, the master of the universe!

“The younger generation will surpass us in time.” A great character from the previous generation couldn’t help but murmur after seeing the Mortal King’s style: “Right now, even an ordinary paragon from our generation would have to retreat before him!”

“Jewel Pillar Mortal King, the War God of our Grand Middle Territory!” A cultivator from the middle region spoke with a proud expression.

Even though the title of War God was a slight exaggeration, cultivators from the other realms didn’t dare to pick on this in front of the Mortal King due to his illustrious battle record.

“Sigh. This is all because he fought so many battles recently, against Jikong Wudi, Mei Suyao, Lin Tiandi, and now Wo Longxuan...” Even geniuses became dejected before him as they murmured: “He has basically fought all the prodigies of this generation. Even if he is not the War God, he is definitely a War Fanatic!”

In recent years, he had challenged too many people. The strongest youths had all fought him before! This was why people

called him War God as well as War Fanatic.

“It really is the Hell Suppressing Physique.” Li Qiye glanced at him from afar and understood something after gently nodding his head.

“Yes, because of his half completion Immortal Physique, he is able to challenge the world. This level of physique is truly too mighty. Even Jikong Wudi lost to him once.” The youth with the hat spoke with a tinge of emotions.

“Oh? He fought Jikong Wudi before too?” Li Qiye became a bit interested and chuckled.

Jikong Wudi was already famous back then during Li Qiye’s time at the Hundred Cities. He had triple saint talents; this made many elders hold him in high regard!

“The Mortal King fought against Jikong Wudi three times.” The youth elaborated: “The king lost twice and won once. Everyone predicts that he will challenge Jikong Wudi soon once more.”

“Two losses, one victory. A bit interesting, tell me more.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“I heard that the king lost the first time. Jikong Wudi lost the second time and became the challenger the third time where the king lost again.” The youth explained: “Because of this, everyone thinks that the fourth time will be the king’s turn to challenge

Jikong Wudi!”

Having heard that, Li Qiye looked over at the Mortal King and narrowed his eyes to murmur: “Looks like a rebirth.”

The youth didn’t hear him clearly and asked: “What did you say?”

“Nothing, just speaking to myself.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head. He stroked his chin while looking at the Mortal King. This matter was indeed very entertaining to him.

The king continued to stand on the snowy peak and quietly waited. Time seemed to be frozen where he stood.

“Wo Longxuan is definitely coming, right?” The crowd quietly waited as well. At this time, a few became impatient and stared at the horizon to wait for her arrival.

“She is definitely coming to wash away the previous disgrace.” Someone whispered: “She lost to the Mortal King last time. If she doesn’t win this time, it will be quite a blow to her.”

“I think that the king will win this fight for sure. He has an unstoppable sharpness right now. Everyone here is probably feeling that even if he fights against Deity Jikong Wudi right now, his chance of victory would still be quite high!” A middle region cultivator spoke while taking great pride in the Mortal King.

“The battle has yet to start so it is hard to say.” An old demon from the northern sea gently shook his head: “The two have fought twice with the king suffering the first defeat. Even though Wo Longxuan lost the second round, she still has the chance to win again. She isn’t only Wo Longzi’s sister but also the descendant of the Sleeping Dragon Peak.”

“Splash!” Amidst the eagerly anticipating crowd, a surging tide emerged in the sky like a great ocean that splashed one fierce wave after another.

“She’s here, Wo Longxuan is here!” Someone shouted while staring at the sky.

The huge waves pushed away the clouds in the sky. Inside was a huge water dragon rising up and down among the waves. Standing on top of the water dragon was a woman.

She stood there in the wind with her sleeves fluttering! Her method of entrance stunned everyone aesthetically.

She wore a blue dress adorned with golden laces. This made her look both simple yet elegant.

Her moon-like face was delicate and perfect, and her high-bridged nose gave her an exotic appearance. With a petite mouth and cherry lips, she commanded an alluring charm!

She also wore a shawl with a crown on her head. She didn’t only

look imperial but also quite sublime.

“Wo Longxuan.” A big shot from the northern region murmured: “She is no longer the cliff’s descendant since she is the sect master now.”

“Crash!” When Wo Longxuan landed on the Snow Cloud Peak, the torrential wave splashed one last time before the water dragon dove down and disappeared without a trace.

The Mortal King turned around and slowly spoke: “Congratulations, Miss Xuan. You are the sect master of the Sleeping Dragon Cliff now — quite a celebratory event.”

She stared at him and lightly said: “Thank you, let us determine who shall be victorious today!”

“Very well, I want to see your supreme techniques again!” The Mortal King responded: “However, you should be careful. [Accidents happen in fights, so I must apologize first if anything were to happen to you.](#)”

Jewel here in Chinese is the same word for treasure; it’s just an adjective to make the name sound cooler. It is similar to the sacred/divine that we see so much.

The raw is, fists and kicks do not have eyes. I’m not sure if that makes sense by itself, so I localized it. Not too happy with it, but it works for now. The sentiments given off here should be a bit contemptuous and confident veiled in a polite tone.

Chapter 1013: The Hat Wearing Youth's Identity

“Leave life and death to fate!” She coldly said: “Let’s get started.”

With that, more splashing sounds came about. The tides rose again as she became ethereal, as if she was standing on a vast and endless sea.

“Good, let’s go.” The Mortal King didn’t waste time either.

“Buzz!” His Hell Suppressing Physique erupted. As he slowly floated off the ground, cracking sounds could be heard. The void itself shattered beneath him.

Many people shivered after seeing this. An older character took a deep breath and murmured: “So powerful! Immortal Physiques are indeed unique. Even time and space was crushed.”

“Rawrr!” A loud cry resounded. Wo Longxuan casually unleashed an attack. A gigantic monster came down from the sky, creating great explosions. The entire sky shook in response.

“Draconic Whale! A primeval existence of the legends!” A spectator cried out after seeing the monstrous creature diving down from the sky.

It was gigantic and spanned for miles, instilling fear in the hearts

of the spectators. It resembled both a dragon and a whale; its body was that of a whale's, but it had the head of a true dragon.

Its attack carried a world-destroying power that was sent towards the Mortal King. However, the Mortal King didn't take a single step back against such tyrannical might. He fiercely punched to meet the Draconic Whale.

“Boom!” The impact shook the entire Buddhist Funeral Plateau. The gigantic creature instantly shattered against his punch. Its size was not enough to stop the fist from his Immortal Physique.

Only one drop of seawater was left behind after the monster disappeared. This shocked many people as well. Turning one drop of water into a Draconic Whale — this was quite a heaven-defying technique.

“My turn!” The king shouted after his swift dispatch of the whale. He spread out his palm and the sky suddenly turned dark. The entire location plunged into darkness.

With the power of his physique, his palm immediately suppressed the heavens. Even paragons would tremble before its might. Ordinary paragons would be crushed underneath its power.

Wo Longxuan shifted her body in the sky with the movement of a dragon and then the agility of a fish. She instantly dodged the palm and appeared outside of the firmament.

At this time among the vast expanse above, she casually made her move and a great ocean appeared behind her. Fortunately, she was standing out in space at this moment. Otherwise, this great ocean could drown the entire plateau.

“My thoughts exactly. Let’s fight in space so that we don’t have to hold back.” The Mortal King shouted and leaped into the sky with one stomp. He headed for space then instantly sent another punch towards Wo Longxuan.

“Come, let us go watch.” The spectators couldn’t see them when they were out in space. The more powerful cultivators all ascended to the firmament.

“The outcome is already decided.” Li Qiye only chuckled while shaking his head after taking a quick glance. He didn’t fly out into space and instead turned around to leave.

“Brother, where are you going?” The youth with the flat hat immediately followed behind him.

“Going to take a stroll around. There are too many places at the plateau to check out.” Li Qiye slowly walked while speaking.

“Haha, I don’t have anything else to do either, I’ll just go with you then.” The youth followed Li Qiye.

Li Qiye paused and turned around to look at the youth before speaking leisurely: “What do you want to do? Trying to figure me

out?”

“A...” The youth quickly stood up straight and cried out indignantly: “Brother, you are falsely accusing me. I just want to befriend you, yet you are mistaking it as having an ulterior motive.”

Li Qiye shook his head and smilingly said: “Sikong Toutian, others might not recognize you, but you cannot wash away that profiteer’s smell of yours.”

The youth immediately took several steps back with a shocked expression. He cautiously glared at Li Qiye: “Who are you?!”

Li Qiye smirked and said: “Who do you think?”

“Is, is it really you?” The youth was not completely certain and cried out: “Young Noble Li, no, Boss, is it really you?”

Li Qiye turned back into his true form before assuming Chu Yuntian again a second later. He smiled: “Sikong Toutian, having mischievous ideas about me is not a clever move.”

The youth quickly transformed as well. It was indeed that scoundrel Sikong Toutian. However, he looked around real quick then turned back into the youth wearing the hat.

“Ohhh. Boss, it really is you. No wonder why I couldn’t see through it.” He rubbed his palms together and tried to curry favor:

“I should have guessed earlier that it was you, but I couldn’t confirm it. The only person in this world with a transformation technique that I can’t see through has to be you, Boss.”

He was very adept at transformation arts. It would be difficult to find someone as skillful as him in this regard. When Li Qiye came, he couldn’t see through him so he became suspicious and approached. He didn’t expect for the guy to actually be Li Qiye.

He beamingly smiled and said: “I heard Boss wanted to go to the Sacred Nether World, so I didn’t expect you to come back and immediately flex your might. Under a furious rage, you massacred a grand army until rivers were overwhelmed with the Blood-devil Tribe’s blood...”

“Okay, don’t pretend to be so obsequious.” Li Qiye interrupted him while smiling: “Are you up to no good again?”

“Boss, what are you saying?” Sikong Toutian immediately swore: “This lowly one is your biggest fan, I heard about your conquest of the nine heavens and viewed you as my pride and glory...”

“Okay, I accept your sentiment.” Li Qiye smiled: “If you didn’t do anything bad, then why do you need to change your face at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau? Why the need to hide if you have no enemies here?”

“Ohh, Boss, you have the wrong idea.” Sikong Toutian laughed out loud: “This lowly one has retired, I have changed completely. I want to be a virtuous and kind person with love, justice, and

continuous self-betterment...”

He continued to flaunt excessively while Li Qiye only smiled and looked at him without interrupting.

After he was finished with his long spiel, he couldn't brag any longer as he became tired. He knew full well that he could hide from others, but definitely not from Li Qiye.

“Ah, Boss, here's how it is.” He coughed and explained: “I only want to go visit a few temples. Nothing much really, maybe picking up a few souvenirs here and there to take back home.”

Li Qiye naturally knew what these “souvenirs” were. He looked at the guy again and said: “You already have too many treasures to count. And as for you lying and scheming all day, this is an affront to your Heaven's Secret Valley's prestige.”

Sikong Toutian didn't know how to reply. He smiled wryly: “Boss, I don't want to do this either, but, but this is my chronic illness. If I don't steal something each day or swindle anyone, I will feel incredibly uncomfortable all around.”

“This is a disease with no cure.” Li Qiye didn't know whether to laugh or cry and could only shake his head.

Sikong Toutian laughed in response as well: “Boss, recently, that Mortal King has been acting very bullish. When will boss take him down a notch and let him know that you are the only invincible

person in the nine heavens and ten earths?”

“Why, have you done something that warrants his attention?” Li Qiye glanced at him and smirked. How could he not know that this guy was thinking?

Sikong Toutian said: “Haha, I cannot be blamed for this. It can only be said that he was acting too bullish and claimed to have the number one Immortal Physique. Moreover, his school’s disciples have been acting very arrogant as well, causing trouble everywhere as if they were the number one sect in the Mortal Emperor World. And so, my hands suddenly became itchy and I stole from his ancestral graves!”

“This is a very good thing. Wait until he captures you and grinds you to dust.” Li Qiye smiled. It would be strange if the Mortal King didn’t want to destroy someone who dug out his ancestral graves.

“I only stole a few treasures from there, does he need to act so crazily?” Sikong Toutian didn’t seem to mind at all and laughed.

Although the guy was not famous in the current generation and what little fame he had was not of the good kind either, this didn’t mean that he was weak. He actually wasn’t afraid of the Mortal King since he came from the mysterious Heaven’s Secret Valley and had great resources!

“Alas, Boss, it is not me trying to cause trouble, but I don’t know if I should say it or not.” He told Li Qiye.

Li Qiye chuckled: “Let me be the judge of that. Say it.”

“The Jade Pillar School wants to take Miss Chen back. They are thinking that since she came from the school and her family is also there, they hope that she would go back.” He explained.

The Miss Chen he referred to was Chen Baojiao.

Li Qiye only smiled in response. It was no wonder for the school to have this idea. Chen Baojiao has become powerful, so it would only be natural for them to want her back.

Chapter 1014: Nameless Little Temple

“The school is different from back then.” Sikong Toutian explained: “Who knows how? But in these last couple of years, it suddenly became a lot stronger. Maybe the king really has a way with ruling. They have great hidden resources and strength. As for that Mortal King, he was still wasting time on his Saint Physique, but later on, it turned into an Immortal Physique out of nowhere.”

“Boss, I’m not just making assumptions right now.” Sikong Toutian went on: “The school is claiming that the Mortal King made their Hell Suppressing Jewel Law complete. To tell the truth, I don’t believe this at all. Heh, with the skill of the saint child back then, if he could fix this physique law, then both Jikong Wudi and Mei Suyao would have become Immortal Emperors already.”

He paused for a bit here: “Although the saint child was a bit talented with a commendable calm demeanor, I feel that he alone absolutely cannot complete an Immortal Physique Law!”

Li Qiye listened with a smile. Nothing could elude his eyes. The Mortal King was not cultivating the jewel law from their school — he knew this very well.

“Boss, there is another thing I need to tell you.” Sikong Toutian looked at Li Qiye with a relaxed expression and revealed: “I have found out some news, the saint child wants to marry Miss Chen. However, there are some reasons for apprehension, so he hasn’t made a move yet.”

“With just him alone?” Li Qiye chuckled without saying anything.

The guy quickly grinned and said: “Of course, only Boss is deserving of Miss Chen.”

Li Qiye leered at him and leisurely spoke: “Does your master know that you came here to steal? Did you tell the Mortal Monarch as well?”

The guy was startled after hearing this. His neck shrunk from fear as he wryly coughed: “Haha, Boss, I am sucking up... no, Boss is really incredibly wise, number one across the eons. Me running errands for you with all of my heart is something that my master and the Mortal Monarch would be proud of.”

“What about the stealing matter?” Li Qiye asked while looking at the guy.

He coughed in response: “Oh, oh, Boss, you should know this too, not everyone is a saint. No one is always right and perfect, right? I am only stealing some little things, I’m sure the seniors won’t really mind.”

“Sikong Toutian oh Sikong Toutian, you can only be described as an incurable little brat.” Li Qiye smilingly stated.

“I am honored to be praised by Boss.” Sikong Toutian didn’t give a damn and grinned happily.

Li Qiye smiled too and understood that this Sikong Toutian couldn't be changed. He was a prodigal son that runs around all over the world, completely different from others who were hellbent on cultivation to reach the top or even rule the world.

In fact, Sikong Toutian's talents were not lesser than that of any other genius. However, he didn't care about it. He only wanted to roam the world as his ambition was not for domination.

“Everyone has their own wishes, it cannot be forced.” In the end, this was all Li Qiye could say.

Sikong Toutian looked at him and said: “Does Boss want to go anywhere or have anything you want me to do?”

Li Qiye looked at him with one eye and said: “No need. I don't want to hunt for any treasures right now. I just want to meditate with the Buddhist faith in peace, read all the scriptures and visit the three thousand temples. Of course, if you want to be a monk, I can also convert you and help you get there.”

“A monk? Hah, Boss, this lowly one is full of vulgarity, I cannot become a monk.” Sikong Toutian was scared after hearing this and immediately refused.

Of course, he also found it strange and had to ask: “Why does Boss want to cultivate Buddhism?”

He naturally didn't believe Li Qiye ran here to become a monk. He knew that Li Qiye was definitely not the type who would want to be one!

Li Qiye revealed a mysterious smile and slowly said: "It's a secret."

Sikong Toutian didn't dare to ask for more and smiled: "If that's the case, then this lowly one will not disturb your meditation any longer. If you ever need someone to run some errands, just call for me. I will come running."

After he left, Li Qiye continued on. After several days, he finally made it to a temple.

This temple was situated along a desolate ridge. Very few people came to this modest-sized temple. It seemed to only be a small square-shaped courtyard.

From the peeling red walls, one could tell that it had been built a very long time ago. Moreover, it was not a popular place since there were no pilgrims visiting here at all.

There were too many temples at the plateau. Some were very prosperous, so naturally, the other extreme existed as well.

Although this temple had no visitors offering incense, it was still open and welcomed visitors.

Li Qiye went before it and became quiet for a moment before he eventually entered. It was a bit dark inside with a very simple yet elegant design. Despite the lack of guests, there was still incense burning inside. This meant that there were still monks worshipping Buddha in this temple.

In the main hall, Li Qiye saw a statue across the wafting smoke. To be exact, it was a statue of a Bodhisattva.

One could faintly see it through all the smoke. It was a woman with her left hand forming a lotus mudra while her right hand formed an unidentifiable mudra. She sat on a lotus flower with a leaned posture so no one could really see her face. From her figure, she should be quite beautiful, to a transcendent level in fact. It was very rare to find a statue of this caliber. Perhaps out of all the temples in this plain, only this temple worshiped the Bodhisattva.

Li Qiye slowly sat down in a meditative pose on a futon and quietly stared at this Bodhisattva.

Suddenly, he became overwhelmed and lost track of time as if he had forgotten everything else. He continued to stare at it.

It was a relic of the unrecallable past, but Li Qiye couldn't help but remember bits and pieces at this moment.

“Enchantress or goddess... this doesn't matter. In the end, it was as ephemeral as a wisp of smoke.” Li Qiye was lost in a daze and murmured: “There are too many unforgettable things back then. I, I don't really know what to say. All along, I really do not like

conversion, but if it gave you peace and freedom, then I am glad of it.”

Having said that, he sighed softly and felt a bit lost. There had been countless passengers of all shapes and forms in his life. Immortal Emperors, true gods, mortals... Some were more unforgettable than others.

He had many followers once. They were willing to contribute everything for him and would even sacrifice their own lives for his sake! This Bodhisattva ahead was one of them. There were dangerous moments back then when she was the first to stand in front of him!

The years went by and during a peaceful era, she chose to convert to Buddhism and passed away here in peace!

Li Qiye’s heart quivered while looking at her statue and felt his emotions running amok. His heart of stone had been polished so many times that there was no shaking it. However, this was one of those exceptions. Time was the cruelest thing in this world. Even if it couldn’t take away an immortal being, it could take away other things... Those who stood by your side, family, friendship...

An old nun came by while he was dazed. She had a cold demeanor and was as calm as the water in a well. She asked: “Offering incense or seeking shelter?”

Li Qiye didn’t answer right away. He stood up and quietly lit some incense then bowed once. After putting the incense sticks on

the altar, he looked deeply at the Bodhisattva for a bit before turning around.

He looked at the old nun and flatly said: “Just shelter for one.”

The nun was indifferent. She took out a key and handed it over to Li Qiye before coldly saying: “The room on the west side, take care of your own meals.” With that, she turned away.

Li Qiye didn't say anything else. He took the key and entered the room on the west side. Judging from the dust that had built up, there hadn't been a need for one to stay here for a very long time.

He was not in a hurry and silently meditated to embrace this rare moment of tranquility. Before anyone knew it, he felt isolated and solitary. This was a type of serene peace that allowed one to be without distraught.

Perhaps when she came here that year, she was also pursuing this kind of tranquility.

No one came to bother his meditation in the temple. There was only an old nun in this place. She was both the abbess and the caretaker.

She didn't care about anything and didn't ask Li Qiye anything either. Outside of meditation, she usually chanted scriptures. She passed her time in this manner for what seemed to be an unchanging eternity, as if there was no time here, no sun or moon.

Everything was forgotten in this place — mundane matters, time, fame, fortune... they all lapsed into oblivion, leaving only peace behind.

Chapter 1015: Sutra Room

He meditated for several days in this nameless temple before coming out from the guest room.

The old nun was still sitting in the main hall. Even when Li Qiye came, she didn't bother looking as if nothing could bother her from her state of zen.

Li Qiye told the nun: "I want to read the buddhist scrolls at the Sutra Room."

The nun finally opened her pair of heavy and listless eyes that seemingly resulted from old age.

"The Sutra Room is only for fateful ones." She calmly answered in an indifferent manner after taking a quick glance at Li Qiye.

"I am a fateful one." He responded softly. With that, he didn't say anything else. He didn't wait for her permission before going straight to the Bodhisattva statue. He took out a wooden key beneath it and left.

From start to finish, the old nun didn't move at all from her futon. Even when Li Qiye took the key, she remained quiet. However, her aged eyes instantly lit up like the sun and moon in a profound and unfathomable manner.

Still, she didn't say or take any action and eventually closed her

eyes to meditate again.

Li Qiye went to the very end of the temple. There was a hallway that led to a small room without any signs or plaques.

However, this was the Sutra Room that Li Qiye was looking for. When he reached the room, he inserted the wooden key. Despite the lock issuing a click, the old wooden door still didn't open.

He placed his palm on the old door that had experienced countless years. Nevertheless, the runes on the door were still very clear.

After his touch, these runes began to change. They slowly intertwined to form a lotus flower. It appeared very sacred and gave others a feeling of ataraxia.

“Clakk!” The wooden door slowly opened and Li Qiye entered the Sutra Room. It closed behind him right afterward.

It was a room with many levels of bookshelves and numerous scriptures as far as the eyes could see. This room was not as small as it looked from the outside. There was a heavenly grotto within. Before actually entering, no one would be able to realize it.

Just like its name, the Sutra Room contained Buddhist scriptures. If others were to assume that it contained martial scriptures or supreme techniques, then they would be completely mistaken.

Only Buddhist scriptures were here. Moreover, the majority were the original copy as well, all hand-written by venerable monks. Thus, one was met with a majestic and serene Buddhist aura that permeated throughout the entire room.

Li Qiye walked and browsed these scriptures that came from all over the world. This was an accumulation of books throughout the long years. He, his generals, and the lineages that worked for him all stored scriptures in this place.

This place had to be the location with the most complete collection of Buddhist scriptures in this world. What was even more astonishing was that some of the scriptures here came from Nalanda. They were the original version so outsiders shouldn't have been able to obtain them.

Li Qiye selected quite a few scriptures from the vast collection. The majority of the ones he chose came from the Buddhist Funeral Plateau and Nalanda.

Li Qiye had read through these scriptures before back during the long and arduous years. However, he had an entirely new strategy this time around, so he needed to read these scriptures as preparation to enter the Nihility Temple.

This wouldn't be their first confrontation. This time, he would have a new approach.

Afterwards, he began to chant the sutras and became immersed

in the dharma. This was not an attempt at comprehension but a process of transformation. I am Buddha, I am the law — this was the effect that Li Qiye desired.

With his recitation and assuming the Buddhist doctrine, visual phenomena began to emerge. Each of his words came out as lotuses while a Buddhist radiance shrouded his body. This made him resemble a Buddhist Lord.

The old abbess of the temple remained indifferent towards Li Qiye and didn't even bother to look at him. She treated him as if he wasn't staying inside this temple.

“Bang!” One day during his meditation, a heavy crash resounded outside as if something had slammed into the ground. This prompted his eyes to open.

He went outside and saw that a woman had fallen into the courtyard. She was dressed in a loose black attire that hid her identity. Her body was spotted with blood marks and she had difficulty standing up at this moment.

“Clank—” When Li Qiye got close, the woman in black suddenly unsheathed her sword and coldly glared at him with her pretty eyes.

Li Qiye looked at her and smiled calmly before speaking: “Escaping with a heaven-defying void shattering technique has left you devoid of blood energy. You are no different than an ordinary girl at this time, no, you're even weaker than one. Even a mortal

can kill you right now.”

She continued to glare at him and didn't speak as if she wanted to read something from his expression.

Li Qiye slowly reached out to this woman. She looked at him once more and hesitated a bit before taking his hand so that he could help her up.

He supported her into the room and let her sit down. Meanwhile, the old abbess in the main hall continued to ignore the whole situation. She meditated with her eyes closed as if she didn't notice the woman in black.

Inside the room, Li Qiye brought over clean water and spoke insipidly towards the woman: “Clean yourself of this bloody stench, it's ruining my vibe.”

The woman silently looked at him and didn't want to clean her face. Without a doubt, she didn't want to reveal her face to him.

“Okay, show your true face. Your outfit and transformation might fool others, but not me.” Li Qiye looked at her and spoke: “A disciple of the Sleeping Dragon Cliff will always have the stench of the sea no matter where they go. I already know who you are without needing to look!”

“Who are you!” The woman was startled and raised her voice. Despite her grave injury and powerlessness, there was still an

unchanging imposing force. Just her words alone had a deterrent effect.

Li Qiye chuckled: “The person who saved your life. Of course, you can call me by another name, Chu Yuntian!”

The woman felt anxious and doubtful. She looked at him but failed to truly understand him. The man was quite handsome. Despite seeming normal, he was full of mysteries.

“Okay, don’t be so paranoid of me. If I harbored bad intentions towards you, I would destroy you even when you are at your prime.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

She looked at him once more. Eventually, her body slightly changed as she revealed her true form. It was Wo Longxuan, the Sleeping Dragon Cliff’s sect master!

Li Qiye calmly looked at her revealed face while she only washed her face in silence.

“Mmm, much better. Although it cannot wash away the natural sea smell from your people, at least it washed away that smell of blood.” Li Qiye chuckled.

After she finished washing up, the entire room was lit up from her brilliance. Despite being pale from the wounds, it didn’t affect her style. She almost vomited blood from anger after hearing his remark. Even if he saved her, she still glared at him angrily and

said: “I don’t have a sea stench!”

He looked at her and smiled: “If you are the cliff’s descendant, then you should know of your origin.”

“Hmph, what origin?” She coldly responded while being very annoyed at him.

He leisurely spoke: “Although your dragon cliff is not an imperial lineage, it is one of the oldest lineages. A non-imperial sect standing strong for millions of years in the northern Grand Sea, why do you think that is?”

She didn’t answer his question and only stared at him.

He sat down and nonchalantly continued: “A long time ago at the bottom of the northern sea, there once existed a particular race. They dwelled in the depths, isolated from the rest of the world. It was not until later that someone from this race exited the sea. From that point on, the world slowly came to know of the race’s existence...”

Wo Longxuan’s eyes turned serious when Li Qiye reached this point. Very few people knew about this story these days. Even the cliff’s disciples weren’t aware of it.

Li Qiye smilingly revealed: “... Gradually, this race disappeared while the northern sea received a new lineage named the Sleeping Dragon Cliff. No one knew of its exact identity as it rose to

prominence overnight.”

Chapter 1016: Sleeping Dragon Cliff's Origin

Wo Longxuan began to contemplate. Only ancestor-level characters in the cliff knew about this secret, but now, this stranger named Chu Yuntian knew this many things. This was too shocking.

“There’s no need to be alarmed or have thoughts about killing me.” Li Qiye lazily looked at her: “Even if you were in your prime state, I would still kill you as easily as crushing a chicken.”

“Such a big tone! Maybe, if you were a Godking.” She coldly retorted. However, no matter how she tried, she couldn’t see the cultivation of this Chu Yuntian before her.

“Whether I am a Godking or not is not important. I don’t really worry about people of your level.” Li Qiye smiled and looked at her: “However, old dwellers of the depths, eh. If I really crushed you to death, it would be a huge shame. A bloodline like yours has not appeared for a very long time so it is quite precious, even more than an Immortal Medicine.”

“What do you want to do?!” She was shocked after hearing this. This Chu Yuntian knew too many things. He would be more dangerous than anyone if he had any bad ideas about her.

“What can I do?” He slowly glanced at her: “Am I going to drink your blood to nourish myself? Or should I rape you to give birth to my child? I can’t do either.”

“Your race has a particular fishy smell so I won’t be drinking your blood. As for you bearing my child? I’m sorry to say that although your bloodline isn’t bad, it would be pushing it for you to bear my children. Even a woman with the bloodline of a true immortal wouldn’t necessarily be qualified to have my child.” Li Qiye teasingly winked at her and laughed.

She was livid after hearing this and glared at him while shaking. She was a great beauty. In both the northern sea and the Mortal Emperor World, she would be the focus no matter where she went, yet Li Qiye made it sound as if she was not worth a single coin.

She said with exasperation: “If you don’t have anything else, I want to meditate to heal.”

Li Qiye kept on looking at her and smiled leisurely: [“Miss, don’t misunderstand, this is my room. You would be taking it over by doing something rude like that.”](#)

“Fine, are there any other rooms here? Let me have one.” She was going berserk from talking to him and struggled to get up.

Li Qiye swung his sleeve and stopped her from doing so: “Okay, I’m just joking with you. Even if you meditate for three to five years, you still wouldn’t be able to cure this wound. It is useless to rush it right now.”

She was quite angry and had just managed to quell down this resentment. She coldly snorted and sat back down, still a bit irritated.

He looked at the angry girl and spoke: “Your defeat to the Jewel Pillar Saint Child is to be expected this time.”

Wo Longxuan was not down about it. She immediately replied: “Winning or losing is just part of the warrior’s way. This isn’t my first defeat anyway, so what’s the big deal? I’ll win next time!”

“You still don’t get it.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Jewel Pillar won’t give you a next time.”

His response caught her off guard. She coldly spoke: “You were watching the entire time in secret?”

“Wrong again.” Li Qiye shook his head: “I only saw the start of the fight but have already figured out the outcome, so there was no need to keep on watching.”

“What do you mean? What else do you know?” She stared at him intensely.

Li Qiye smirked and didn’t answer. He lazily sat there while staring at her.

Wo Longxuan took a deep breath. In the end, she was still a sect master who had experienced many turmoils and was capable of letting go of her pride. She calmed her emotions and sat straight in a formal pose to look at Li Qiye: “This little sister has many questions. Please, Fellow Daoist, enlighten me.”

Despite dropping her posture, she was still as elegant and charming as ever.

“Some people say that women can change their attitude faster than one turning the page of a book. This saying is definitely correct.” Li Qiye smilingly quipped.

Wo Longxuan was annoyed once more, but she quickly controlled her emotions. She earnestly stared at him and spoke: “If Fellow Daoist only wants to tease me, then there’s nothing else I can do.”

She was in a disadvantageous state at this moment, so her soft demeanor made her seem quite amiable. Anyone — as long as they were men — would like a sensible woman.

Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile after seeing her method. He nonchalantly sat there and asked: “What do you not understand?”

She pondered for a moment before lifting her head and spoke: “The Mortal King was different this time.”

“Because he was going all the way? Not giving up until he kills you?” Li Qiye replied with a smile.

She slowly confirmed: “That’s right, this didn’t happen in our last two fights after a victor was decided.”

Li Qiye chuckled: “Then why do you think he wanted to kill you? Is it because your potential poses a sufficient threat in the future, so he would rather kill you before your wings are fully grown? Or is it because you no longer have any value, so he might as well kill you to augment his prestige?”

Wo Longxuan mused the two hypothetical situations. She couldn't come up with an answer right away.

“You know, but he doesn't.” Li Qiye smiled: “Although the saint child is a bit talented, his level cannot get into my sight. You have an ancient bloodline that he and even the person behind him in the shadows don't know about...”

“... You still have a long way to go, it is normal to lose to him. First, you have only just begun to tap into your bloodline and are far from taking the next step. Second, he has seen your cliff's dao laws, so you have lost your value as a training tool. The only thing that's left for you in his eyes is to act as a stepping stone. He will kill you to show his might to the rest of the world.” Li Qiye paused here and stared at her.

She was quiet for a moment before finally lifting her head to ask: “You mentioned this person behind him, who is he?”

“Who do you think?” Li Qiye answered with a question.

She pondered for a moment before speculating: “A very, very powerful existence. Even though I've lost to the Mortal King, I was still confident about leaving alive! The moment the Mortal King

gave chase, I fled very far away in an instant. He did not give up and continued his pursuit...”

“I know that your dragon cliff has a particular escape art. Indeed, if you wanted to escape, the saint child, who is not versed in speed, would definitely not be able to catch up to you.” Li Qiye interjected.

“However, there was someone who suddenly ambushed me. The person was very powerful and I couldn’t see their face. I immediately felt danger and summoned a secret treasure from my sect to shatter the void and escape.” She was palpitating while recalling the event. The ambusher was too powerful. If she didn’t use a massive amount of blood energy to summon her secret treasure, she wouldn’t have been able to escape and would have been killed by that person.

“Then it is correct. It shows that the saint child was only using you as a sharpening stone.” Li Qiye claimed.

“You mean, this was just an experiment?” She was both startled and skeptical.

He continued: “That’s one way to put it. Judging from his recent battles, you can see that he is trying to find the most suitable offensive method. Think about it, who did he fight recently and what were the results?”

She pondered for a moment before speaking: “You could say that the Mortal King has challenged all the most famous youths in the

Mortal Emperor World. Jikong Wudi, Zhan Shi, Lin Tiandi, Bai Jianzhen, Mei Suyao...”

“Normally, he would lose on the first challenge. During the second, he would have the chance to even the score.” Li Qiye said.

Wo Longxuan replied: “There are indeed signs of that. It was true when I fought him, and the same goes for Jikong Wudi. He lost to Jikong Wudi the first time and won the second. That was quite difficult to imagine for the people back then. No one thought that he could win because everyone knew that Jikong Wudi had an absolute advantage during the first battle!”

“This is because it is not just the saint child fighting, but also someone else. The person behind him in the shadows.” Li Qiye said: “One hundred wars to become a deity; one hundred victories to become an emperor. The saint child is not an extremely brilliant person. He requires countless battles to gain experience, borrowing war to find his enemies’ weakness to make up for his own!”

Li Qiye paused for a bit here: “The saint child is not afraid of losing because he knows full well that he won’t die as a result due to the great person protecting him! Otherwise, he wouldn’t be going around the world asking to fight. This is proven because if he was a fanatic for battle or someone who loves cultivating, he would have challenged people in the past already.”

“He is a cautious person!” Wo Longxuan had a good understanding after fighting with the Mortal King.

“Yes, he is quite cautious.” Li Qiye chuckled: “But now, everyone is calling him a War Fanatic. Is he truly in love with battle to the point of insanity? No! He is only using others to sharpen himself.”

The idiom here is a bit hard to translate, so it’s localized. This is the literal translation — the guest acts as the host (idiom). The usual meaning is that it is a strategy to seize the advantageous situation, to have the host’s advantage. Li Qiye is using it to say that she is being rude.

Chapter 1017: Seeking Buddhism

Wo Longxuan had to comment: “Who is this person behind him? Is it an ancestor from the Jewel Pillar Sacred School?”

Li Qiye shook his head: “An ancestor from the school? I’m afraid not. Even though the school has many physique laws, it can’t reach this level of proficiency in so many different aspects. The person knows the dao techniques of this world too well, not just anyone can accomplish this!”

Wo Longxuan contemplated again. She lost completely this time against the Mortal King. It was just like Chu Yuntian said, the king found the right merit laws to restrain her so that she was at a complete disadvantage and had no way to reverse the tides.

“There’s no need to be dejected. The saint child isn’t bad and the person behind him is quite heaven-defying.” Li Qiye spoke: “However, if you can comprehend the mysteries of your bloodline, defeating him won’t be difficult!”

She softly sighed and replied: “Perhaps, but even if that day comes, it will be a very long time from now.”

She was not someone who wallows in despair upon defeat. However, her situation was not optimistic due to her grave injuries. Even if she could return to the Grand Sea, she still needed many years to recover. Comprehending her bloodline would require an even longer period of time.

“Take this, my medicine can heal your injury quite quickly.” Li Qiye casually threw a small bottle to her. Its tiny size would make others think that he was quite stingy!

At first, she didn't really care and only opened it unconcernedly. When the bottle was opened, a sweet fragrance capable of making people feel refreshed drifted out. The ointment inside resembled the fat of a dragon with flashing glimmers.

Wo Longxuan was shocked to see this type of ointment. Even if she wasn't knowledgeable about medicine, she still knew that this ointment was supreme.

“What, what is this medicine?” She stared at Li Qiye in amazement.

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “Heaven Restoration Salve. It can cure your wounds in a short amount of time.”

“Heaven Restoration Salve!” She was startled: “I have heard of this medicine before. Legend states that it is the best medicine in the nine worlds, but no one has ever been able to refine it.”

Having said that, she stared at Li Qiye in disbelief. She didn't know who this Chu Yuntian was at all!

What was even more stunning was that Chu Yuntian casually gave her such a precious medicine. Keep in mind that they didn't know each other. She didn't think that her charm was great

enough for someone else to easily hand over the best medicine in the nine worlds either.

She eventually calmed down with difficulty and took a deep breath before staring at him: “Why are you handing me this priceless medicine?”

She couldn’t guess what the man was thinking at all. He was a mystery that couldn’t be explored.

“Because I don’t want you to die.” Li Qiye leisurely said: “An ancient bloodline, old to the point of being untraceable. I really want to see how pure this bloodline can eventually get.”

“You truly know about my bloodline?” She stared at him. In fact, even her Sleeping Dragon Cliff didn’t know too much about this bloodline. This was because it was very long ago since the last time a pure bloodline like hers appeared. They were no longer the same cliff as back then, no longer the legendary dwellers of the sea.

“At the very least, much more than your cliff.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “Someone with this bloodline hasn’t appeared in your cliff in a very long time, so all of you have almost forgotten that your ancestors came from the sea!”

“Fellow Daoist is so knowledgeable, this little sister hopes that you can teach me a thing or two about my bloodline.” She was not a fool. On the contrary, clever was a suitable word to describe her.

He couldn't help but smile: "Teach you? Of course I can teach you. The question is, what is in it for me? I can occasionally act as a good person, but not always. If you want to harvest, you must work for it. I need my efforts to be reciprocated!"

This response left her silent. She didn't know anything about this Chu Yuntian, so she couldn't make any promises to someone she knew nothing about.

"Recuperate well." He glanced at the silent girl and smiled before standing up to go to the Sutra Room to read more scrolls.

She stayed behind in the temple to recover while using the Heaven Restoration Salve. Her injuries healed very quickly. They were quite serious; even her dao foundation was damaged.

Judging from her injuries, even if she fled back to the Sleeping Dragon Cliff and used their incredible ointments, it would take as long as ten years before she could heal. However, under the medicinal effect of this salve, she was able to be completely cured in just four to five days.

This astonished her completely. This salve was simply too heaven-defying. She couldn't help but murmur its name: "Heaven Restoration, Heaven Restoration, if you can restore even the heavens, what can't you do?"

She had heard of this name before from the older generation. However, it was only an item of the legends. She knew that it was the best medicine in the nine worlds. The truth was that even her

ancestors didn't know what it was, let alone seeing it with their own eyes. They had only heard of the name. Even the best alchemists couldn't refine and create the Heaven Restoration Salve.

But now, Li Qiye gave the number one medicine to her so that she could see its true effects. How could she not become frightened?

After making a full recovery in just a few short days, she actually didn't leave and remained in the temple. Outside of wanting to know the monster behind the saint child, she also wanted to find out just who this Chu Yuntian was.

During this time, Li Qiye stayed in the Sutra Room. Although there were other heavenly grottos here, they couldn't seal the phenomena that appeared in this library.

The room continued to emit a Buddhist radiance. Although the amount was very little due to the seal, they were very palpable. Each Buddhist string of light seemed to be made from gold. These golden strings didn't only have a golden shade, they also emitted a metallic sound like falling gold powder.

The phenomena exceeded just these lights. Outside of the room, one could hear Buddhist chants as if the territory inside had become a kingdom of Buddha. It gave the illusion that a Buddhist Lord was chanting inside. Each word became a supreme Buddhist mantra and law, each phrase became its own world!

In the next few days, even these grottos could no longer seal the

phenomena inside. Following these visual imageries, a golden lotus first grew out from the ground. Several days later, more lotuses bloomed as a golden spring oozed out from the courtyard. This billowing golden spring represented the highest symbol of Buddhism.

This scene didn't only frighten Wo Longxuan, even the cold old abbess was startled. The descriptions in the legends about someone [capable of spewing out lotuses and making golden springs surge from the ground](#) were only like this at best.

Though both women couldn't see the scenes inside the Sutra Room, just these oozing golden springs and golden lotuses growing everywhere allowed them to easily imagine what was going on. Perhaps that place had become a Buddhist Kingdom with tens of millions of worshipers, millions of battle monks, and a hundred thousand meditating Bodhisattvas...

Eventually, the phenomena disappeared. One could hear a squeaking sound as Li Qiye came out from the Sutra Room. At this time, the current Li Qiye was not too different from before. He became even more ordinary looking, a transformation back to the origin.

Despite seeming even more ordinary, when one stood close to Li Qiye, they would inexplicably feel an unspeakable Buddhist affinity. It was as if a supreme Buddhist Lord was converting and enlightening you in a natural and mysterious process. People would suddenly feel an impulse to prostrate and convert to the Buddhist order.

Wo Longxuan was a genius as well as the sect master of the Sleeping Dragon Cliff. Her dao heart was extremely strong. However, when she stood close to Li Qiye, her dao heart suddenly felt a ripple with his image; an image of him looking like a Buddhist Lord.

“What is this black magic!” Wo Longxuan jumped from shock and stared at him.

At this time, Li Qiye was very gentle and calm. The world became tranquil wherever he stood. Even time didn’t dare to disturb him.

“This is the Dharma, a salvation for all existences.” Li Qiye smiled. He was clearly not a monk, but his smile gave off the illusion that he was a Buddhist Lord who loved all living beings!

Wo Longxuan’s mind quaked. She took a deep breath and channeled her dao law to repel all distractions and calm these ripples in her mind. Nevertheless, she was still astounded.

Li Qiye hadn’t used any laws, just his words were able to move her heart. This was far too terrifying. Even the boundless Dharma of the legends wouldn’t be any more influential than this.

Eventually, he put the key back and stood before the Bodhisattva statue. He placed his palms together and bowed his head before leaving. Now, nothing was holding him back.

The whole time, the old abbess remained seated in the same place

without saying a word.

After exiting the temple, Li Qiye turned around and asked: “Why are you following me?”

Wo Longxuan was right behind him. Moreover, she had changed her appearance and was shrouded in a black attire.

Some idioms serving as adjectives for magnificent sceneries here. They can be used to describe a holy person or a great rhetor as well.

Chapter 1018: Meeting The Middle Continent Princess Again

She stood still and looked at him before smiling: “I’m following to take a look at what kind of person you really are.”

She was no longer concealing her goal. She understood that hiding or lying in front of Li Qiye was a foolish idea.

“The person behind the Mortal King is probably still looking for you. If you are smart, then leave this place and return to your cliff. You are not the Mortal King’s match and definitely not that person’s match.” Despite his calm demeanor, he gave off a transcendent temperament.

“I also want to see who he is as well.” She smiled. Unfortunately, her face was hidden so no one could see her kingdom-toppling smile.

Li Qiye only looked at her for a bit. In the end, he didn’t say anything and turned around to continue onward. Wo Longxuan followed right behind him. Judging from her appearance, she was determined to go wherever he went.

Of course, Li Qiye didn’t really care. He couldn’t feel that there was a person right behind him at all. Meanwhile, she felt something completely different. Each of his steps seemed very slow, but the truth was that they were extremely swift.

The even stranger part was that it wasn't Li Qiye moving, but the entire Buddhist Funeral Plateau. It was as if Li Qiye was the center of the plateau. He stood in place, completely still, while the entire plateau moved for his sake.

The even more mystical aspect was that Li Qiye did not emit any Buddhist lights or visual phenomena. However, there was an indescribable feeling while standing behind him — a Buddhist aura, both majestic and gentle. It gave off a sudden sensation that it was not Li Qiye walking but a supreme Buddhist Lord.

The sun was rising from the horizon as Li Qiye slowly trod forward. A golden light from the grand dao was pouring out from behind him. These golden rays scattered as if they wanted to save all living beings.

This feeling of grandeur made Wo Longxuan breathe deeply to compose herself and protect her dao heart. Otherwise, it would be affected by him despite its resilience.

Many were affected by the Buddhist affinity from the plateau. However, for someone at her level, unless they came to challenge the eighteen temples, this affinity was negligible.

But now, Li Qiye wasn't using any Buddhist arts or chanting sutras, yet he was already affecting her to a great extent. The Buddhist affinity that emanated from his body had reached an unbelievable magnitude. If he started chanting or used Buddhist laws, she didn't know how long she would be able to hold out for.

How could Wo Longxuan not be astonished by this? Someone of her level understood the distinction between illusions and reality. However, the scene ahead was neither an illusion nor reality, it was an indirect sign, telling her that this Chu Yuntian had a terrifying Buddhist affinity. Or rather, [he had obtained a Buddhist heart!](#)

“You cultivate the Buddhist dao?” Wo Longxuan couldn’t help but ask while following right behind him. Keep in mind that one couldn’t reach this such a powerful level overnight.

“I am Buddha, so there’s no need to cultivate.” Li Qiye answered: “All myriad dao have one origin while one law creates myriad dao. I am the law, a law of Buddhism; my words are the Buddhist dao.”

The volume of his voice was quite low, but in Wo Longxuan’s ears, his answer echoed to the nine layers of the firmament. It was as if a Buddhist Lord was speaking, a speech capable of changing the universe and causing myriad laws to resonate.

She protected her dao heart to avoid being affected by him while curiously inquiring: “Are you trying to join Nalanda? Or maybe you came from there?”

The Nalanda Temple was the leading area for the Buddhist faith. No one could compete with it. At the plateau, anyone who had some achievements with Buddhism would join Nalanda. However, not just anyone was able to enter.

“Go there?” Li Qiye laughed again: “I am Buddha, so why do I

need to join another monastery? The end of the path of Buddhism is me, so I don't need anyone to teach me."

His words silenced Wo Longxuan. This ordinary man ahead was extraordinary. Maybe he was right, he was Buddha himself or even a great Buddhist Lord!

The two continued on their way without talking. Eventually, Li Qiye arrived at a temple that was neither large or small. The weathered walls and roof tiles were quite old and had lost their luster.

Nevertheless, the temple was still emitting a burning Buddhist aura as if it was one with the momentum of this world. Any wise person could see that it was not so simple.

Standing outside, Li Qiye looked up carefully before entering the temple with Wo Longxuan right behind him.

Although she was not versed in feng shui, the moment she stepped inside, she could feel that this temple was quite extraordinary. It seemed to be one with the world, giving off an indestructible toughness. It resembled an impregnable citadel rather than a temple of worship.

There were no pilgrims inside and very few monks. As an expert, Wo Longxuan was able to sense that there were monks sitting inside the rooms of the temple even though they were absent in the main hall.

“May I ask if Benefactors are here to burn some incense or to sleep for the night?” After Li Qiye entered the temple, an old monk finally came to greet him with both hands clasped together.

Li Qiye looked at him and flatly said: “I want to see your master.”

Still with the Buddhist gesture, the monk gently shook his head: “I’m sorry, but Benefactor came at the wrong time. Our abbot is in closed meditation and won’t meet guests. Please come back another day.”

“I don’t want to see your abbot.” Li Qiye shook his head: “I want to see your master, Bu Lianxiang!”

“Who might Benefactor be...” The old monk’s eyes turned serious the moment he heard this. A radiance flashed within his pupils like the rays at the far reaches of the horizon.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Tell her an old friend is visiting.”

Having said that, his Buddhist energy soared outside. A golden lotus slowly blossomed below his feet. A golden spring oozed from the ground while Buddhist hymns resounded like the chanting of a million monks.

Even though there were no changes to his body, he appeared to be incredibly grand like a gigantic Buddha capable of shouldering the blue sky with a single stomp. His sutras would grant salvation for all living beings.

This wasn't an illusion but extremely tangible Buddhism. Only an unfathomable mastery of the Buddhist faith would result in these phenomena.

"Amitabha, so High Buddha is visiting." The monk placed his palms together and bowed: "Please wait, this little monk will go inform the master." Having said that, the old monk left.

Li Qiye recalled his Buddhist aura and assumed his ordinary form. Nevertheless, he still gave off a sublime presence.

A bit later, the old monk came back and respectfully gestured with his palms once more while bowing: "High Buddha, the master will see you."

He then led the way for Li Qiye. Li Qiye followed with Wo Longxuan right behind him. She was quite curious about who Li Qiye wanted to meet.

A bit later, the monk led them to an arch entrance. He stood there without entering and gestured for Li Qiye to go inside.

The two of them stepped beneath the arch and found that there was a heavenly grotto inside. It was a place of nature, not an old building like one would imagine.

A great river ran before them with sparkling water. However, the sparkles here were not from the water, they were from the silver

within. The entire river seemed to be full of silver as if it used to be in the nine heavens and had now fallen into the mortal world.

A woman was meditating on top of the river. The lotus below her was blossoming and emitted colorful rays that illuminated the depths of the river. Meanwhile, at the bottom of the river were countless visual phenomena, as if a supreme treasury was about to open.

She appeared to be over thirty and had an elegance that couldn't be described with the brush. Her style was supreme and accentuated her mature charm that would cause hearts to beat faster!

Wo Longxuan could be called a great beauty of the current generation; her features were kingdom-toppling. However, she was still lacking compared to the woman ahead.

She didn't recognize who the woman was, but if Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao were here, they would know right away. It was the Middle Continent Princess!

Outsiders would be astounded to find out about this. The princess was buried in the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground as an Earth Immortal, yet she was able to make it out alive.

Without a doubt, the princess had chose the correct underworld boat back then and was successful in prolonging her life. As for how many years she was able to gain, this was not known.

Li Qiye secretly heaved a gentle sigh while looking at the princess sitting on the lotus with her unchanging appearance. After many years, some things still won't change. Even if they did, they would remain unforgettable.

It was a misunderstanding back then as well as an ill-fated turn of events. It began with him, so it should be ended by him.

Similar concept to dao heart. Daoism versus Buddhism.

Chapter 1019: Hatred Caused By Love

The princess instantly opened her eyes the moment Li Qiye came over. Her expression quickly changed upon seeing him. Even though she was once renowned across the nine worlds, her emotions still surged at this time.

“Crash!” The silver river reflected the fluctuations of her emotions. The lotus flower emitting the colorful lights suddenly pulsed black and white as if a storm was approaching.

“Don’t be so flustered. If you act rashly right now, all of your efforts will be wasted.” Li Qiye comforted her slowly with a touch of gentleness in his expression.

The princess’ pretty eyes were fixated on Li Qiye at this moment. Just her glare alone seemed to be able to pin him to the ground. This intrigued Wo Longxuan and she stared at Li Qiye like a curious child, then back at the princess. Intuition was telling her that they had a story between them, and a woman’s intuition was always right.

Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve towards her and said: “Wait outside, we need to talk in private.”

Despite being overwhelmed with curiosity, she didn’t want to interfere, so she quietly left.

“Chu Yuntian!” The princess stared intensely at him after Wo Longxuan left. The emotions contained in her voice as she called

this name were indecipherable, either of hatred or pure apathy.

“It’s me.” Li Qiye sighed softly and answered. He met her gaze directly.

She continued to stare at this man before her, a man that she had been chasing after her whole life, a man that did not exist. She didn’t know what feeling this was. Was it hate or...

“Should I call you Dark Crow or Chu Yuntian?” The princess’ voice was cold to the limit, capable of sealing the nine heavens and the sun in a glacier.

Li Qiye turned back into his true form and gently sighed: “It is all in the past. I am neither the Dark Crow nor Chu Yuntian, I am Li Qiye.”

“Is that so?” The princess chillingly glared at him with murderous intent: “How many forms do you actually have? Li Qiye for this generation, what about the next?”

“No. There is only one Li Qiye and only one Dark Crow.” Li Qiye shook his head.

“What about Chu Yuntian then!” She coldly spoke: “Identities like Chu Yuntian, how many do you have? Dozens, or hundreds?”

Li Qiye spoke with some reluctance: “It was only a misunderstanding that year, I didn’t mean to...”

“Misunderstanding?!” The cold princess loudly shouted: “Misunderstanding! You think that it was just a misunderstanding...”

She looked quite agitated at this moment. Her cold demeanor hid traces of unwillingness and resentment...

Li Qiye had no retort. He looked at her and slowly said: “Regardless of the past, I want to congratulate you on finally being able to prolong your life. To be able to see your peerless charm again, it is truly one of the greatest views in the nine worlds.”

The princess went silent for a moment. She sat on her lotus and only stared coldly at him. Eventually, she spoke without emotion: “You think it is over with just that?”

Li Qiye met her gaze: “I didn’t have that intent back then. One can only say that Mother Nature toys with people.”

“So this is Mother Nature’s fault?” The princess snorted coldly, perhaps from self-deprecation, then sneered: “You are saying that it was just my one-sided crush, that I asked for it. To chase you from one generation to the next, and in the end, it was only for a scheme!”

Li Qiye paused for a moment. He didn’t expect things to unravel the way they did back then.

Li Qiye softly spoke: “You were young back then, just a little girl.”

During that time, the Middle Continent Ancient Kingdom was extremely powerful. It could even be said that the Ancient Ming were wary of the kingdom. Unfortunately, it chose to cooperate with the Ancient Ming.

At that time, the dynasty had an extremely heaven-defying item that related to a particular secret. Li Qiye had wanted to destroy the Ancient Ming at that time, but he had far from enough aces in his hands. Moreover, during that generation, the Ancient Ming produced many geniuses, particularly Immortal Emperor Tian Tu who was magnificently brilliant during his youth.

At that time, Li Qiye thought of the dynasty’s item. He turned into a young man and created an identity named Chu Yuntian to infiltrate the dynasty.

In fact, he didn’t directly meet with the princess back then and only watched her from afar under the moonlight.

She was only a lonely little princess during that period. The king of the Middle Continent Kingdom was an unnaturally strong Godking. However, his ambition was untethered as he made frequent contact with the Ancient Ming.

Despite being from noble birth, the princess was quite lonely with only her shadow for a friend. Their glances under the moonlight made this man named Chu Yuntian leave a deep

impression on her.

“Because I was young and naive back then, so you seduced me.” The princess sneered while glaring at him.

“I didn’t want to do it, you were a good girl.” Li Qiye weakly spoke: “I cared about you and didn’t want you to walk on the same path as your father.”

“So I should be thanking you?” The princess chuckled sarcastically: “Did you worry about me, or did you worry about the location that this silver river was hiding?”

Li Qiye contemplated for a moment before meeting her gaze, deciding to hide nothing: “Yes, I infiltrated the dynasty back then in order to obtain this item. However, I really cared for you as well. You had a three saint aptitude so I hoped that you could go on a different path.”

“A path that didn’t block your way, right?” Her cold smile in this moment contained none of the sentiments of one: “If that’s what you think, then there’s nothing I can do.”

Li Qiye freely met her eyes: “If you think that cooperating with the Ancient Ming is the way to go, then there’s nothing I can do, we have no need for further discussion. That is my bottom line. Those who cooperate with the Ancient Ming shall be destroyed by me, all of them! It is that simple.”

The princess looked at him coldly and spoke: “Yes, you’re right, I don’t care for that mess relating to the Ancient Ming anyway.”

“I knew that you and your father were different, and in the end, you set out on a different path.” Li Qiye gently nodded: “If you doubt me, I won’t deny it. Later on, when I infiltrated the Ancient Ming, I was aiming for the item. As for my concern for you, that began after I met you.”

The princess sneered: “Really now? Were you always so calm like this? All of your words and phrases in your letters, were they written so emotionlessly? Gosh, it seems like the savior of our nine worlds is someone without the slightest defect in character. I was in the wrong, I was the dumb little girl who ruined our lord’s great plan, I’m the bad guy!” She finally revealed her resentment!

“No...” Li Qiye spoke softly: “I am not a great man. I admit that when I sent letters to you, there was another objective to it. Outside of caring about you, I really wanted to know the location of the silver river!”

When Li Qiye disguised himself as Chu Yuntian to infiltrate the Middle Continent Kingdom, he managed to enter the most heavily guarded location of the imperial family. His goal was to find the whereabouts of that item.

Due to the limitations of his identity, he couldn’t meet the princess face to face and couldn’t speak to her. However, the two of them always secretly sent letters to each other.

“Is that it?” The princess responded: “This is all that the words in those letters encompassed? You didn’t try to seduce an ignorant girl so that she would fall in love with a person named Chu Yuntian, a person that doesn’t even exist?! All just to make her tell you those secrets?!”

“I...” Li Qiye slightly opened his mouth, wanting to say something else, but he stopped while lamenting in his mind.

As the Dark Crow back then, he really didn’t want to do so. The princess back then was young and lonely, void of the love of her father or friends. Just like that, a young man who showed concern for her entered her life!

Because of this inadvertent misunderstanding, the princess eventually fell in love with Chu Yuntian, someone who didn’t even exist!

Li Qiye slowly said: “Back then, I was only teaching you how to cultivate through those letters.”

During their correspondence via letters, Li Qiye became quite close to her. He carefully taught her using those letters since he didn’t want her to walk on the same path as her father. Furthermore, it was to leave behind a great spark for the human race because the princess had exceedingly high talents with her three saint aptitudes.

And so, the princess misunderstood his careful guidance as something else and came to love Chu Yuntian. This made her

reveal everything to Li Qiye. Later on, when Li Qiye found out and wished to salvage the situation, the misunderstanding had already become too deep.

“Teaching!” The princess shouted loudly again: “Yes, yes, the great teacher of Immortal Emperors guiding me, this is my honor. There is nothing else other than this!”

Chapter 1020: Secret Of The Past

Li Qiye watched the princess who was very agitated at this moment. The lotus flower pulsed uncontrollably, causing the entire silver river to tremble.

He took a deep breath and looked her in the eyes to say: “Back then, I was completely wrong. It is all my fault. I came today to sincerely apologize.”

The princess sat there in silence with an icy demeanor. Who knew what she was thinking.

“Hah.” Eventually, she sneered: “Chu Yuntian, I suppose it doesn’t matter if you are called Chu Yuntian, Dark Crow, or even Li Qiye! However, I will never believe you, got it?”

Li Qiye stayed silent since he didn’t have an answer. This misunderstanding couldn’t be resolved with a few words. Otherwise, it wouldn’t have lasted for millions of years.

“Sincerity?” The princess laughed: “Back then, who was the one who left the dynasty in secrecy?! I know now that it was because I simply didn’t know where this silver river was hidden. To you, I no longer had any value, so you disappeared without a word, leaving behind a girl painfully waiting.”

“Unfortunately, this dumb girl still thought that the man named Chu Yuntian would eventually return!” The princess couldn’t laugh sarcastically any longer at this point. Her expression was full

of unspoken love and hatred.

“There’s nothing I can do if you think so.” Li Qiye said: “When I left back then, it really was because I couldn’t find it. I understood that it was not hidden in your dynasty. Also, it was no longer safe to stay in the dynasty because Tian Tu had started to sharpen his blades against your dynasty.”

“Yes, our great teacher of Immortal Emperors has always been correct. No matter the occasion, he would always have very good reasons.” The princess mocked sarcastically.

Li Qiye shook his head: “I can only say that you don’t know me at all. If I really wanted to disappear, you would never have been able to find me, just like Chu Yuntian. I have always been concerned about your safety. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have let someone risk their life to send that message to you so that you would leave the Middle Continent Kingdom!”

The princess’ cold eyes lit up after hearing this. She was especially beautiful as she murmured: “That’s right, I received a message... to meet at the Plum Blossom Dock!” However, having said that, her expression turned cold again as she glared at him: “But Chu Yuntian never appeared at the dock! Haha, it was just another trick; only a woman named Bu Lianxiang would be dumb enough to believe it!”

“I have no defense against not going.” Li Qiye said: “Yes, I was at the Celestial Spirit World at that time. I sent a confidant to message you to meet at Plum Blossom in order to get you far away from the dynasty. The drums of war had sounded by then, a

supreme battle was slowly coming. Later on, even if Tian Tu didn't destroy your dynasty, I would have led an army to do so myself."

The princess sneered: "Right, you are the savior, the saint of the nine worlds, saving all of—"

"That's not important." Li Qiye shook his head: "Regardless of how you see me, my bottom line will never change. I will make the Ancient Ming disappear from the nine worlds and destroy anyone who works together with them. Nothing will be able to bar my path. If you think that I would not destroy the dynasty because of you, then you are completely mistaken. I will not make compromises when it comes to my bottom line!" Li Qiye freely said while looking at the princess: "You can view me as a liar, a mass-murderer, or even a savior. You can mock me with disdain, it is all fine. I just want you to know that I can't change my creed for you!"

The princess didn't say anything in response and only sat there with a cold demeanor.

"I didn't care about them, the dynasty or the Ancient Ming!" She became absent-minded and murmured with her head down: "I didn't care to find out about the war!"

With that, she looked up at Li Qiye with a chilling smile: "But you still lied to me in the end, hahaha... There was a message that Chu Yuntian was dead... It was only a message. I didn't see his corpse or any of his belongings. I never even saw his shadow, yet I was so foolish as to search for him for the rest of my life. I wanted to find out where he died, where he was buried, who killed him. I even wanted to avenge him..."

With that, her eyes became wet, but she maintained her strong tone: “Only a foolish girl would believe in someone who doesn’t exist. Because of this scam, she entered the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground to become an Earth Immortal! She simply wished for the day that she could find Chu Yuntian’s remains!” A teardrop finally dripped down from the corner of her eyes.

“Yes, it was just a plan.” Li Qiye helplessly said: “Back then, in order to find Chu Yuntian, you chased my generals all over the world! In order to end this needless search, I had to make Chu Yuntian disappear. However, I didn’t expect that you would still want to find where he was buried!”

“Chu Yuntian, no, Dark Crow, or should I call you Li Qiye now... You have always been a liar!” The princess sneered: “If you weren’t one, you should have just told me the truth!”

Li Qiye stayed quiet for a long time before looking at her and nodded his head: “Yes, I am a liar. All of the fault lies with me, so I came to resolve this today.”

“Haha, what now? Even the great teacher doesn’t know how to defend himself?” The princess coldly laughed.

Li Qiye stared at her in a serious manner and calmly said: “There’s no need since there is no reason to be defensive. I am here right now.”

She fiercely stared at him for a long time: “Aren’t you always

good at twisting the truth? Don't you always scheme and plan? Well, I want to hear your defense, give me an excuse right now!"

Li Qiye looked at her and paused for a bit. Eventually, he softly sighed and answered: "After your Middle Continent Kingdom was destroyed, there was no one else to keep Tian Tu in check. He wanted to capture me alive since he was aware of my secrets and wanted to take the items in my memories..."

"... So, I could only hide behind the scenes. I made my legions disappear from the nine worlds. I was biding my time to deliver a fatal blow to the Ancient Ming. Thus, I had to disappear during that period. The moment I showed myself, Tian Tu would have come killing and annihilated us." Li Qiye sighed again at this point.

In fact, this was not just a justification. At that time, the situation really was as he described. He ordered several attacks against Immortal Emperor Tian Tu, but they were all unsuccessful and his generals suffered major losses. The most regrettable part to him was that if the Middle Continent Kingdom stood by his side at the beginning of that generation, or if Immortal Emperor Tian Tu didn't exist in this world, the Ancient Ming wouldn't have been powerful enough to rule the nine worlds and flourish for many generations.

"Haha, even our unbeatable great teacher had to hide at times?" She mocked.

To which he responded: "I have not always been unbeatable. The Ancient Ming was indeed very powerful. Tian Tu himself was an incredible Immortal Emperor. In that generation, I had no way of

destroying the Ancient Ming and killing Tian Tu. I can only say that I wasn't strong enough then.”

“No matter what, as long as I can live on, I will be able to get through tough times. Perseverance will yield victory eventually.” Li Qiye slowly said.

Back when the Ancient Ming was at its most powerful state under Tian Tu, it was not an easy time for the nine worlds, the human race, and even him who would eventually become the teacher of Immortal Emperors. The enemy was simply too strong!

The princess thought quietly about that time. She was someone who had lived through that era and knew of its darkness, that it wasn't an easy period.

“It must have been very hard.” Just thinking about the nine worlds under the Ancient Ming's rule and the incomparable Immortal Emperor Tian Tu, the princess suddenly became absent-minded and actually blurted out such gentle words.

Looking back over the years, Li Qiye softly sighed: “It was bearable. I let my legions hide in the most dangerous locations. There had been tougher times before Tian Tu, so we were used to it, it didn't matter too much.”

Eventually, the princess looked up and exclaimed: “Anyway, no matter what kind of excuses you have, this doesn't change the fact that you are still a liar!”

“I know that I am a liar in your mind.” Li Qiye nodded solemnly: “Since I was in the wrong, I wanted to resolve this issue.” He continued on while looking into her eyes: “I have obtained my true body in this generation and I want to fight to the very end, so I must finish my unresolved business. Why did I come to the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground to find you? Was it just for the Yin Yang Immortal Mirror? The truth is that I could have traded other people for imperial weapons at that place.”

“I looked for you specifically since I wanted you to know the truth!” He stared deeply into her eyes.

Chapter 1021: Love Or Hate

“Really?” She coldly stared at him. Judging by her expression, she didn’t seem to believe him.

“Believe me.” Li Qiye calmly said: “I have to end everything before the great war. I went to the corpse burial ground to find you to let you know about the matters of Chu Yuntian back then. I knew that you would have the drive to leave the burial ground alive after finding out the truth.”

“Hmph.” The princess scowled and coldly responded: “It sounds like everything is as you have planned.”

“But you still came to the ferry.” Li Qiye looked at her: “After finding out about Chu Yuntian, you tried your best to leave the burial ground. I want to conclude our matters in this generation, so at the underworld river, I left one boat for you. Aren’t you alive and well right now after leaving?”

She only stared at him quietly, as if she was not yet appeased by his words. Or perhaps, Li Qiye hadn’t convinced her just yet.

“Are you sure you didn’t come here for this silver river?” The princess spoke coldly while staring at him.

“If you still think so, then all I can say is sorry, you don’t get me at all. In your eyes, I am only a stranger, a contemptible liar.” He dully said: “If you think everything was just a plan of mine to obtain the silver river, then so be it. The mistake was mine back

then, I'll pay you back!" He lost interest and turned around to leave.

"Stop right there!" The princess shouted after seeing him wanting to leave. However, Li Qiye ignored her and continued on.

"Chu Yuntian! Stop, you can't forget everything that you said in those letters!" She shouted loudly: "What did you promise me! Don't tell me you have forgotten! You said that you would protect me forever, where is this promise now?!"

Li Qiye stopped and turned back to slowly look at her before speaking dismissively: "I did promise that, but it is difficult to find someone who can match you now. You don't need my protection any longer."

The princess coldly responded: "It's not over between us! Don't think that just because you picked the underworld boat for me, our matter is resolved!"

Li Qiye calmly replied after a short pause: "I know that I lied to you and made you waste your whole life. All of this started because of me..."

"You put it so lightly." The princess replied: "Do you know what I have been through? In order to find out the truth, I traveled all around the nine worlds in the shadow of the Ancient Ming and opposed them and everyone else. I only wanted an answer, the resting place of Chu Yuntian! For this, I didn't care about antagonizing anyone..."

“I know.” Li Qiye flatly said: “So, I kept my promise. Without people secretly helping you, do you think you could have gotten away unscathed from Immortal Emperor Tian Tu?”

“It was you?” The princess’ eyes narrowed while staring at Li Qiye.

“It doesn’t matter who it was. I just wanted to say that I kept my promise.” Li Qiye calmly spoke: “If you still think that this was all part of my plan to obtain this silver river, then all I can say is that I’m very disappointed.”

He looked straight at her and said: “Yes, I am a liar who tricked you. However, if you say that I created a plan that required hurting you in order to obtain this silver river, then your words truly are insulting my intelligence!”

“Hmph, you have always been a liar.” The princess scowled, but at this time, her act was much weaker than before. It was not as cold and aggressive as earlier. Without a doubt, she felt that she couldn’t posture much longer due to a lack of logic.

“Yes, I am just a liar in your mind.” Li Qiye heaved a sigh and didn’t want to say anything else.

The princess took a deep breath. She looked up and stared at him with a cold expression once more: “How did you find this place?”

“It wasn’t hard for me.” Li Qiye flatly revealed: “After your Middle Continent Kingdom was destroyed, the old elders escaped and converted to Buddhism. I knew that your ancestors already had a path of escape. Your progenitor simply didn’t bring this silver river into the dynasty and instead left it here from the beginning.” Li Qiye looked at the princess’ cold eyes straight on: “If I truly wanted this river, I wouldn’t have needed to wait till today! Back during the Ancient Ming Era, this item was indeed a very good card, but even without it, I could still destroy the Ancient Ming! And I’m always true to my words!”

This time, the princess didn’t want to meet his gaze. With her still-icy demeanor, she casted her eyes downward without saying anything.

Li Qiye eventually took out the Yin Yang Immortal Mirror and placed it on the ground: “I am excited for you being able to prolong your life and come into being. Since you have made it this far, this treasure should return to its owner.”

The princess coldly said: “You think it will end just like this, this is your repayment?”

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “No, this is only to show my sincerity. Just say the word and I’ll make it up to you.”

“What will you do to compensate?” The princess asked with an icy glare.

He turned silent for a moment. He knew very well that the

princess didn't want any treasures!

In the end, she chillingly spoke: "It's not over between us!"

He looked at her emotionless demeanor and nodded: "Very well, if you want to get even, I won't hide. I trust that you will be able to leave this place very soon. I'll be waiting at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau for you."

"Hmph." The princess only scowled. Who knows if she was feeling hatred or something else.

Eventually, he turned and walked away. He didn't get too far before he turned around and looked at her with an austere expression: "My name is Li Qiye, not Chu Yuntian. Of course, if you want to find Chu Yuntian to get even, then Chu Yuntian will still be waiting for you!" With that, he finally left.

The princess watched his departing shadow and was quiet for a long time. A while later, she beckoned and the mirror fell into her hand. She sighed at Li Qiye's departure and murmured quietly: "[Fate...](#)"

After leaving the temple, Wo Longxuan stuck to Li Qiye again as if she was his tail.

He couldn't help but leer at her: "You are still the tyrant of an entire region, why are you following behind my butt?"

At this point, Wo Longxuan was quite calm, as if she had copied Li Qiye's demeanor: "The great path is long with all kinds of people walking on different sides. Why are you saying that I am following you?"

Li Qiye looked at her with one eye and threatened: "Girl, do you think I won't throw you into a terrifying evil den that even you would never be able to come out from?"

"Do it, throw me in then." Wo Longxuan shrewdly postured with both hands on her thin waist while arching her towering fair breasts.

Li Qiye saw this and was too lazy to retort. He turned around and kept on going.

Wo Longxuan hastily gave chase and walked with him shoulder to shoulder: "What's wrong? Not having a good day? Who was that woman earlier? Your dao companion or girlfriend? You guys had a fight?"

The gossipy soul of the dragon cliff's sect master was burning right now. She was as inquisitive as a little kid, asking questions all the time.

Li Qiye ignored her and continued on while she didn't give up and followed him step by step.

"Okay, we won't talk about that, how about we change the

subject?” Wo Longxuan said: “Tell me a little bit about you. What sect are you from? How come I’ve never heard of the name Chu Yuntian before?”

Li Qiye gave her a look and said: “Girl, what do you want to know?”

She tilted her head. Her appearance was actually kind of cute, no longer resembling an untouchable genius or a high-powered tyrant of a region. She smiled: “I want to know your background.”

If it wasn’t for her face being hidden, one could definitely see her beautiful flower-like smile.

“Not telling.” Li Qiye dismissively replied and went on his way.

Her mood was particularly good. She copied his demeanor and leisurely said: “Then how about we talk about the dwellers from the deep?”

“You want to know about your mystical bloodline then.” Li Qiye looked at her again with an unfriendly demeanor.

“That’s right.” She didn’t hide it at all: “Just like you said, our cliff knows very little about the ancient bloodline, so please enlighten me.”

“That’s not out of the question.” Li Qiye relaxingly spoke: “But what can you give me?”

“What do you want?” She was not long-winded and went straight to the point.

Li Qiye looked at her and answered: “To tell the truth, your cliff doesn’t have that many items that can tempt me, despite being an ancient lineage that consisted of ancient sea dwellers. Your ancestors did bring along a few good things, but it’s a shame that almost all of them are lost. What little is left of your resources might be tradable, but I’m not necessarily interested in them.”

This is a contextual localization. The words 冤家 here is a bit strange to translate to English. “Enemy foe (in opera) sweetheart or destined love” — these are the official translations. As you can see, none of these makes sense in the context. In this usage, she is using it to say that Li Qiye is an ill-fated or star-crossed person to her. The most common usage of this word in Chinese is to describe a pair of lovers. They bicker with an unstable relationship for both internal and external reasons; however, they would always be intertwined due to fate and karma. It is also a declaration of love or feelings, especially when the princess is the one saying it, showing that he is “connected” to her. Perhaps there is a suitable word that carries the same sentiment in English and fits this situation, let me know if you have one.

Chapter 1022: Bai Jianzhen

“You...” She couldn’t help but grumpily stare at him. The Sleeping Dragon Cliff was an ancient and great sect in the Northern Grand Sea with immense resources and power. However, Li Qiye made it sound as if it wasn’t worth a single coin.

“However.” Li Qiye revealed a rare grin while looking at her to leisurely say: “If you become my bed-warmer, I can think about teaching you a little bit.”

“Less daydreaming.” She glared at him and spoke with great dissatisfaction.

Li Qiye shrugged: “This is you giving up on a godsent opportunity.” He walked faster after saying so.

Wo Longxuan had no intention of giving up. She hastily followed and asked: “Where are we going to now?”

Li Qiye didn’t answer and continued on. She didn’t mind and was right on his tail with a confident expression as if she was getting what she wanted.

Eventually, Li Qiye came before a huge temple and stopped to look at it.

There were many worshippers in front of the temple. Some were prostrating on the ground, others were converting to Buddhism,

and a few were kneeling and kowtowing nine times to pay their respects. A group inside were offering incense. The more pious ones kneeled for a very long time with the intent of seeing a high monk...

There was no lack of cultivators among them. In general, cultivators did not worship Buddhism, but things were different at the plateau. The weaker cultivators would be affected by the area and turn silly after staying here for a long time. They were affected by the Buddhist affinity in the air and would slowly give up everything to convert to Buddhism.

In this place, their best choice for conversion was the Nalanda Temple or the other eighteen temples under Nalanda, otherwise known as the four grand void tribulations.

Not to mention Nalanda, even the other eighteen temples were exceedingly difficult to enter. Even if one was a peerless genius or a powerful Godking, they would still find this endeavor challenging. Without certain accomplishments on the dao of Buddhism, the temples would not let them inside.

However, if this was an impossible affair, then there were many other choices at the plateau due to the large quantity of temples. Thus, many chose to train in the other temples before attempting to join the eighteen so that they would show some improvement.

“What are we doing?” Wo Longxuan asked after seeing Li Qiye entering this temple.

“Scripture debate.” Li Qiye laughed as his Buddhist aura filled the air. His entire body immediately changed as if he had become an accomplished high monk.

Afterward, Li Qiye traveled to many temples. He chose famous and nameless ones on the plateau. After entering, he debated with the monks in these temples. However, rather than calling it a debate, it was more of him preaching. Whenever he was listening to a Buddhist sermon or having a debate, he would often ask a difficult question that the other monks couldn’t answer.

It could be said that he convincingly defeated them with just one phrase. They candidly admitted their defeat and accepted his superiority in this aspect.

Wo Longxuan, who was following him the entire time, was quite shocked. It was not only because he only needed one word or one phrase to defeat his opponents. The scarier part was that all of his words and actions were meticulously in tune with the perfect Buddhist laws.

It was just like he said before, he was Buddha. His words were Buddha’s words! This was a very unnerving spectacle.

One word to become a law — this was beyond imagination. There had been legends of holy monks turning into Arhats and Bodhisattvas once they reached the highest level. This group was capable of preaching laws with their words as well. However, in her eyes, Li Qiye was most likely far above these Arhats and Bodhisattvas!

His actions puzzled her quite a bit. Could it be that this Chu Yuntian ahead was a real monk? Perhaps he really wanted to obtain enlightenment in the Buddhist dao.

However, her intuition was telling her that this matter was not so simple.

After Li Qiye continued on his visit to these temples, her puzzlement turned into astonishment. The whole journey was also a great trial for her because Li Qiye's Buddhist affinity was becoming more and more powerful. It had a great impact on her dao foundation.

Even though he was not purposely doing so, her close proximity left her feeling this great power of conversion despite his attempt of containing it. She had no choice but to protect her dao foundation with great caution. Otherwise, this Buddhist affinity would infiltrate her like mercury that could reach all corners and nooks!

This made her even more determined to stay by his side. In her eyes, Li Qiye was a very big test. He was a sharpening stone; his powerful Buddhist affinity could polish her dao foundation.

As a contemporary expert and a highly talented genius, Wo Longxue was able to protect her dao foundation. However, this was not necessarily the case for other people.

In recent days, Li Qiye's travels to the great temples made it so

that his Buddhist affinity was affecting many worshipers, especially the mortals and cultivators who wanted to convert to Buddhism. Under this influence, they actually became his believers and followed him wherever he went.

Even when Li Qiye didn't preach to them or pass down any dharmic teachings, they were still converted by his aura. The number of followers increased continuously.

"Buddhism... this is far too scary." Wo Longxuan was startled to see this. Even before any preaching, Li Qiye was already able to gain so many followers. This type of power could only be described as demonic.

"If this wasn't the case, how do you think the Buddhist Funeral Plateau came to be?" Li Qiye chuckled: "Buddhism has a far-reaching power. This is the difference between Buddhism and Daoism!"

Wo Longxuan pondered for a moment. Buddhism was not cultivation. However, after reaching a certain level, especially one that resembles Li Qiye's, the words of Buddhists would turn into laws. This was much more terrifying than what cultivators could do, even those at the Virtuous Paragon level.

As they went on their way, many more experts and even paragons were present. Some of them were from famous imperial lineages.

Of course, this type of crowd didn't come to worship Buddhism.

Their presence, however, made this prosperous plateau even more lively.

The arrival of these big shots caused many speculations to surface. The cultivators from the smaller sects didn't know why they were here.

"I heard a Buddhist kingdom is about to open. Some Godkings will want to go on the pilgrimage." This rumor was spread across the plateau.

A little bird told the crowd: "It is not the opening of a Buddhist kingdom, it is someone ascending, a great holy monk. As long as he ascends, the Buddhist kingdom will naturally open. For many cultivators, even untouchable Virtuous Paragons, to be able to watch an ascension with their own eyes is a great fortune. There are many other benefits entailed with watching this event as well!"

"Ascension..." Many cultivators who wanted to convert to Buddhism felt their hearts beating faster.

One of them spoke: "Rumor has it that when a holy monk is ascending, they will cast everything away. At that time, someone who obtains the teachings and legacy of the holy monk would definitely be able to attain enlightenment in Buddhism."

Many speculations spread across the plateau. The ascension made even more cultivators pour into this area because they all wanted the legacy just like in the legends.

The majority of the younger generation came to the plateau in these last several days. The most brilliant among them were the Jewel Pillar Mortal King with the moniker of War Fanatic, Deity Jikong Wudi, and Zhan Shi from the western wasteland!

The Mortal King had the greatest limelight with an unstoppable momentum at this moment. He once again defeated Wo Longxuan, making him even more famous. Some even said that he was already above Jikong Wudi or at least on the same level as him.

In fact, more and more people came to the plateau in droves besides this group. Among them were other brilliant geniuses.

Bai Jianzhen was one of them. She came without great fanfare or a domineering pomp. It was just her and the sword in her embrace. Her sword energy wasn't soaring and her demeanor wasn't cold and murderous. She changed quite a lot compared to the past.

She had returned to the origin. [Just like her name](#), she walked calmly and naturally as someone who was one with the world and myriad laws.

“Bai Jianzhen is here.” Someone exclaimed after seeing her entering the plateau. It brought about quite a stir.

“The greatest sword user in the contemporary!” Even a Virtuous Paragon from the previous generation had to concede this point.

Someone speculated after seeing her: “Why is she here? I think even the holy monk’s legacy shouldn’t be enough for her to come here from the western wasteland.”

“Maybe it is because of Zhan Shi.” A cultivator from the western region added: “Her feud with Zhan Shi is not over. She lost to him last time, so maybe she wants to challenge him again.”

“That could be true.” Another spoke: “They fought twice. Zhan Shi lost the first time and won the second. But now, her dao of the sword is invincible, so she will definitely challenge him again!”

“If that is the case, then she will probably win.” A big shot murmured: “Her dao of the sword has reached grand completion and can be described as invincible. Even the Mortal King doesn’t dare to challenge her.”

“Hmph, who says the War God doesn’t dare to challenge Bai Jianzhen?!” His words made the Mortal King’s supporters quite unhappy.

Chapter 1023: Bing Yuxia

The king currently had many followers and admirers. Some even said that his entourage was even bigger than Jikong Wudi's.

The reason was very simple — it was due to the difference between the two. Jikong Wudi was a supreme genius who came from the Space Trample Mountain. In addition to his triple saint aptitudes, he was destined for greatness. It gave him the ultimate advantage.

In the eyes of many, he was the descendant of an Immortal Emperor with a golden spoon in his mouth upon birth. He was not in the same world as ordinary cultivators.

The Mortal King was different since he came from the Jewel Pillar Sacred School. Though the school was a great power, it was far lesser than an imperial lineage. The king's talents during his younger years were much weaker than Jikong Wudi's as well.

With an ordinary background and ordinary talents, the king won some and lost some to eventually become famous across the world. Now, he was on the same level as the unmatched group of Jikong Wudi, Mei Suyao, and Heavenly Emperor Lin.

In the eyes of many people, the king came from humble beginnings and was very similar to them. Perhaps one day, through sheer effort, they would be able to reach his level and fame as well.

This was the reason why he had so much support from the community. In their minds, the Mortal King was the War God who would definitely become an Immortal Emperor in the future.

So now, when someone else claimed that he didn't dare to challenge Bai Jianzhen, this naturally made his supporters unhappy and immediately defend him.

Not everyone found the Mortal King pleasant. Moreover, Bai Jianzhen was very brilliant at this moment as the number one sword user. To top it off, she was quite pretty as well. All of this resulted in her having a lot of fans.

“Hmph, War God? That's only a self-proclaimed title. It is fine if you call him War Fanatic though.” A Bai Jianzhen fan immediately sneered: “The Mortal King might have a fine battle record, but it was built upon many defeats. If he had died in any of those battles, he wouldn't have the same accomplishments today. The only reason he is still alive is due to his backing.”

“And?” A Mortal King supporter fired back: “Bai Jianzhen might be strong, but she is still much weaker compared to the War God. Their record is two to one in favor of the War God right now. This is indicative of the War God's superiority.”

The Mortal King had fought Bai Jianzhen three times. He was the challenger for the first two bouts and had won both.

Bai Jianzhen's admirer smiled sarcastically: “Really now? Yes, Sword Goddess Bai lost twice before, but don't forget that on the

third duel, her dao of the sword reached the limit and crushed your War God until he had to muster all of his strength just to escape like a baby sucking on his mother's breasts. He was being chased so hard that he almost had to hang himself and commit suicide out of fear..."

"... If someone didn't come to save him, would your so-called War God still be alive? Hehehe, he would have become a pile of bones, a dead soul under Sword Goddess Bai's sword!"

"You!" This made the king's admirer turn ugly.

After losing twice to the Mortal King, Bai Jianzhen challenged him later on with all of her might. Under her rage, she was able to exert the limit of the sword dao. It was simply a display from a berserk god. Even the experienced Mortal King couldn't match her.

That duel was the most miserable defeat the Mortal King had suffered. He was covered in injuries after being completely defeated by Bai Jianzhen. He ran for countless miles while she chased right behind and trapped him into a corner. Eventually, someone secretly rescued the king successfully.

No one dared to underestimate Bai Jianzhen after this battle. They even called her the number one sword user!

Someone saw her carrying her sword and speculated: "I wonder if Sword Goddess Bai will challenge Zhan Shi at the plateau this time."

Zhan Shi, a peerless genius, came from the Rampaging Divine Mountain of the western Desolate Wasteland. Bai Jianzhen, on the other hand, came from the Sword God Sacred Ground in the same region as well.

As the saying goes, a mountain does not have room for two tigers. Zhan Shi had challenged Bai Jianzhen before. He lost the first time and won the second.

However, Bai Jianzhen's dao of the sword is now untouchable. Her Supreme Sword Dao was a source of dread for just about anyone. Thus, many people guessed that she would challenge Zhan Shi to wash away the shame of defeat from the past.

A big shot from the last generation stated: "Zhan Shi is going to the Four Buddhas Temple. I heard he wants to challenge the Buddhist law over there and use his dao foundation to withstand its power of conversion!"

"So strong, to dare to challenge the Buddhist law in that temple. I'm afraid even Jikong Wudi wouldn't dare to do so." Such news startled many people.

"Zhan Shi is different, he is on a different path than Jikong Wudi." Another big shot from the western region who knew about Zhan Shi spoke.

He analyzed the situation: "Zhan Shi is following the footsteps of Immortal Emperor Bu Zhan. One step, one battle; he's taking his

time with each step while building a solid dao foundation and sturdy dao heart! He is not aspiring to be strongest in the same generation but rather to be unbeatable after each battle as the last man standing. Among the current youths, Zhan Shi is perhaps the one with the lowest cultivation. However, with respect to perseverance in a bloody battle, Zhan Shi will be the ultimate victor.”

“Zhan Shi’s endurance, Bai Jianzhen’s dao of the sword, Jikong Wudi’s supreme nature, the Jewel Pillar Mortal King’s love for war, and Heavenly Emperor Lin’s astonishing talents...” A talented youth with a high status helplessly spoke: “To be in the same generation as them is truly a tragedy. This is a time where devilish talents could be found everywhere, regular geniuses are as numerous as dogs and simply not worth mentioning.”

“Don’t forget about the Icy Feather Palace Master.” A cultivator from the Hundred Cities interjected.

“Bing Yuxia is coming too?” Someone else was surprised: “She’s someone who isn’t afraid of messing with anyone.”

“Right...” The eastern cultivator arched his chin and said: “Look over there, that’s her coming.”

Having heard that, many people turned around. They saw a divine chariot slowly approaching. There was a pretty young man sitting on it. No, it was a supreme woman cross-dressing as a man!

Who else could it be besides Bing Yuxia? She was surrounded by

beauties at the moment. One in her embrace and a few more charming ones sitting next to her.

Witnessing Bing Yuxia being adored by so many beauties on her chariot left people envious and others speechless.

She had become the palace master of Icy Feather, but she was still unbridled. It was well known that she liked the fairer-sex, it wasn't a secret at all.

“Palace Master Bing, long time no see.” When Bing Yuxia arrived, a transcendently pure aura emerged as well, heralding the emergence of a cool and elegant character. He seemed to be from a different world. An air of intelligence characterized him, so he appeared to be a scholar more than a cultivator.

Someone recognized him and exclaimed: “Heavenly Emperor Lin is here too!”

The person accompanied by this pure energy was the most famous genius in the southern region referred to as the number one of the Barren Earth, Heavenly Emperor Lin!

“So you are that Lin guy.” Bing Yuxia only gave him a quick glance since her focus was still on the beauties next to her. She leisurely spoke: “You already had a good name, yet you still claim to be a Heavenly Emperor. That’s not a good omen.” Bing Yuxia’s arrogance was famous. [She acted like this no matter who she was speaking to.](#)

“Palace Master Bing is messing with me.” Heavenly Emperor Lin did not become angry. He gallantly laughed in response: “This is only a title given to me by others, a title that can’t reach the apex.”

“So? Do you want to fight? I heard the Buddhist Funeral Plateau has been very lively recently, I don’t mind adding on to the fun.” The untethered woman was full of arrogance.

“They’re about to fight?” A spectator became excited after hearing this and murmured: “The fourth fight, I wonder who will win.”

“I bet my money on the palace master.” Someone immediately placed their bet.

Another followed suit: “My money is on Lin Tiandi. He recently came to the Godwar Mountain and had a huge harvest which puts him at a great advantage.”

Prior to this, the two had fought three times. The first was a draw. The second was Bing Yuxia’s defeat while Heavenly Emperor Lin lost the third.

This meeting could be said to be between two rivals. Another battle would definitely cause the crowd to heat up with excitement.

“Geniuses are everywhere right now, my insignificant dao can’t reach the apex or enter your sight.” The heavenly emperor didn’t

become angry. He gently shook his head and said: “Among the younger generation, I’m afraid Li Qiye is the number one. There’s no need to show off my weak cultivation.”

“Li Qiye...” Everyone glanced at each other in astonishment after hearing the emperor praising Li Qiye this much.

“I know that this jerk would come back to shock the world.” Bing Yuxia smiled after hearing this all-too-familiar name. Despite dressing like a guy, her smile was still incredibly enchanting and caused many hearts to beat faster.

“Good, you still have some good insight.” She looked at the emperor to say: “That Li guy is even more powerful than your imagination.”

“To be praised like this by you, he must definitely be unfathomable.” The emperor nodded and said: “I have some business to attend to so I must set off first, see you later.” With that, he flew away with his boundless pure energy.

No matter what, Heavenly Emperor Lin’s charm was truly unmatched. He didn’t have the domineering style like other geniuses. His temperament was unique and made him appear out of the ordinary.

Author explicitly stated that Tiandi is a title with this sentence now, so it is Heavenly Emperor Lin.

Chapter 1024: Spirit Mountain

Li Qiye traveled across the plateau and entered numerous temples to debate against the high monks. Despite the countless temples located here, he couldn't find a match. No matter how great the monks were, they would be stumped the moment he spoke one or two Buddhist sentences or revealed a mudra.

His visits to the temples made him gain many followers. Wherever he went, a large group of followers consisting of both cultivators and mortals would be right behind him.

When he walked around, spectators from the distance saw this and couldn't help but point at him: "Which high monk is that? To have so many followers..."

"So young yet they have such high attainments in Buddhism. This is truly incredible, maybe he can join Nalanda." An expert commented with a tinge of emotion.

After being uncontested through all the temples, Li Qiye's Buddhist affinity was at the highest level. At this time, he didn't have any holy radiance or spouted mantras, each of his actions was affecting the rhythm of the entire plateau. Just like he said before, he was Buddha.

"We'll go to Spirit Mountain." Eventually, he told Wo Longxuan who was following right behind him.

She was still shrouded in black so no one could see her true

appearance. She couldn't help but look back at the followers and asked: "What about them? They're coming as well?"

She had been witnessing the power of Buddhism in these last couple of days. Once they were converted, they would act completely different, as if they were lost in a dream.

Just looking at the followers behind her made it apparent. They didn't know who Chu Yuntian was, but after listening to his scripture debates and dharmic preachings, they immediately joined him to become his devout worshipers.

They had different expressions; some were peaceful, some were dazed, and some were unchanged. There was one similarity despite the variety of expressions — a fanatic level of certainty!

At this time, Li Qiye placed his palms together vertically and shouted: "The dharma is boundless, repentance is salvation!"

His shout resonated like thunder. It was an awakening like a bowl of cold water being poured down on one's head or a thunderclap resounding in one's mind.

In this split second, the Buddhist seal in the minds of these followers set off many ripples that affected their soul. They were all roused and became clear-headed again. Some looked around and one even asked: "Where is this place?"

It resembled a group of drunkards turning sober; they were

completely unaware of their location. At this moment, they were at a loss.

Wo Longxuan took a deep breath and even felt a chill running down her spine. Cultivators had a name for this — possession.

Entering the Buddhist mindset at the plateau was just another kind of “possession”. Once entranced, they would be mesmerized and forget all else while indulging in a Buddhist rhythm, bringing about peace of mind and a firm conviction.

After waking up the crowd, Li Qiye only smiled and left, leaving behind the confused followers that didn’t know where to go.

Wo Longxuan calmed down and quickly caught up to him. She walked shoulder to shoulder with him and had to ask: “Was that the dharma?”

“Of course.” Li Qiye chuckled and flatly said: “The doctrine says, the dharma is boundless, repentance is salvation! Once they enter this boundless state, they would travel forever within the boundless dharma if a high monk doesn’t give them an answer.”

She exclaimed: “This is a demonic art!” She was not a closed-minded person. Prior to this, she had a very positive view regarding Buddhism — peace, kindness, equality. However, after coming to the plateau and seeing Li Qiye’s peerless dharma, she felt a bit creeped out.

Because of this, whenever he debated against the high monks, she didn't dare to linger nearby as she was afraid that she wouldn't be able to protect her dao heart and would fall into the boundless dharma like the other followers.

“One thought to become Buddha, one thought to become Devil. Don't forget, this is the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.” Li Qiye leisurely smiled: “Even if you don't believe in Buddhism, you will more or less be affected after staying in this place for a while.”

She looked at him and asked: “What about you? Are you affected?”

Of course she knew about the effect of the plateau during a long-term stay. Because of this, many would only stay here for one or two years before leaving.

In fact, a huge group had been affected by it before. Even extraordinary Godkings who stayed here for long felt the urge to convert to Buddhism.

“Me?” Li Qiye unhurriedly answered while his Buddhist affinity continued to spread: “I am Buddha. I am the one affecting the plateau, not the other way around.”

She contemplated quietly. These words were not empty and meaningless. She was a bit shaken and wondered if this Chu Yuntian had been a Buddhist believer and practiced this doctrine since a young age.

“Why is it that Buddhism in the plateau is different? Why is it so much stronger compared to other locations? High monks have a much greater influence here. Is there a secret? Is it because of Nalanda?” She unleashed a barrage of questions.

In fact, she was not the only person who had these questions. Many had thought about why the power of the Buddhist faith was greatly amplified in the plateau.

In the nine worlds, there had been many Buddhist temples. However, no place was like the Buddhist Funeral Plateau in terms of its influence.

“It’s a secret and always will be. If a secret can be easily found out by others, then it would no longer be a secret.” Li Qiye laughed and continued onward.

“Forget it then.” She snorted and went after him. In her eyes, it was not only the plateau hiding a secret, this person named Chu Yuntian was hiding something as well.

Eventually, the two reached the most important location of the plateau, the most sacred area with the name Spirit Mountain. This remained true for all the Buddhists in the nine worlds.

A mountain does not need to be high; the presence of Buddha alone makes it divine. This phrase was very appropriate when used to describe Spirit Mountain.

There were countless tall peaks at the plateau. Some even reached far into the sky with stars surrounding it. Spirit Mountain was not small, but when compared to the other great peaks, it was definitely not a match.

However, this fair-sized mountain was very famous. Millions of believers kneeled with numerous high monks chanting at its base.

Spirit Mountain, the most sacred location in the plateau where the Nalanda Temple was located!

While staring at the mountain, one would find flashing Buddhist radiances everywhere. Even those who were very far away could see them no matter the time of day. They still flashed and illuminated this world.

It was as if Spirit Mountain was upholding this area for the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. No matter the time and place, its Buddhist light was eternal and burned bright even during the darkest era.

The temples built on its adjacent hills were sacred and majestic. There were holy monks chanting above while being protected by heavenly dragons. Arhats and Bodhisattvas were performing sermons. The entire mountain seemed to be a celestial kingdom, away from the mundane world and the maddening crowd.

Anyone would have the urge to prostrate while standing at the base of this mountain. They would want to bow every three steps or to forever prostrate before its grandeur!

Because of this, there were countless followers kneeling right outside. There were mortals, cultivators, and even rulers. Even famous Virtuous Paragons could be found here!

In this place, whether one was a mortal or a paragon was no longer important. All sentient beings were equal before Buddha!

Outside of Nalanda, there were also eighteen temples referred to as the four grand Void Tribulations. They were different from the other temples at the plateau; they belonged to Nalanda. In this vast plateau, only these eighteen were recognized by Nalanda.

The four Grand Void Tribulations were the [Four Buddhas Temple](#), the Three Grand Temples, the Six Tribulation Temples, and the Eight Void Temples.

The Four Buddhas Temple had the highest status outside of Nalanda and was the most mysterious and powerful.

The Three Grand Temples were directly below the Four Buddhas Temple. They were divided into the Grand Heaven Temple, the Grand Earth Temple, and the Grand Mortal Temple. These three were almost on the same level as Nalanda and Four Buddhas.

The Six Tribulation Temples was a level below them. They consisted of the Deity Tribulation Temple, the Saint Tribulation Temple, the Sage Tribulation Temple, the Mortal Tribulation Temple...

The [Eight Void Temples](#) were next. They were made up of the Zen Void Temple, the Comprehension Void Temple, the Capability Void Temple, the Heart Void Temple...

These eighteen temples right below Nalanda were full of golden lights. Inside were Buddhist hymns and phenomena of great Buddhist existences. Before one knew it, they would find themselves in a kingdom of Buddhism.

As for the eminent Nalanda Temple, it was built at the peak of Spirit Mountain. It was also dazzling with radiance. However, its gates were closed so no one could see inside.

Four Buddhas is just one. $1 + 3 + 6 + 8 = 18$

Some of these names might not be accurate because they have multiple esoteric meanings. The author would have to go in depth so I can distinguish them in English. For example, heart/mind/thought is the same word. The translation is usually contextual.

Chapter 1025: Eighteen Temples Of Spirit Mountain

Until now, when people said that the Buddhist gates were opened at the plateau, they were not talking about Nalanda but only the eighteen temples.

Nalanda rarely opened its gates. Legend states that Nalanda would only open its gates a few times each era and sometimes not at all. There were too many tales about this temple. Some even said that top Godkings still were not eligible to enter!

On the contrary, the gates to the four Grand Void Tribulations were usually open. Of course, there were generations when they were closed as well. For example, the Difficult Dao Era was one of them!

“Nalanda Temple.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile while standing outside of Spirit Mountain, looking to the far hills.

Below the mountain was countless kneeling believers and experts watching on the sidelines with excitement. They gazed towards the temples on top of the mountain. Some even lost their patience and climbed the mountain in order to enter the Buddhist gates!

“Even though the gates of the four grand tribulations are usually open, but getting through them is easier said than done. The gates of the Eight Void Temples are hard enough already, let alone the Six Tribulation Temples and Three Grand Temples.” Someone emotionally commented.

Anyone could try climbing the mountain, but not many really wanted to because the effect up there was too fearsome. Once one's dao heart started to shake, they would quickly be drowned in a Buddhist sea.

Of course, some willingly accepted this challenge. They even went straight to the door by entering the Buddhist gate to challenge the dharma of the eighteen temples!

A cultivator said with feeling: "Zhan Shi is still so amazing. He is battling it out step by step starting from the Eight Void Temples all the way to the Four Buddhas Temple. Right now, he is inside there. I wonder if he can handle the chanting from the Arhats and Bodhisattvas in there or not..."

"His dao heart is strong for sure. Maybe no one among the younger generation can match him, not even the Jewel Pillar Mortal King's group." A Virtuous Paragon added.

"Zhan Shi is great, but Jikong Wudi is incredible as well. He went to the Grand Heaven Temple in order to sculpt. Once he is able to sculpt a Bodhisattva's position, it will be quite scary."

"Right, Jikong Wudi is scary enough now with his three saints aptitude. If he gains the enlightenment of a Bodhisattva as well, then he would be invincible among the youths. Anyone would have to walk around him!" A famous youth spoke dejectedly.

In the current generation, too many people had lost to Jikong

Wudi. Due to the sheer number of them, these losers were not worth remembering outside of people like the Mortal King.

“The [enlightened](#) fruit of a Bodhisattva.” Many people felt envious after hearing this.

The eighteen great temples here were not only in charge of the entire plateau. The cultivators that traveled for long distances from all over the nine worlds didn't do so just for Buddhism.

Outside of a small portion who were actual devout believers, the majority were here for treasures, benefits, and merit laws.

It was very easy to obtain treasures and laws in this place. As long as they could pass the tribulations from the temples, they would obtain what they wanted. Of course, different trials had different results.

There were three types of trials in the eighteen temples: scripture hark, attainment sculpting, and Buddhist debate.

Scripture hark was intuitive with its name. The high monks of the temples would preach scriptures to people. As long as they could listen in an unwavering manner, they would be able to obtain the desired treasures.

Of course, if they couldn't stabilize their dao heart and became influenced by the dharma, the most obvious result was Buddhist conversion. They would ultimately have to stay at the plateau.

Attainment sculpting was also very simple. The eighteen temples would insert a Buddhist seed into the examinee's body. If they were able to bear the seed growing and eventually turning into a Buddhist [relic](#), they would reach their goal. With this enlightenment, they would become even more powerful and gain the protection of the vast and powerful dharma in the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.

But if they fail, then the most direct consequence was also Buddhist conversion and having to stay behind at the plateau.

A Buddhist debate was a conversation about the dharma with the high monks from the eighteen temples. If the challenger won, then they would harvest from it. Losing had the same consequence as the other two trials.

In fact, after losing in any of these trials, the eighteen temples did not force people to stay behind.

However, losing signified the instability of one's dao heart. This meant that they would be drowned in the endless Buddhist sea. The only path left for them was to convert to Buddhism.

For tens of millions of years, many people came for the treasures and laws at the plateau. During all of this time, the plateau produced countless sacred monks. Furthermore, countless cultivators had joined the Buddhist faith with no lack of Godkings and True Gods or even Emperor Candidates among them. After their conversion, they would leave behind their numerous

treasures.

Meanwhile, the legendary Buddhist treasures of the eighteen temples were even more coveted by the salivating crowd.

Many came due to their interest, but the majority of them had to stay here forever. Some couldn't pass the trials while others stayed here for too long and became affected by the Buddhist affinity, ultimately joining the doctrine.

Li Qiye went on his way with a carefree smile as he looked at Spirit Mountain. He went forward step by step with Wo Longxuan right behind him.

At this point, there were many cultivators and mortals on the mountain. If it wasn't for their own greed, they wouldn't want to go up Spirit Mountain due to its powerful Buddhist influence.

Anyone who stepped onto this mountain would hear Buddhist hymns in their mind, as if there was a supreme Buddhist Lord preaching to them, granting them their protection and blessings...

It was a feeling of basking in a Buddhist baptism, a satisfying and peaceful sensation, as if there was nothing else worth remembering in this world.

Many people with unstable dao hearts would immediately give in to this feeling and kneel down to convert to Buddhism!

It was needless to talk about the mortals. Upon entering, they would be uncontrollably excited with tears rolling down their cheeks. In their eyes, they had finally found the Buddhist kingdom!

The gates to the eighteen temples were always open regardless of day or night. Only Nalanda was closed. However, being able to enter or not depended on one's creations and fortunes. The Buddhist Lord once stated that all living beings were equal. This was also the case when one was before these gates. However, whether this equality truly existed or not was something only the Buddhist Lord knew.

There were two methods of entrance, both were quite difficult. The first required one to have a strong enough dao heart. The second required one to have a high enough Buddhist affinity.

As long as they had one of these two, they would be able to enter. Otherwise, no matter how powerful or talented they may be, the Buddhist gate was not meant for them.

The smiling Li Qiye aimed for the Zen Void Temple with Wo Longxuan as his companion.

One could pick any of the three tests if they were able to enter the gates. The same was true for any of the temples as long as they have the ability.

Of course, one could also challenge all eighteen, but this was very unlikely since few were up to the task.

Outside of the Zen Void Temple was a vast Buddhist gate. A Buddhist light soared to the sky and instilled a sense of awe and reverence, causing people to prostrate on the ground.

Li Qiye chuckled and didn't linger at all. He took one step at a time to enter the Buddhist gate. At the moment of his entry, an endless Buddhist light rose. Countless phenomena rushed to the sky. There were images of brothers kneeling and sacred monks bowing as well as Arhats and Bodhisattvas...

This scene frightened everyone regardless of whether they were on the mountain or at the base. All had to take deep breaths to compose themselves.

The crowd was aghast and someone murmured: "Is this an Arhat or Bodhisattva coming to our world? Or is it the Buddhist Lord himself?"

As for the worshippers prostrating below, they kowtowed even more and shouted: "Buddha is here!"

Wo Longxuan followed right behind him. The moment she stepped into the gate, a dragon began to roar continuously with water vapor filling the sky. She also easily entered.

"Who are those two?" The spectators outside the mountain were astonished. Wo Longxuan was one thing, but Li Qiye's visual phenomena were simply too shocking.

“Maybe they aren’t cultivators. Perhaps it is a sacred monk of the order, still practicing with his hair long.” A person murmured as they watched Li Qiye disappearing into the Buddhist light and infinite aura.

Someone curiously asked: “Since when did the Mortal Emperor World have such an unfathomable sacred monk?”

Someone from the previous generation gently shook his head in response: “Cultivators like us worry about realms and levels, who would pay attention to people in the Buddhist faith? Outside of the plateau itself, there are not many Buddhists around. It isn’t strange that none of us knows who he is.”

People found that this elder made sense. In fact, daoists only cared about strength. No one would worry about the depths of one’s dharmic comprehension.

In the minds of many cultivators, Buddhist laws were useless. At best, they were only able to influence and convert people.

Normally, enlightenment is the meaning here for the English translation. But sometimes, this term is actually visualized in the shape of a fruit in some novels. This is to play it safe and keep it closer to the raw.

The relics here are sarira. After cremation, monks will sift for sarira through the dusty ashes of venerated saints and teachers. In Korea, unburnt bits of bone are set aside to be ground up, mixed with meat, and then left for animals. The sarira themselves stand out as little chunks of crystal or colored stone. In most novels,

these relics are in the form of Buddhist beads.

Chapter 1026: Zen Void Temple

After passing the Buddhist gate, Li Qiye saw green bricks and white tiles on both sides of the temple. It was full of swaying trees with leaves gently fluttering down. This place was peaceful and quiet, separated from the chaotic mundane realm.

A quiet rustling sound came about with a certain rhythm to it. Wo Longxuan noticed that there was a monk taking his time to sweep away the fallen leaves.

This monk was around twenty years old and had a handsome face. It was apparent that before becoming a monk, he was definitely a lady killer.

“Hai Kuotian—” She was surprised to see this man and murmured: “He, he actually became a Buddhist.”

Of course she recognized this man in front of her. He was once a brilliant genius of the northern sea from the same generation as her. He was definitely incredible, but he disappeared later on.

“This is only training. He has yet to cross over completely. The eighteen temples’ requirement for crossing over is very high. He needs many years of training before he can succeed. Only then would he be considered a real monk, a disciple of Nalanda.” Li Qiye explained.

Wo Longxuan watched the man sweep away the leaves with great shock. She wanted to call out to him because the two of them had

met several times before. They could even be considered friends.

The man lifted his head and saw Wo Longxuan and Li Qiye. He only greeted them with a Buddhist gesture before continuing his duty.

After seeing his expression, she knew that he still recognized her. However, he had severed all mundane ties, so even if they were friends in the past, they were only strangers now.

The two continued on. She finally noticed monks meditating on the left and right sides of the pagodas. These meditating monks were completely different from Hai Kuotian. They emitted Buddhist lights while hymns emanating from their bodies. It seemed that their flesh had become that of Buddha. Those with weaker dao hearts would instantly prostrate on the ground before their presence.

“They are different.” She commented after seeing them.

“They could be called high monks with powerful dharma. However, this level of dharma is still only the beginning, it can’t reach the apex.”

“Why do you say that?” She asked curiously.

Li Qiye chuckled and answered: “Look carefully, you will find something interesting about them. It’s just that your intuition is telling you differently, just look again.”

She took a closer look and was astounded. She had to take a step back from disbelief while looking back at Li Qiye to ask: “They, they... are they dead or alive?”

He smiled: “This depends on your definition of what is dead and what is alive.”

The shocked Wo Longxuan exclaimed: “Their blood energy has already withered. With their depleted lifespan and life force, how can they still be living?”

These meditating monks were brimming with a Buddhist radiance and sacred air. However, they had no blood energy, no life.

Even though some ancestors had dried-up blood energies and depleted lifespans, there was still some life force inside them. At the very least, they could still struggle to live for a while longer.

However, these monks had absolutely no life force. In other words, they were dead! Their appearance with their bright holy lights belied their true state.

“How can one become a Buddha without giving up on their bag of skin?” Li Qiye said dismissively.

“Then all the monks under Nalanda are moving corpses? They are all existences without life?” She shuddered at this thought.

Although she knew quite a bit about Spirit Mountain, knowing and seeing were two different things.

Li Qiye leisurely said: “Why do people come to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau and Spirit Mountain? Mortals look for a home, but why do cultivators convert themselves as well? Especially those invincible Godkings, they give up everything to join this Spirit Mountain, even starting as a nameless monk. All of this for what?”

“Eternal life, right?” She murmured. She had heard people discuss this topic before.

“Yes, eternal life.” Li Qiye flatly said: “Giving up the physical body to enter the Buddhist faith — this is eternal life. From the very start, the majority of both Godkings and Emperor Candidates would come for eternal life and train in this Buddhist area. Eventually, they were converted and let go of their mundane ways and their fleshly bodies to become real high monks and achieve everlastingness.”

“Eternal life exists in this world?” She spoke with great uncertainty.

Eternal life was a profound and heavy subject. For millions of years, many peerless existences had researched this topic, but no one had heard of a successful attempt.

“This depends on what you want out of eternal life. If, say, you want to keep your blood and flesh, love and emotions, to walk in this world like the rest... this type of eternal life might not be

possible.” Li Qiye looked at the horizon and spoke: “At the very least, not right now.”

She looked at the monks sitting next to the pagoda and slowly asked: “Then are the high monks in Spirit Mountain eternal?”

“In a sense, yes.” He nodded: “There is a huge price to pay for eternal life. Letting go of the body and severing mundane ties. From then on, one will drown in the Buddhist sea, no grievances, no hatred, no love... There is nothing except the dharma.”

Having said that, he looked at her and added: “Moreover, everything will turn into smoke the moment they leave the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. Only by staying at this place would they stay eternal.”

“Turning into another person... in other words, this is becoming a puppet.” She couldn’t help but comment. These words sounded disrespectful, but they were the truth.

“These are the enlightened high monks.” Li Qiye smiled and didn’t deny her statement: “All along, eternal life has come at a hefty price. When one’s lifespan is used up, the rest of the world will no longer matter to them. So what if they have to let everything go? They can continue to live. After all, death claims it all anyways.”

Wo Longxuan contemplated for a moment. Even a Godking at the end of his lifespan would have to face the horror of death. He would die and his dao would vanish.

Just like Li Qiye said, everything became nothing upon death. Thus, before that very last moment, why not give everything that was already gone so that one could live on?

At this time, Li Qiye walked outside of the [Hall of Great Strength](#). A high monk shrouded in Buddhist light came out to greet him. His robes seemed to be gilded, making him seem to be transcending into a Buddha. At this level, the physical flesh was no longer worth mentioning.

“May I ask where you are from, Sacred Monk?” The high monk quickly placed his palms together after seeing Li Qiye. His Buddhist chant came afterward with a resonating rhythm, giving others the sensation that Buddha was inside everyone.

“[Where I am is where Buddha resides, regardless of time and space.](#)” Li Qiye smiled faintly and said: “I am here to debate the ‘Minor-trinal Surangama Sutra’ with Kong Hui.”

The high monk placed his palms together and asked: “What is your desire?” The monk knew that Sacred Monk Kong Hui was the person who understood the Minor-trinal Surangama Sutra the best in their temple. He was unmatched in this regard.

“Buddha teaches, [myriad laws are void while all living things exist.](#)” Li Qiye smiled and answered: “My desire is my ‘will’, there is no need for more.”

“Amitabha, amitabha, you have reached the true meaning of the

dharma, please come in.” The monk bowed again and led Li Qiye into the Hall of Great Strength.

Wo Longxuan didn't go in because she knew Li Qiye's power from his debates. Right now, when he was about to go against the sacred monk of the Zen Void Temple, his power might be even more terrifying. Thus, she didn't want to listen due to its great effect on her.

However, she was quite puzzled. Everyone knew that people came to partake in the three trials on Spirit Mountain because they had desires. Otherwise, who would want to come and risk being converted?

However, Chu Yuntian had no desire and only wanted to debate against Kong Hui. Did this mean that this Chu Yuntian was truly obsessed with Buddhism?

After Li Qiye entered the Zen Void Temple, many people watched them from outside. They wanted to see just how strong this nameless person's dharma was.

“Dum—dum—dum...” At this time, the bell in the temple rang.

“Scripture debate.” After hearing the bell, everyone knew what Li Qiye wanted to do after entering. Someone murmured: “To begin so high, he must truly be a high monk. Debating against the sacred monks in the Zen Void Temple — just what kind of powerful resolution is needed for this?”

Even though the eighteen temples welcomed everyone in the world to come and debate with the victor obtaining what they wanted, very few people were willing to do so in the last millions of years. This was because it was the same as teaching a fish to swim. Which cultivator could out-debate the sacred monks in these temples?

“Om—” A buzzing sound came right after the bells. A Buddhist light covered the sky afterward. From the light emerged three giant Buddhas accompanied by Buddhist recitals as if they wanted to save all living beings.

After hearing the faint chants, many cultivators on the mountain shuddered. They knew a mighty sacred monk had taken action, so they quickly exited the mountain.

For the followers below, they hastily prostrated and bowed their heads while accepting the baptism of the chants.

No one could see the debate within the temple. Even those who could get inside wouldn't risk the danger. The debate between two sacred monks would easily subdue and convert them into their followers.

Hall of Great Strength is the main hall of a Buddhist temple containing the main image of veneration.

This is a shortened esoteric phrase that comes from the Diamond Sutra. The latter part means the following: in order to go from one point to another, one would need to travel across space after a period of time. However, Buddha has understood the meaning of the universe; the void is everything and nothing is the void — he is everywhere. From the perspective of myriad existences, both time

and space are just concepts and do not actually exist. Thus, time and space don't matter if he is Buddha. Noted, this is my own interpretation of the text. I am not versed in Buddhism.

This is another esoteric term made up of two words. The first letter is: position of existence, everywhere, location, home. The second is: determination, will, temperament. Together, they mean existence of the mind.

Chapter 1027: Buddhist Debate

“The sacred monks are starting.” Even though no one could see the actual debate, they immediately understood what was going on after seeing the three giant Buddhas appear above the Zen Void Temple.

“Minor-trinal Surangama Sutra.” An expert versed in the dharma looked at the three Buddhas above the temple and instantly knew which scripture they were debating. He murmured: “Rumor has it that the monk most-versed on this sutra at the Zen Void Temple is Sacred Monk Kong Hui. Some even say that he is only one step away from ascending. If he can ascend to the Buddhist kingdom, then he can obtain true eternal life!”

“I know Sacred Monk Kong Hui.” An old sect master with gray hair gently sighed: “He is the tenth generation sect master of our sect, not to mention being an invincible Emperor Candidate during his youth. Later on, he joined Spirit Mountain and became the abbot of the Zen Void Temple.”

The crowd was astonished to hear this. An Emperor Candidate was able to compete for the Heaven’s Will, yet he still joined the mountain to ultimately become a monk.

However, while the crowd was still jolted, the three Buddhas suddenly lost their radiance and disappeared along with their chants.

The knowledgeable expert exclaimed in horror: “Sacred Monk

Kong Hui has been defeated.”

Many were amazed. Someone who had witnessed a debate before stated: “Isn’t this, isn’t this way too fast? I was at a Buddhist city and witnessed two high monks debating. They took a full eight days and eight nights.”

“It was not a match of the same level.” The knowledgeable expert gently sighed: “This unknown monk with hair is too strong. His dharma understanding is unfathomable and defeated Kong Hui with just a few Buddhist mantras.”

Sure enough, Li Qiye and Wo Longxuan left the Zen Void Temple a bit later with a high monk seeing them off.

“So fast, it was basically over in just the blink of an eye. I wonder what treasure he obtained from the temple...” Someone murmured after seeing the two leaving.

After exiting the Zen Void Temple, Li Qiye went to the Divine Void Temple, one of the eight, and easily passed the Buddhist gate.

Someone curiously wondered: “Don’t tell me he wants to challenge all eighteen temples on Spirit Mountain?”

Li Qiye’s debate went without any surprise at the Divine Void Temple. He easily defeated the sacred monk there, so he went to the Heart Void Temple next...

Afterward, he challenged all the remaining temples of the Eight Void Temples. This scene left everyone outside of Spirit Mountain dumbfounded.

“This... this is too heaven-defying. Where did this sacred monk come from? He still has his hair during his training.” Many turned silly at Li Qiye’s strong display throughout the Eight Void Temples.

“He is going to the Six Tribulation Temples now.” A spectator spoke after seeing Li Qiye walking away from the Eight Void Temples.

“He is actually going to challenge all eighteen...” A sect master who understood Buddhism murmured: “He can’t just be a sacred monk. This might be someone at the level of an Arhat or Bodhisattva.”

An ancient being muttered: “If he could go through all eighteen temples, then his dharma must be boundless. He can directly ascend to the Buddhist kingdom for eternal life.”

Eternal life was very tempting to any expert on the verge of death. Nothing was more important than continuing to live.

Someone else was full of envy: “He took on the void temples and now the tribulation temples, does he want to take all the treasures on Spirit Mountain?” Having said that, he began to salivate.

Everyone knew about the huge amount of treasures and merit

laws in these temples and even the coveted Buddhist relics. Li Qiye had defeated the void temples in one breath, this meant that he had at least received eight extremely heaven-defying treasures.

But little did they know that he simply didn't want any of these treasures. He didn't come to debate for the treasures. This was only the beginning, a warm-up session during his trip at Spirit Mountain.

Countless eyes were on the mountain during his debates. Outside of seeing if Li Qiye could challenge the other temples, they also wanted to watch what the others could do.

“Jikong Wudi came out.” A keen-eyed spectator shouted while Li Qiye was inside the tribulation temples.

Many people turned to look. Sure enough, Jikong Wudi came out of the Grand Heaven Temple in an easy and comfortable manner.

Prior to this, Jikong Wudi already had incredible visual phenomena accompanying him, with myriad laws and control over the rhythm of the universe.

However, after coming out from the Grand Heaven Temple, he was even more extraordinary. His temperament was calm while he stood, looking down on the world with disdain. Nothing could enter his sight; it was as if he had countless Bodhisattvas protecting him and the blessing of the supreme dharma. Even the judgment of the high heavens wouldn't be able to harm him.

“He has successfully sculpted an attainment and obtained a Bodhisattva’s enlightenment fruit!” A discerning paragon murmured.

Many people felt a chill and muttered as well: “[Jikong Wudi](#), is he really going to be invincible? Three saints aptitude — this is enough to make him invincible. I’m afraid we won’t be able to find anyone who can truly defeat him anymore. Now that he has the enlightened fruit as well, it will increase his power to another level.”

“Only a Buddhist Lord’s enlightened fruit is better than a Bodhisattva’s fruit, but how many people across all the eons actually managed to get one?” A young genius became dejected: “Jikong Wudi’s three saints aptitude was already strong enough, but now he has that fruit too. How can other people handle this? With this, both the Jewel Pillar Mortal King and the others would find defeating Jikong Wudi even more difficult than reaching the heavens!”

“The truth is that not many people can get the Bodhisattva’s fruit either.” A big shot from the previous generation shook his head: “I’m afraid from now on, even the Mortal King won’t be able to defeat Jikong Wudi.”

Someone immediately shushed: “Shh, Jewel Pillar is coming.”

The Mortal King landed right outside of Spirit Mountain at this moment. He stood with both hands posed behind his back like a giant. His Hell Suppressing Physique had reached half completion, so he gave others the sense of having immeasurable weight. No

enemies would be able to move him.

He watched Jikong Wudi leave the Grand Heaven Temple with a serious and profound gaze. Who knew what he was thinking?

At his current level, he was a threat to the rest of the world. He stood outside of the mountain and not too many dared to come closer. The younger generation stared at him in awe.

“Buzz—” Next, several visions emerged. Each of them was earth-shattering as if countless Buddhas were descending.

In a short period of time, Li Qiye actually finished challenging the tribulation temples. Starting with the Divine Tribulation Temple and ending at the Mortal Tribulation Temple, the whole process only took two hours.

People were at a loss for words when they saw these phenomena appearing one after another. The lights in the six temples dimmed after each time.

Even Jikong Wudi and the Mortal King turned somber upon seeing this astonishing spectacle.

“This is no Arhat or Bodhisattva, it has to be a Buddhist Lord. Who else could defeat the tribulation temples in such a short time? Buddhist debates are the most profound dharmic art.” A sect master murmured.

“It’s okay.” A young expert patted his chest and felt lucky: “At least he is a sacred monk and trains in the dharma. Otherwise, if he cultivated, he would be able to sweep through all of us!”

People became filled with curiosity about the monk’s identity. A Buddhist practitioner keeping his hair. Just who was this man that was able to sweep through all of these temples?

“He wants to go to the three Grand Temples now.” Someone murmured as Li Qiye approached the Grand Earth Temple.

“If he can actually defeat all eighteen, then it will definitely be a miracle.” Some were eagerly waiting for this miracle to appear.

“Amitabha...” After Li Qiye entered this temple, a Buddhist chant came out from the Four Buddhas Temple. A radiant sacred monk personally flew to the sky in order to escort a young man out.

This young man walked with a special pace, each step was perfectly measured. His steps were firm and decisive. It felt as though even if the sky were to fall down, it wouldn’t hinder his path.

“Zhan Shi...” Someone exclaimed after seeing the youth: “Zhan Shi did it. He was actually able to withstand the Buddhist law inside the Four Buddhas Temple, he was able to endure the chants of the sacred monks!”

“So heaven-defying, a successful scripture hark. Just by this feat,

he has definitely proven himself to be a future Immortal Emperor candidate.” The older generation praised him as well.

The Four Buddhas Temple was the leader of the eighteen temples. The sacred monks there were all incredible, though no one knew just how strong they were. Legend states that anyone who heard even a single word from these sacred monks would instantly burst into tears and kowtow on the ground to join the Buddhist faith!

“Zhan Shi actually listened to a whole scripture. Just how strong is his dao heart?” Anyone would feel a chill after hearing this. They were amazed by his fortified dao heart.

Both Jikong Wudi and the Mortal King were serious when they saw Zhan Shi walking out.

For them right now, talents were not as important, the dao heart was the crucial aspect. Both had the qualifications to compete for the Heaven’s Will, but the person to have the last laugh would not necessarily be the one with the highest talent. This had been the case for tens of millions of years. The Immortal Emperor was not always the most brilliant one, but they surely had the most persistent dao heart in that generation!

Wudi = invincible, unmatched.

Chapter 1028: South Emperor

Li Qiye went against the Three Grand Temples, causing strange visual phenomena to emerge. In just a moment, the mountain was filled with Buddhist lights and blooming golden lotuses. Golden Springs gushed out from the ground as well.

Buddhist hymns majestically echoed across the region as if a Buddhist Lord was about to come into being.

The temple fought hard against his challenge. A torrent of endless runes rushed out from above the temple. A single glance was enough for people to immediately know that an extraordinary Arhat or Bodhisattva had appeared.

Each of the temples here had their own great characters chanting and debating against him. A Buddhist world opened on this side of the land, causing the entire mountain to become quite holy.

“Amitabha...” More chants echoed as if countless Arhats were singing together. They wanted to use the supreme mantras to defeat Li Qiye.

As the chanting continued, a magnificent Buddhist rune emerged in the sky as if a Buddhist Lord himself was coming out to fight. He spewed out mantras and endless laws.

These supreme phenomenon would leave anyone speechless no matter how powerful they were. The image attracted many experts in the plateau. Amazing geniuses like Lin Tiandi all came to watch.

The worshipers outside were filled with reverence from seeing these images. They started prostrating and wouldn't get up. Some were in tears and shouted: "Merciful Buddha!"

In just a short time, the crowd was shocked to see Li Qiye challenging the Three Grand Temples. He defeated the Grand Earth Temple in a short time, so even geniuses like Jikong Wudi, Zhan Shi, and Lin Tiandi became serious.

Someone murmured: "I think only Immortal Emperors would dare to challenge the eighteen temples like this."

A particular expert who had been staying at the plateau for a long time spoke: "Judging by this phenomenon, it seems like the Grand Earth Temple sent out a Bodhisattva to debate against him. This is too amazing. In some legends, a Bodhisattva from this temple converted a God-Monarch with just one phrase. But now, the challenger defeated them in a debate, how heaven-defying is this?"

"A Bodhisattva from the Grand Earth Temple..." When this level of existence was brought up, even God-Monarchs felt dreadful: "This kind of dharmic existence... it is best to stay far away from them if you don't want to join Buddhism. After all, he only needs one mantra to convert you, to make you kneel on the ground and worship Buddha!"

"Is this the birth of a new Buddhist Lord?" Even the monks on the plateau came to watch because this phenomenon was too frightening.

“Amitabha.” A monk placed his palms together and spoke: “To be able to debate at this level, this must be a sacred monk, or maybe even a Bodhisattva. Since he can defeat the Four Buddhas Temple’s Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva, he can obtain enlightenment and ascend, enter Nalanda and then the Buddhist kingdom.”

“The Buddhist kingdom is the real immortality of legend.” Someone enviously spoke.

Everyone in the plateau ran over. The newly arriving monks started chanting as well. They were all in awe of the phenomenon.

Right now, no cultivators dared to step foot on Spirit Mountain due to the great Buddhist aura surging about. Even those with strong dao hearts could be converted to Buddhism!

“Extraordinary.” While people were looking at the phenomenon, a youth appeared out of nowhere. His arrival immediately attracted a lot of attention.

His appearance came with an abundant ancient aura, as if he had lived for countless years. He did as he pleased with a free style. No matter where he stood, people would think that he was standing tall among the heavens. His aura also gave the feeling that he was insurmountable. No matter how strong and heaven-defying one might be, they would feel unable to surpass this young man.

Zhan Shi, Jikong Wudi, and Lin Tiandi, all of their expressions changed the moment they spotted this youth.

It didn't matter if they recognized him or not. As supreme geniuses, they immediately knew that they had met a terrifying opponent. An existence comparable to a true dragon — matchless in all the eons!

“Let me come take a look at the era-famous Spirit Mountain.” He laughed after seeing the supreme image on the mountain. With just one step, he instantly stood before the Four Buddhas Temple.

“Is he taking the Four Buddhas Temple on?” Many people rolled their eyes after seeing this.

This temple was the leader of the eighteen and directly below Nalanda. Even the most supreme of geniuses wouldn't dare to challenge it so carelessly.

Jikong Wudi was invincible enough. He attained an enlightened fruit, yet he still didn't dare to challenge the Four Buddhas Temple! Zhan Shi had a powerful dao heart. He challenged it, but only in a scripture hark and not in attainment or debates because he was not confident at all in these two.

The young man smiled and declared outside of the temple: “Monks of the temple, listen up. Today, I, South Emperor, have arrived to try your Grand Diamond Formation. Let your eighteen Vajras come out now.”

Everyone could hear his soft-spoken words clearly for they carried the weight of gold.

“Challenging the Four Buddhas Temple with force?” The crowd glanced at each other. Some even turned silly after hearing this.

In fact, outside of the three trials, there was another one. It was something that people never used, a challenge via combat against the eighteen temples. No one wanted to use this method because it was well-known that the sacred monks in the temples were ridiculously strong.

Although Buddhism did not promote violence, the majority of these sacred monks were terrifying beyond imagination before their conversion. Some sacred monks used to be Godkings and others were Emperor Candidates. There was a legend that some sacred monks were actually True Gods before they converted...

Who would dare to challenge these powerful existences in force? These Godkings and Emperor Candidates had only become even more unfathomable after turning into Arhats and Bodhisattvas.

But now, this youth was not only challenging the temple, he was specifically aiming for the eighteen Grand Vajras. This made many people's hearts skip a beat.

“Four Buddhas Temple's eighteen Grand Vajras!” An ancestor who had been a devout worshipper of the plateau for a long time murmured: “These vajras are combat warriors. An arrogant Godking considered himself to be invincible and went inside the temple alone to fight against the eighteen vajras. In the end, he was captured alive.”

“South Emperor...” A lot of people hadn’t heard of this name, but they quivered inside. A person daring to proclaim himself an emperor. Outside of the foolish ignorant ones, those who dared to do so were definitely frightening.

This youth was definitely not an ignorant person, so he must belong to the latter.

“Amitabha, benefactor, please come inside.” The Four Buddhas Temple was not afraid of this challenge. With a Buddhist chant, the entire temple lit up with a golden radiance with images of vajras inside.

“Good.” The youth was very straightforward. He smiled and passed through the Buddhist gate.

The entire mountain shook after the youth made his entrance into the temple. Buddhist chants echoed across the entire plateau. A boundless Buddhist power pressed down on the entire sky. Under this endless energy, the plateau resembled a leaf in the middle of a torrential ocean. This power could crush the entire plateau at any time.

The people here were terrified. Many characters kneeled on the ground and didn’t dare to get up. Even ancestor-level characters felt their knees give in and couldn’t stand straight anymore.

Prior to this, the Buddhist aura at the plateau was very gentle and peaceful. No one had imagined the scene of Buddhists becoming

angry. But now, with this suppressive power, they finally understood that Buddhism was not just peaceful. Once enraged, this power was no weaker than an imperial aura!

Someone murmured while aghast: “Vajras are emerging to subdue the demon, the Buddhist Lord has become angry!”

“How fun...” The battling youth continued to laugh inside the temple that no one could peer into.

“Amitabha...” A thunderous chant resounded. A Buddhist kingdom opened in the sky and eight races of deities came out while the vajras defended the temple.

“Deva, Naga, Yaksha, Gandharva, Asura, Garuda, Kinnara, and Mahoraga... The eight deities...” The crowd was petrified when they saw the deities protecting the temple.

“Just how powerful is the Four Buddhas Temple?” A God-Monarch quivered after seeing this.

In just a second, only silence could be found both on and off of Spirit Mountain. Both the temple and this youth named South Emperor were powerful to the point where people had no choice but to retreat.

“Fighting the Four Buddhas Temple with force... Legend states that Immortal Emperor Min Ren did so as well in his youth.” An ancestor was lost in a daze while commenting.

“So tough, just who is this South Emperor?” Even the arrogant geniuses couldn’t stay arrogant at this time.

Jikong Wudi and the other top geniuses were quiet as well. This person called South Emperor was too powerful. Some people even speculated that he was an Emperor Candidate that was only one step away from becoming an Emperor! Anyone would shiver after hearing the title of Emperor Candidate.

Chapter 1029: Challenging The Four Buddhas Temple

“Rumble!” No one could see the battle raging on inside the Four Buddhas Temple. However, one could tell its great intensity from the shaking of Spirit Mountain. Not too many people were able to affect the mountain to this level, but the youth was capable of this task.

Although the temple was protected by the eight deities and vajras, it still shook all the same, albeit to a lesser extent.

Many people gasped at this moment. Jikong Wudi’s group was speechless and austere. Even if they were called invincible, they still didn’t dare to challenge the Four Buddhas Temple, let alone call out the eighteen famous evil-subduing vajras!

“The Grand Heaven Temple lost.” Someone shouted. While people were astonished by the South Emperor’s invincibility, they had forgotten that Li Qiye was debating inside the other temple.

They all looked back and saw the Grand Heaven Temple turn listless. All of the phenomena that emerged disappeared without a trace at this moment.

Sure enough, Li Qiye and Wo Longxuan came out of the temple before everyone’s eyes. He was still as carefree and nonchalant as always.

“Is the world turning crazy? Two invincible characters coming out on the same day. This guy just challenged the Three Grand Temples, Six Tribulation Temples, and the Eight Void Temples in one breath!” A spectator was dumbfounded.

Even the monks were terrified and had to murmur: “This is the coming of a new Buddhist Lord...”

“In less than a day, he defeated the sacred monks and even the Bodhisattvas from the holy temples. Just how great is his dharma?” Even those who didn’t truly understand Buddhism were frightened quite a bit.

“It’s fortunate that he isn’t a cultivator or we’d be done for this generation. People like Jikong Wudi and Lin Tiandi are already oppressive enough. And now, this South Emperor came out of nowhere as well, what a desperate situation to be in.” A young man stated: “At least this devil isn’t gifted in both Buddhism and daoism, or else we’d just have to hang ourselves in shame.”

Li Qiye exited the Grand Heaven Temple and looked at the eight deities as well as the vajras defending the Four Buddhas Temple: “This brat is coming out again. Sigh, he can’t defeat his own inner demon or else he would still have a chance.”

Wo Longxuan was astonished as well while she looked at the Four Buddhas Temple. She was a brilliant genius, but she wouldn’t dare to challenge the temple like this.

Right now, this South Emperor that no one knew about dared to

do so alone. Such a heaven-defying act was beyond words. She and her peers were overshadowed by this South Emperor.

“There is always a higher mountain and a better person.” She spoke with a tinge of emotion.

Li Qiye smiled and slowly headed for the Four Buddhas Temple. She followed right after him, but he gently shook his head and said: “You should go down, there’s no need to follow me.”

“Why?” She frowned before revealing a smile capable of causing hundreds of flowers to bloom. Alas, no one was able to see it.

“I will be debating against the Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva at the Four Buddhas Temple. His affinity isn’t something you can handle. Even if your dao heart is strong, the moment he finishes chanting part of a scripture, you will be converted and drowned in the endless Buddhist sea.” He said dismissively.

After hearing this, she didn’t refute and immediately left Spirit Mountain. Meanwhile, Li Qiye leisurely spoke: “It is time for the Nihility Temple to come out as well. I want to see if your Buddhist laws are boundless or if my dharma is invincible.”

“Buzz!” As he was heading for the temple, the eight deities and vajra protecting it suddenly disappeared.

The mountain turned quiet again and no longer quaked while the Four Buddhas Temple remained unchanged at the top.

Many people realized it and murmured: “It’s over...”

In just a second, all eyes turned to the Buddhist gate of Four Buddhas. They wanted to know who the victor of this supreme battle was.

Eventually, before the nervous crowd emerged a figure from the Buddhist gate of the Four Buddhas Temple. It was the young man called South Emperor. Although he appeared quite ragged at this time, he was still spirited as he slowly walked outside.

Countless people took deep breaths after seeing him still able to walk. Jikong Wudi’s group was even more astonished. Some even took a step back.

“The eighteen great vajras lost... this, this is too heaven-defying.” A monk didn’t dare to believe his own eyes after seeing that the South Emperor was still alive and well.

Jikong Wudi’s group all had ugly expressions on their faces. They knew that they had met a terrifying foe in this generation, one that would be very difficult to overcome.

Despite his sorry appearance, his overwhelming aura still suffocated and awed people.

He saw Li Qiye slowly walking by and walked to him instead of flying. In the blink of an eye, the two of them stood face to face.

Everyone outside of Spirit Mountain held their breaths in anticipation.

One was an invincible user of the grand dao while the other had a [boundless dharma](#). One was someone of this mundane world while the other was quite otherworldly. Despite coming from two different worlds, both of them were impressive all the same.

In the eyes of others, they were not too different from each other. Both were unbeatable in their own field. One was a peak cultivator while the other was a Buddhist sovereign.

Li Qiye smiled and performed a slight mudra. The South Emperor bowed his head and placed his palms together then respectfully spoke: “Sacred Teacher...”

Li Qiye nodded softly and didn’t stop. He continued on towards the Four Buddhas Temple. The South Emperor descended Spirit Mountain and quickly disappeared into the horizon.

“Such an invincible character actually performed that grand gesture towards him.” Many people were startled to see South Emperor acting so respectfully towards Li Qiye.

“Even though he trains in Buddhism, he is still incredibly accomplished. He can definitely fight against Bodhisattvas and Arhats as well as defeat the other temples.” A monk had to comment: “It is natural to be called a Sacred Teacher by invincible existences when he is so accomplished. He can accept such a title without any shame.”

The crowd felt that the monk's explanation made sense. A knowledgeable ancestor murmured: "If this young, haired practitioner can defeat the Four Buddhas Temple, then he might even become the new Buddhist Lord. Just think about it, out-debating the eighteen temples, I'm afraid this has never happened before in history!"

The crowd agreed with this ancestor. To be able to defeat the sacred monks and Bodhisattvas of the eighteen temples required a stunning attainment of the dharma. This guy could truly accept the title of Sacred Teacher, fully deserving it.

However, no one knew that the South Emperor called Li Qiye Sacred Master for a different reason, not because of his triumph over the temples.

There was another meaning to the title of Sacred Teacher. It alluded to him being the imperial teacher. Moreover, he was the most sacred among the imperial teachers.

The South Emperor respected Li Qiye as the dao teacher of Immortal Emperors while outsiders thought that it was referring to Li Qiye's boundless dharma.

Li Qiye went before the Four Buddhas Temple and gazed at it. He smiled before entering its Buddhist gate.

"Amitabha..." A monk immediately came to greet him. Behind this monk's head hung a Buddhist radiance. His entire body had

transformed into Buddha. The dazzling light made others feel that he was no longer an existence of this world, that he was only one step away from the mythical eternal life.

This monk suddenly paused after he saw Li Qiye. He was frozen for a moment and his Buddhist light was affected as well, pulsing on and off.

The monk stabilized his Buddhist heart. He bowed and placed his palms together to say: “Amitabha, My Lord has reobtained your body, congratulations.”

Li Qiye also returned the grand Buddhist gesture and bowed as well: “Blessings be with you, Zen Master Cheng. Zen Master is a foreigner now and no longer a follower of mine, there’s no need for honorifics.”

This monk ahead was once an invincible general under Li Qiye. Later on, when his lifespan was almost over, he entered the Buddhist faith at Spirit Mountain. He was converted by the Four Buddhas Temple and had severed his mundane ties.

Despite doing so, the Dark Crow was the supreme ruler of eons with a strong influence over his life. Meeting his old lord affected his Buddhist heart.

Li Qiye didn’t want to disturb the monk’s mind. He spewed out Buddhist mantras so that the monk’s light could shine brightly again. That fluctuation from earlier was not a big deal, just a pebble dropping into a flowing stream or a mirror stained by a

speck of dust. A gentle brush was enough to cleanse it.

[“Praise be the Boundless Dharma...”](#) The monk bowed his head. At this time, he had regained his piety and removed all of his ties to the past. He closed his eyes and spoke: “Thank you, Sacred Buddha, for enlightening me.”

Li Qiye gently nodded his head and accepted the monk’s gesture. In fact, for tens of millions of years, he had countless generals and wise sages under him. There were many among them who chose to join the Buddhist faith and entered Spirit Mountain in search of eternal life.

“I will be debating the Nihility Scripture with the Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva.” Li Qiye told the monk with words as powerful as the dharma.

“Please, the Bodhisattva has been waiting.” The monk quickly invited Li Qiye into the Hall of Great Strength.

Li Qiye went inside, feeling at ease. To him, this was the final battle at Spirit Mountain. After defeating this Bodhisattva, his next stop was the Nihility Temple!

This was Li Qiye’s ultimate goal in this trip to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. He aimed to use the dharma to defeat the group of monks at that temple!

Not too sure about this line. This would imply that daoism is the current model in this world which makes sense while Buddhism is a foreign dao. If I read this passage by itself, the author would be

implying that Buddhism has its own world/realm.

I'm very specific/literal on these honorifics just so that readers can distinguish the different titles too. The first part is just "Boundless Dharma", but I'm not sure if readers would get that it was a general phrase, not actually him praising Li Qiye, so I added "praise be".

Chapter 1030: Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva

After Li Qiye went inside the Four Buddhas Temple, everyone outside held their breaths and stared at it.

For countless people, this temple was the highest symbol in Spirit Mountain outside of Nalanda. It was unfathomable; some people said that there were four supreme stone Buddhas protecting it. They came from Nalanda's Buddhist kingdom!

Others also said that the Radiant Bodhisattva was infinitely close to being a Buddhist Lord. If Nalanda wanted to change its lord, then the Radiant Bodhisattva could definitely become the new lord.

“Dum—” The temple finally rang its bell. The Buddhist debate had begun!

Hearing this bell, many people's hearts slowed down by half a beat. An unbelievably tense atmosphere filled the area.

“Buzz!” It seemed as if this temple was opening the curtains of the Buddhist kingdom. A Buddhist radiance drowned the sky, completely different from the lights of the prior temples.

This light gently poured down in an incredibly bright and holy manner. Many people palpitated and wanted to drown themselves in the light.

In the blink of an eye, Jikong Wudi, Lin Tiandi, and even the ancestors were shocked.

“Back off, now!” They used their ultimate speed to quickly run away from Spirit Mountain. They chose to spectate from [tens of millions of miles away](#).

“Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva!” An ancestor was aghast. He swung his sleeve and instantly swept all of his juniors inside for safety.

Many big shots reacted in time and ran away as well, acting as if they had encountered a plague!

Time seemed to have stopped at this moment. One could hear the sound of a blossoming flower. Above the Four Buddhas Temple were radiating Buddhist rays. Inside this light was the reflection of a figure.

It was a person dressed in white and shrouded in holy light. He had eight faces with sixteen eyes, capable of watching all the realms in this world. While seated on a supreme sacred lotus, it was clear that he had grasped myriad laws and controlled the universe — his appearance was white and void of imperfection.

He had his hair tied into a bun and a peerless Buddhist body. Although it was only a reflection, the moment it appeared, it gave others the illusion that even were the universe bigger, it would still be naught but a speck of dust. Before a Bodhisattva of this level,

everything became insignificant.

This was a Bodhisattva. He didn't have a towering blood energy or an invincible divine aura. It could even be said that there was nothing on his body that connected him to the mundane world. Even his body that had completely converted to the Buddhist way didn't have the untouchable Buddhist aura that one would expect.

However, this existence that might not even know a single technique instilled fear in everyone.

“Amitabha...” A Buddhist chant resonated from the temple. Without a doubt, the debate had begun.

“Amitabha...” The entire Spirit Mountain echoed this chant. It even spread to the outside territories.

Many spectating cultivators were instantly converted after hearing this. They kneeled down and kowtowed while repeating the same Buddhist phrase. Buddhist lights emerged from their bodies.

At this moment, these cultivators had forgotten about the mundane world. In their eyes, there was only the boundless Buddhist sea. They simply wanted to drown in this warm and peaceful light. It was capable of making people forget everything!

One Buddhist chant to cross over — this was not just empty talk! The Bodhisattva's true body hadn't even come out and the crowd

had only seen its Buddhist light, but with just one word, countless cultivators had already been converted. The ones with weaker dao hearts were now lost in Buddhism with no way to return!

“Run!” Some experts started to frantically run away from the area affected by the Buddhist power.

Among them, some couldn’t persevere any longer. They flopped to the ground and started prostrating and chanting: “Praise be to merciful Buddha.”

Their bodies started to emit Buddhist lights as well. Many couldn’t escape this level of mass conversion, only the stronger ones with unyielding dao hearts were able to hastily escape Spirit Mountain and make it out of the affected area.

For this group who made it out, they were still more or less affected. Some of their dao hearts had even collapsed completely.

“Ah!” Despite managing to get away, a cultivator felt a Buddhist light surging from his body. He instantly shattered his physical body and ran away with his true fate. The Bodhisattva’s Buddhist affinity affected them too much. These escapees all fled the Buddhist Funeral Plateau in fear that they would be converted sooner or later!

The geniuses and ancestors who were the first to run were frightened by this scene. This was a different power than brute force, a frightening power that caused others to tremble.

For many people, Godkings were definitely scary because they could destroy the world and flip over the stars! However, they finally learned of a terrifying power outside of cultivation.

Without using a single technique, the shadow and words of this Radiant Bodhisattva were able to change so many cultivators, and he might not even have the most basic dao foundation. What was more horrifying than this?

“Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva!” Those who were watching from far away felt apprehensive while looking at this ethereal Buddhist figure.

“The person closest to being a Buddhist Lord! Capable of converting people with just one word.” The many monks that were still in the plateau all prostrated before the Bodhisattva.

“Radiant Bodhisattva...” Even Zhan Shi who had entered the Four Buddhas Temple for his scripture hark felt his heart skip a beat. He looked at the holy and peaceful Bodhisattva and felt fear: “If he was the one who read the scripture to me, I would have been converted after just one page.”

No one dared to mock him after hearing this. Zhan Shi came out unscathed after listening to one scripture preached by four sacred monks. His dao heart was as firm as a rock. Not too many people would claim to have more determination than him.

But now, even he admitted his powerlessness. Other people naturally felt even more dreadful inside.

“One word to convert a Godking — maybe this isn’t a fabrication. I think it might actually be true.” An expert was in a daze for a very long time and murmured: “Legend states that the Radiant Bodhisattva was born at the plateau and was protected by the Buddhist Lord since birth. He entered Spirit Mountain at eight years old, became a vajra at fourteen years old, and a Bodhisattva at sixteen. He is praised to be the Bodhisattva closest to being a Buddhist Lord!”

“Although the Bodhisattva has never cultivated a merit law before and only read Buddhist scriptures since childhood, even Immortal Emperors viewed him with respect.” An ancestor looked at the figure above the temple with awe.

After hearing this, many people were astounded. Even Immortal Emperors respected him — just how frightening was this? At such a level, it didn’t matter whether they cultivated or had any fighting power at all.

“There is a rumor that after Immortal Emperor Yin Tian carried the Heaven’s Will, he entered Spirit Mountain to listen to the Radiant Bodhisattva’s scripture sermon. After he left the mountain, he told all of his generals that none of them were allowed to meet the Bodhisattva.” A demon ancestor from the southern region explained: “The emperor said that even though the Bodhisattva didn’t know a single technique, Godkings were only specks of dust before him.”

“That... that is too heaven-defying...” A youth was shocked to hear this. For them, Godkings were invincible enough, but they

were mere specks of dust before the Bodhisattva? These words were too unnerving.

At this point, they couldn't help but stare at the temple. Many people didn't expect Li Qiye to challenge the Radiant Bodhisattva.

"He is too confident. Entering the Four Buddhas Temple and instantly challenging the Eight-faced Radiant Bodhisattva who has the greatest dharma. Just what level has that young man reached?" A person commented with emotions.

The truth was that not too many people expected Li Qiye to challenge the Bodhisattva right away. Those who knew about the Bodhisattva were aware of just how close he was to being a Buddhist Lord.

Challenging this existence was nearly the same as challenging someone infinitely close to being a Buddhist Lord.

"Can he win?" Another youth whispered. For the cultivators here, Buddhism was not their world. A dharmic battle like this was a realm outside the scope of their understanding.

"I don't know." Even the older generation and ancestors who knew about the dharma didn't know. They only shook their heads: "If we're talking about force, then it is possible to defeat the Radiant Bodhisattva. After all, he only trains in the dharma. However, to defeat him in a scripture debate... To be frank, outside of the Buddhist Lord in the Buddhist kingdom, I can't imagine someone else who can reach this step."

I've made this note a few times before, but ED's author often uses the numbering system as an adjective for a great amount. Ten million is the raw number, but who knows if he means it literally or figuratively.

Chapter 1031: Invincible Dharma

At the peak of Spirit Mountain, the Radiant Bodhisattva was illuminating the sky. Many people held their breaths while watching from the horizon. Meanwhile, worshippers were kneeling on the ground on the mountain. There was no way to return from Buddhism under the shining radiance of the Bodhisattva.

Who could know how the debate was going? Though the temple allowed anyone to spectate, no one was willing to go inside due to its great influence. Even those with powerful dao hearts like Zhan Shi would be converted, unable to defend their beliefs.

“Buzz—” One second passed by after another. With a soft sound, the light above the temple disappeared along with the Radiant Bodhisattva’s reflection.

“How did it go?” Someone couldn’t help but ask after seeing the lights disappear.

No one could answer him. Everyone watched the Buddhist gate of the temple with bated breaths. Time felt particularly slow to the nervous spectators. One second lasted a century.

Eventually, a person walked out of the gate, causing many eyes to widen. He had long hair with a leisured expression. It was Li Qiye, or rather, Chu Yuntian.

“The Radiant Bodhisattva lost.” Someone murmured after seeing

Li Qiye.

“How can that be...” The monks at the plateau were aghast and had to take several thumping steps back.

“Even the Radiant Bodhisattva couldn’t defeat this young man in the debate. This is so incredible...” The monks glanced at each other in shock.

The Radiant Bodhisattva was considered the one closest to being a Buddhist Lord. Many people were certain that he was next in line at the Buddhist kingdom. But today, he was defeated by a nameless practitioner who still had his hair. Such a scene left these monks in disbelief.

To cultivators who knew about the dharma and the monks at the plateau, defeating the Radiant Bodhisattva with merit laws and combat was one thing and perhaps understandable. After all, he had only studied the dharma since youth.

However, a scripture debate was a monk’s strong suit, especially someone like the Radiant Bodhisattva who should be peerless in this aspect. However, he lost at his own specialty — this was quite difficult to believe.

Even those who didn’t understand the significance of his defeat trembled. They felt that Li Qiye was too heaven-defying for being able to defeat the Bodhisattva in a dharmic debate.

“What kind of treasure will he get?” Many people wanted to know. Some looked over at Zhan Shi.

Zhan Shi won the scripture hark, so there were those who wanted to know what he received from the temple. The crowd knew that the Four Buddhas Temple was the top among the eighteen. A treasure from there was definitely supreme.

Li Qiye slowly walked down from the mountain. The worshipers here all prostrated with their heads touching the ground. They didn't stand up for a very long time, for they were lost in Buddhism and couldn't turn back.

The cultivators in the distance watched quietly as Li Qiye left the mountain. This meant that he didn't wish to train in this area.

A youth looked on and curiously asked: “If this person with his boundless dharma enters the world, what will happen? What if he competes for the Heaven's Will as well?”

Many quietly contemplated this issue. An older cultivator answered: “Hmm, I'm afraid there is no precedent for that.”

Competing for the Heaven's Will was the business of cultivators. If a monk that only trained in the dharma came to compete for it, what would be the result? Would the Heaven's Will recognize such a person?

It appeared to be an unanswered question. In just a moment, the

crowd looked around at each other. Although there was no answer, people like Jikong Wudi and Lin Tiandi looked quite solemn.

“Can he actually compete for the Heaven’s Will? He is a monk, not a cultivator, how can his dharma fight for it? Maybe he will be killed by another expert. The competition for the Heaven’s Will is ruthless and will only be decided when there is a single man left standing. It is not a merciful ordeal, chanting and singing Buddhist hymns won’t do.” A young cultivator spoke with disdain.

In the eyes of many youths here, someone who trained in the dharma couldn’t compete with cultivators in this aspect, especially the most brilliant cultivators.

“Not necessarily.” A Virtuous Paragon shook his head: “Don’t look down on Buddhist practitioners. If that was the case, the Buddhist Funeral Plateau wouldn’t have stood strong for so long. Through the ages, many Immortal Emperors have appeared along with imperial lineages. They kept on replacing one another across the river of time. Some were destroyed completely, but the plateau remained standing.”

The paragon’s words struck the crowd. Both young and old felt a chill. Everyone knew that the plateau, especially Spirit Mountain, had untold treasures. Countless invincible people, including Immortal Emperors, had come to this place, but the plateau still continued to exist until now. If it wasn’t strong enough, it would have been destroyed by someone already.

“If he comes into this world, would he be able to compete against geniuses like you guys?” Someone saw Li Qiye leaving the

mountain and murmured.

No one wanted to answer this question because the most promising geniuses for the Heaven's Will were all in this place — Zhan Shi, Jikong Wudi, Lin Tiandi, and the Jewel Pillar Mortal King...

“I also want to see this peerless dharma of his.” Someone spoke with a powerful tone at this time. Even though he didn't emit his frightening aura, his voice alone was quiver-inducing.

The crowd looked back and found that it was the Jewel Pillar Mortal King. His eyes were quite profound at this moment as he gazed at Li Qiye walking away.

Everyone became excited upon seeing his expression. He was known as the War God as well as the War Fanatic. They knew about his great belligerence, so it would be a great show if he were to challenge the youth with the boundless dharma.

After leaving Spirit Mountain, Li Qiye took his time walking away. His Buddhist light was hidden in his aura of normalcy. He felt quite carefree, as if he wasn't a Buddha or Li Qiye but only Chu Yuntian.

He was quite relaxed. The duel against the Radiant Bodhisattva was using a butcher's blade to kill a chicken. His goal was not the eighteen temples or Nalanda, it was the Nihilism Temple!

No matter what, he must grab that item from the Nihility Temple. However, the old monks in that temple were not so easily trifled with. Alas, in this generation, he was confident in his ability to defeat them in scripture debates.

He headed for the Buddhist City afterward. Wo Longxuan, who ran to the horizon earlier, also came to meet up with him.

However, before she could make contact, she was blocked by a group of people. They all had the same uniform with powerful blood energies. They were quite young, and it was clear that they were from the same sect.

“Robbery? This is the sacred ground of the Buddhist faith.” She was not afraid and cheerfully smiled at the group that blocked her.

An expert slowly stated: “Girl, take off your veil. We’re performing a routine check.”

She batted her eyes and leisurely said: “Routine check? For what?” Then she smiled at Li Qiye who was coming closer: “Master, there is a group of bandits here wanting to perform a routine check, should you enlighten them? Don’t you Buddhists have this saying, [relinquish your knife to become a Buddha?](#)”

Li Qiye glanced at the group and idly said: “Since when did the Nantian Clan mingle at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau? With just your clan, you think you are qualified to perform routine checks here?”

These people were disciples from the Nantian Clan. It was located very far away, yet they came all the way here to perform these checks.

“This king is the one giving permission, that’s their qualification.” An arrogant voice resounded as a young man approached with a confident stride. He wore a crown and showed an imperious expression.

Many people noticed them the moment Wo Longxuan was stopped by this group. They saw this young man, prompting one to whisper: “Isn’t that the new crown prince from the Nantian Clan?”

Back then, Nantian Young King from the clan died to Li Qiye. Later on, they selected a new crown prince.

“Their clan is reaching too far above their own abilities. They dare to perform inspections at the plateau?” Someone from the previous generation frowned. A lineage from the Grand Middle Territory running to the Barren Earth and daring to perform these checks? This couldn’t be justified.

“Ancestor, you have just come out so you aren’t aware of the current situation. The circumstances are different now.” A sect master softly spoke to his ancestor. He glanced over at the Mortal King in the horizon and continued: “In the present times, the Nantian Clan, the Jiangzuo Clan... and the Jewel Pillar Mortal King are very, very close. So close that the disciples from these clans have pledged allegiance to the Mortal King.”

Such a thing was not strange at all. The Mortal King was very famous at this moment. These clans were optimistic about him and thought that he could compete for the Heaven's Will.

The ancestor gently shook his head and said: "Just this alone is not enough for them to interfere with the Barren Earth's business."

Idiom; repent and be absolved of one's crimes.

Chapter 1032: Enlightening

“Ancestor, you still haven’t heard about it.” The sect master lowered his voice by quite a bit: “Recently, the Nantian Clan has clung onto an even thicker thigh; they made contact with the Soaring Immortal Sect.”

“Soaring Immortal Sect...” After hearing this, the ancestor felt a chill and had a shocked expression. He didn’t dare to say anything else.

On the other side, Li Qiye smiled at the new young king of the Nantian Clan: “I actually am surprised to see the Nantian Clan’s authority grow to this level.”

“I am representing the Soaring Immortal Sect, not the Nantian Clan!” The new king had a fearlessly smug expression.

“Clank!” He threw a banner down to the ground with the words “Soaring Immortal” embroidered on it. The level of calligraphy was flawless; it depicted a soaring dragon and a dancing phoenix, resulting in an oppressive atmosphere.

“I am working for the Soaring Immortal Sect. This banner is the proof!” He made a fist towards the sky with complete confidence and pride.

“Soaring Immortal Sect!” Everyone was astonished to see this banner. Even experts from imperial lineages trembled with apprehension.

The Soaring Immortal Sect was an untouchable giant in the Mortal Emperor World. No one knew where it was located, but none could deny its great influence.

It was the only lineage with five emperors in all of the nine worlds as well as the most ancient one. It was created by Immortal Emperor Fei and continued to stand strong to this day.

[Immortal Emperor Fei](#) was not the first of the emperors nor the first human emperor. The title of the first emperor belonged to [Immortal Emperor Gu Chun](#) from the Charming Spirit Race while the first human emperor was [Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng](#).

However, Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, as the first, did not leave behind any lineage for the human race. Its second emperor, Immortal Emperor Fei, left behind a monstrous lineage.

There was a particular belief in the nine worlds. If one was to talk about the greatest emperor out of them all, then many people would think of Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng first and then [Immortal Emperor Fei Yang and Empress Hong Tian](#).

However, when it came to the most influential emperor, Immortal Emperor Fei would be the first one to pop inside anyone's head.

He created the Soaring Immortal Sect, the strongest human lineage and the only one in all of the nine worlds to produce five emperors.

Its mysterious location didn't affect its status in the nine worlds. Legend states that the sect had ruled over the nine worlds for several generations.

Thus anyone, even powerful imperial lineages, would feel apprehensive when talking about this sect!

And so, when the new young king of the Nantian Clan placed down the Soaring Immortal Banner, the crowd was shocked. They understood why he was acting so haughtily. It turned out that he found a great backing.

Li Qiye glanced at the banner on the ground. He couldn't be any more familiar with this banner.

"Fellow Daoist, you are a foreigner so it is better if you don't become involved in mundane matters." Nantian Young King laughed proudly and assumed that Li Qiye was frightened by the banner.

He then looked over at Wo Longxuan and spoke: "I am someone in a high position, so I won't bully the weak. As long as you take off your veil, my clan won't make things difficult for you."

"Why is it that I have to take off my veil?" She smirked in response.

The young king replied: "I am searching for an enemy in place of

my friend. He has an enemy lurking around while you are acting very suspicious.”

After hearing this, she understood who had asked him to do so.

“Sacred Teacher, should I run?” She blinked her pretty eyes and affectionately latched onto Li Qiye’s arm.

Many people saw this and glanced over at the Mortal King real fast. They all wanted to see how this situation would play out.

Li Qiye smiled and glanced at the young king: “I am merciful. Go back from whence you came.”

The young king lost his patience and coldly uttered: “Monk, don’t interfere with this feud or even if you sever your mundane ties later, you will still have an inerasable shadow.”

Li Qiye cheerfully replied: “What if I insist on interfering?”

“Those who violate the Soaring Immortal Order are heretics, they are to be executed without mercy.” The king chillingly declared.

Such words were truly overbearing. Even though the majority of the spectators didn’t agree with the statement, they didn’t dare to say anything since the banner was right there on the ground.

They understood that the young king was a fox borrowing a tiger's might; he was intimidating people with the soaring sect's prestige!

“Soaring Immortal Order?” Li Qiye nonchalantly laughed: “What kind of rubbish is this? An order that was put together with a bunch of scraps? How hilarious.”

The young king and the spectators were shocked to hear this. Some even gasped in response.

“This monk is a bit confused. I think he doesn't know how frightening the Soaring Immortal Sect is.” Someone from the last generation shook his head.

“You bald donkey, unthinkingly speaking!” The young king shouted and pointed at Li Qiye: “[Capture him, I will interrogate them!](#)”

The young king was dauntless at this time, not placing anyone in his sight since he was clinging onto the Soaring Immortal Sect's thigh.

The experts from the Nantian Clan immediately surrounded Li Qiye and Wo Longxuan. One of them coldly spoke: “Monk, out of respect for you being a venerable practitioner, just obediently give up.”

“Sacred Master, what do we do now?” Wo Longxuan pulled his

arm with a very cute and delicate appearance. It seemed as if she was very afraid.

Li Qiye chuckled and glanced at these Nantian disciples. He slowly placed his palms together and a buzzing noise came out. In the blink of an eye, his body emitted a Buddhist radiance. It surged from his body in a blinding manner, giving him the appearance of a Buddhist Lord.

A golden lotus bloomed below his feet, accompanied by Buddhist hymns and golden springs. Bodhisattvas and Arhats were chanting for him. The eight races of deities were protecting his well being. Under the luminance of this Buddhist light, all kinds of strange phenomena emerged.

At this split second, Wo Longxuan instantly disappeared to get far away from Li Qiye.

“Amitabha, slaying a devil is boundless beneficence.” Li Qiye recited a Buddhist phrase. The rhythm continued and a Buddhist affinity came down to enlighten and convert all living beings.

His radiance bloomed even more. The Nantian disciples surrounding him turned silly as if they were being controlled like puppets.

As the Buddhist chants continued, the eyes of these disciples turned red. They suddenly became agitated and quickly stabbed those closest to them.

There were no merit laws, techniques, or even any attempts at defense. The white blade swung forward and out came a blood-stained edge. All of these disciples stabbed each other without any screams or signs of pain. All of them fell down afterward.

This bizarre scene happened too quickly. Just one chant was enough to make the Nantian disciples kill each other in such a swift and decisive manner.

“No...” Nantian Young King’s eyes were crimson red as well. However, his dao heart was stronger than the other disciples. He struggled to resist the dharmic control.

“Sinner, repent!” Li Qiye spewed out another mantra with a majestic Buddhist might. It was impossible to resist.

“Ah—” After a shrill cry, the young king actually split himself into two halves with his blade. Blood spurted out while his body fell to the ground.

The crowd was stunned by this devilish scene. They trembled while feeling creeped out.

From start to finish, Li Qiye didn’t move at all, not even a single finger. The young king and all of the disciples from his clan were now dead, either from suicide or by killing each other.

Someone shivered and asked: “[Is that, is that a demonic art?](#)”

“No, it is a Buddhist law.” A monk from the plateau saw this scene and gently shook his head while speaking: “[When the Buddhist Lord is angry, shields shall flow above the endless tides of blood.](#)”

“Isn’t the Buddhist doctrine about mercy and kindness?” Another shivered and spoke: “It looks just like devilry though.”

It was normal for cultivators to kill each other. The law of the jungle was a truth everyone knew. However, in a cultivation battle, the enemies would at least be able to see one move before being killed. However, this Buddhist law didn’t require any such thing. Just one phrase was enough to make them kill each other and commit suicide!

“[This is what the Buddhist doctrine is capable of when subduing evil.](#)” A big shot who understood Buddhism gently sighed and murmured: “I finally understand why Immortal Emperor Yin Tian warned his generals back then. It was not because of the conversion, but because Buddhist laws can kill as well!”

Until now, Buddhism gave off a benevolent and peaceful impression. Many felt that if they could handle the conversion, then the dharma would be harmless to them.

However, Li Qiye shattered that image today in one fell swoop. One phrase instantly killed several dozen cultivators in an incredibly cruel manner.

The crowd understood that the dharma was not as harmless as

they'd imagined. Its offense prowess was quite terrifying.

“No, it's an evil art...” A youth quivered and had to throw up.

He was not the only one who felt nauseous. For the cultivators here, they could only blame themselves when killed by their enemies. It would be attributed to their own lack of skills.

However, a single Buddhist chant could make them slash themselves into two. This type of death was too terrorizing. It was indeed a type of evil magic!

Fei = Soaring; Gu Chun = Ancient Purity; Jiao Heng = Overbearing/Arrogant.

Fei Yang and Fei are different emperors.

Just a note, the young king always refers to himself with an “imperial I” because he considers himself to be higher than Li Qiye and Wo Longxuan. Li Qiye has met kings before and they would never use this “imperial I” before Li Qiye after learning his abilities. It is a problematic type of pronouns for translation.

A couple of options here for this particular word. Demonic art/devilish art/magic/wizardry/devilry. The usage of this particular word in Chinese can be used to express disbelief more so than stating the nature of the spell. He knows it is Buddhism, but he is expressing how astonished he is by making this statement. I do think magic is the most fitting when localizing to English. However, in a world of cultivation, I'm hesitant to use the word magic since it is more western and the word is slightly different from the real word for magic. In a xianxia with both western and eastern elements, there will be conflicts between western magic and eastern cultivation. Using magic so carelessly can be problematic. We probably won't have this problem in ED since it

has no western elements. Demonic art is the most literal translation. Or, he could just be asking a dumb question after seeing Li Qiye at the plateau.

An idiom for blood flowing like a river. It is a very abrupt idiom, so it is hard to put in English to make it look nice or understandable right away. It is an image of war about the aftermath of carnage. There is so much blood that even the shields used by the soldiers started to flow on the ground.

The first sentence is a complete localization. The raw would be “Vajras subduing evil.” It is a phrase talking about Buddhism’s ability to fight/ward off evil. It wouldn’t make sense to keep it raw here.

Chapter 1033: One Thought To Become Buddha

The scene turned quiet as the crowd stared at Li Qiye with fear. A practitioner who still had his hair as well as an unfathomable dharma — such a person was even more dreadful than unstoppable geniuses.

“Capable of enlightening beings as well as subduing evil.” A Virtuous Paragon gently sighed: “This person is capable of defeating the Radiant Bodhisattva, just how frightening is his dharma? If he enters this world, it will set off many waves.”

The first reaction of many people to this paragon’s comment was to look at Jikong Wudi’s group.

At this time, Jikong Wudi, Zhan Shi, and Heavenly Emperor Lin looked quite alarmed, especially Zhan Shi. He knew just how frightening the monks inside the Four Buddhas Temple were, let alone its Bodhisattva.

But now, this nameless monk was actually able to defeat the Bodhisattva. It was easy to imagine just how profound his dharma was!

Prior to this, the group probably thought that since they had strong dao hearts, they were still confident in competing against this practitioner for the Heaven’s Will. However, after seeing his ability, the group became quite apprehensive. They realized the dharma was more terrifying than they expected.

“Buzz—” At this point, the Mortal King’s body emitted a bright light. These bright waves made it seem like he was a god oppressing this world. Each ray was profoundly heavy.

He activated the mighty power of his Immortal Physique. All of the universal laws protected his dao heart. At this second, even someone as great as him couldn’t afford to be careless and was readying his defense.

“Fellow Daoist, you are going against the natural order.” The Mortal King came forward and spoke gravely towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye lazily looked at him and responded: “I’ll go against the natural order and it’s none of your business. Come bite me if you don’t like it!” Li Qiye’s current appearance dazzled everyone since he was emanating a Buddhist light and accompanied by all the other visual phenomena. No matter how one looked at it, Li Qiye resembled either an Arhat or Bodhisattva.

However, his vulgar words completely contradicted his holy appearance; his words sounded at home in a street market. This attitude was completely different to when he was subduing his foes.

“Is this what a sacred monk looks like?” Someone became slack-jawed from the ridiculousness of the situation.

“This is a dharma in accordance with one’s heart.” A monk who truly understood Buddhism murmured: “This is the legendary one

thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil. He has reached a level beyond our grasp. If he were to stay back at Spirit Mountain, he would definitely become the next Buddhist Lord!”

Even the Mortal King was jolted for a second. He was ready to fight against the terrifying dharma, but he didn’t expect Li Qiye to speak like a thug. This contrast was a little too exaggerated in his eyes.

“I am the Jewel Pillar Mortal King, I wish to try your supreme dharma.” He shouted and emitted a frightening aura capable of suppressing the heavens. At this moment, his physique had erupted to its maximum level.

“The Immortal Physique is quite frightening.” The crowd shivered at the physique’s might.

“[Amitabha, excellent, excellent...](#)” Li Qiye’s Buddhist light lit up as well and illuminated the area. He spewed out mantras and affected the location with his own rhythm.

“Thump—thump—thump!” The Mortal King immediately took several steps back and shattered the ground below him after the mantra came out. The light on his body was actually being tinted with a Buddhist shade.

“Conversion...” Someone shouted while countless others trembled after seeing this.

The Mortal King didn't say another word and immediately disappeared into the horizon. His speed was extremely fast. It seemed that he made his decision in a split second!

“You dared to challenge me at such a level.” Li Qiye shook his head and smiled. He dispersed his light and all the phenomena disappeared along with it. His appearance at this moment didn't resemble a venerable monk at all, let alone someone who could convert others with just one phrase.

The crowd couldn't be any quieter. One could even hear the sound of a needle dropping. The Mortal King instantly lost after a quick exchange — this was too scary.

In the present times, the Mortal King along with Zhan Shi, Jikong Wudi, and Heavenly Emperor Lin were famous. Though the Mortal King's talents were worse than his peers, he firmly took each of his steps and eventually reached his current level. His accomplishments were paved by one battle after another.

Even if his dao heart was not as firm as Zhan Shi's, it was still very formidable. He had experienced defeats and victories so he wasn't so easily deterred.

However, he had to immediately escape at the start of the fight. Without a doubt, he couldn't handle Li Qiye's unbearable power of conversion.

“Challenging the dharma at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau?” In the far away Buddhist City, a young man gazed into the distance. It

was South Emperor who wowed the world with a single battle!

He shook his head and continued to say: “What an unwise decision! The dharma is invincible here at the plateau! Even an Immortal Emperor wouldn’t want to compete in a dharmic contest.”

“One thought to become Buddha; another to become Devil. The juniors can’t grasp the real terror behind this.” Eventually, he smiled and entered the Buddhist City.

Many people who entered the plateau had heard of Godkings being converted with just one phrase. However, they considered it to be a mere exaggeration — not enough to reach the apex.

However, after seeing Li Qiye defeat the Mortal King with just one phrase, they understood that there was a real chance that it was true!

“So terrifying!” A young genius took a deep breath and murmured: “Will we even have a chance to attack such a person? He can defeat us by just opening his mouth.”

Ordinary geniuses wouldn’t dare to challenge such a terrifying person when even the Mortal King had to run away after one phrase.

“Brother Zhan, can you withstand his Buddhist mantra?” A saint child from a great sect couldn’t resist asking Zhan Shi.

The crowd quickly glanced over at Zhan Shi after hearing this question. He was the only one who participated in the scripture hark back at the Four Buddhas Temple. They also wanted to know the extent of its terror.

Zhan Shi didn't answer this question. He only stared at Li Qiye with a profound glare.

On the other side, Jikong Wudi, didn't say anything either. He looked at Li Qiye for a bit before leaving. He had countless methods beyond one's imagination. It could even be said that he didn't care for the Mortal King. If he actually used all of his aces, he could still destroy the Mortal King no matter who was behind him!

Thus, he didn't consider the Mortal King to be his strongest rival on his path towards becoming the Immortal Emperor. But today, he had no choice but to consider this unknown monk as his greatest obstacle.

A spirited glimmer flashed in Heavenly Emperor Lin's eyes. He gently sighed and murmured to himself: "One thought to become Buddha; another to become Devil — this is too amazing. Who can oppose him at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau?"

Li Qiye ignored the crowd and waved at Wo Longxuan. They headed for the Buddhist City afterward.

Others noticed that nothing else was going on, so they dispersed

as well. Some went to other temples, others left the plateau, and a group headed for the Buddhist City...

The Buddhist City was the largest city in the plateau. It was very prosperous and was occupied by many races. There were mortals, cultivators, monks... Humans, demons, and Bloods were everywhere as well...

Some were born in the city while others came from the distant Eastern Hundred Cities. Some came quickly and left just as quick while there were those who stayed for the rest of their life...

There might not be another location in this world with a stronger Buddhist temperament than this city. There were temples everywhere. One could hear chants coming from all four directions. Even the ordinary families who weren't Buddhist still chanted the scriptures.

It was a harmonious and peaceful city, full of life and prosperity.

Someone once said that there wasn't another location in the nine worlds that was as peaceful as the Buddhist City for one to settle down in.

Though the city was quite mundane in nature, some people thought that it was under Nalanda's jurisdiction. The temple sent Bodhisattvas here to maintain the tranquility.

Li Qiye and Wo Longxuan went right outside of the temple. He

sighed while looking at the city in the distance. There were things here that made him worry.

At this time, a young man could be found standing by the entrance. He had a heroic aura; even though he was under a disguise, people could still tell that he was a powerful expert.

“That’s my junior brother. I think the reinforcements from my sect have arrived.” Wo Longxuan told Li Qiye after seeing the youth.

After being injured, she sent out a distress call to her sect. However, the dragon cliff was located all the way in the north. Even if the ancestors there were very fast, they still needed a long time to reach the Buddhist Funeral Plateau!

Some Buddhist terms and concepts lack direct translations to English that cover the breadth of the original term. “Excellent” here is one of them. There is no word for this since it is the 2nd most repeated word in Buddhism outside of Amitabha, at least from my exposure to Buddhist literature. It is an expression of praise and approval. A Buddha or a Buddhist teacher might use this word when praising or expressing approval, usually towards a disciple. In Buddhist scriptures, this word is often repeated for emphasis, appearing in English translations as “Excellent, excellent!” or “Well done, well done!” Another usage is to express some type of sentimental regret or emotion at a particular deed, both good and evil.

Chapter 1034: Beneficence Bodhisattva

Li Qiye glanced at the youth and told Wo Longxuan: “Go ahead and go back to train in peace. You won’t be able to compete against the Mortal King in your current state.”

Wo Longxuan bowed deeply towards him and said in a dignified fashion: “Words cannot express my gratitude for your kindness. You saved my life. I, Wo Longxuan, will definitely repay you. Just say the word when you need me or the dragon cliff in the future.”

Li Qiye casually nodded. He didn’t really pay it any mind since he wasn’t expecting a reward from saving her. He had merely done so in passing.

She bid her farewell and left with her junior brother. Li Qiye slowly entered the Buddhist City afterward.

Li Qiye trod through this bustling city and saw people coming and going. He noticed all the civilians here were worshipping Buddhism and chanting Buddhist scriptures. This made him sigh with emotion.

“Di Shi... What will you bring to the ultimate battle in the future... There are billions of creatures here...” He lamented.

He felt the Buddhist rhythm in this place. This rhythm was all over the plateau because this was the largest congregation of monks, especially at Spirit Mountain and Nalanda.

However, Li Qiye knew that the plateau hadn't become the sacred ground of Buddhism due to the number of monks.

“Evil Buddha is here.” His arrival to the city caused quite a stir.

Today, he had received a new moniker — Evil Buddha! No one knew where this hair-keeping monk came from or what his identity was. However, they had seen his evil-subduing art, so they gave him this title!

“It's not just Evil Buddha, South Emperor came before him too.” A knowledgeable person spoke.

Many people glanced at each other after hearing about South Emperor being here as well. Not too many had heard of this South Emperor before, but with just one battle, he amazed the world by fighting against the eighteen great vajras alone. His prestige had completely surpassed Jikong Wudi's group.

“Why is the plateau so strange this year? It is one thing that the geniuses gather here, but this devilish Evil Buddha comes out of nowhere and then this mysterious South Emperor. Evil Buddha and South Emperor simply render the younger generation out of breath.” Someone murmured.

“No, South Emperor is not so mysterious. He is an Era Evader from the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain!” A paragon from the southern region knew his identity. To paragons from the previous generation, the title of South Emperor was not unfamiliar at all.

“An Era Evader? What is that?” A youth didn’t know what it meant, so he asked his seniors.

A senior answered: “An Era Evader is a supreme genius. In order to avoid a great loss from competing for the Heaven’s Will, they would seal themselves early and abandon their generation in order to wait for a different, more opportune one, to seize the Heaven’s Will for the throne.”

“South Emperor isn’t an ordinary Era Evader. He was once the most brilliant genius of the bamboo mountain. For tens of millions of years, he is the only one to truly claim the moniker of South Emperor.” The paragon who knew his identity continued: “Unfortunately, he was born in the wrong generation. Despite being so exceptional, he was in the same era as Empress Hong Tian. It was destined to be a disaster, so he chose to avoid that generation rather than compete with her to the end!”

“Competing against Empress Hong Tian for the Heaven’s Will...” Anyone would quiver after hearing this. The paramount empress had always been praised by the world.

“Even the last Immortal Emperor of the bamboo mountain, Immortal Emperor Yin Tian, was only his junior.” The paragon explained.

“No wonder why he is so heaven-defying.” Anyone would be stunned after hearing this. A terrifying and unparalleled genius having to evade Empress Hong Tian’s generation; they understood

why he dared to challenge the eighteen vajras. It was because he absolutely had the power to do so.

After hearing the South Emperor's tales, not to mention others, even the Jikong Wudi's group of geniuses went quiet for a very long time. This South Emperor appearing out of nowhere brought tremendous pressure to them. Someone who had competed with the empress... No matter the time or place, this type of character was definitely invincible.

“An Evil Buddha and now an Era Evader.” Heavenly Emperor Lin murmured to himself: “This generation will definitely be exciting. It seems like Senior Brother won't be lonely. He will finally have rivals to compare himself with.”

Eventually, Li Qiye arrived before an old temple inside the city. It was not grand, only old from being around for too many years.

In the minds of the people living here, the doors of this temple had always been closed. They didn't know what kind of monks were training inside either.

He quietly stood in front of the temple, calming the indescribable tinge of emotions threatening to rise. For millions of years, groups of followers kept on leaving him. Very few were able to live until now.

Eventually, he gently sighed, not wishing to think about it any further. He turned around to leave.

“Click—” The shut doors suddenly opened. An old nun ran outside and placed her palms together then told Li Qiye: “Sacred Teacher, the Bodhisattva wishes to see you.”

Li Qiye stopped and returned the gesture: “Please lead the way.”

He followed the old nun into the temple. It was very quiet. Apart from the nun, there were no signs of anyone else. Time seemed to have stopped the moment he walked into this place. It was a realm apart from the mundane world. Everything was eternal here.

There was nothing besides muffled footsteps. The rowdiness of the outside world was far from this place.

Li Qiye told the old nun: “Let me bathe and light some incense before meeting the Beneficence Bodhisattva.”

She had no objections and led him into a room so that he could wash himself and burn incense. After doing so, with a dignified yet natural expression, he followed the nun to see the Beneficence Bodhisattva.

Who was Li Qiye? He was someone who was indifferent even before Immortal Emperors. However, he was particularly solemn today. This showed the Beneficence Bodhisattva’s special status in his heart.

The nun led him to a Buddhist building before leaving. He stood outside and calmed his emotions before entering.

Buddhist lights filled the building like flowing mercury to every inch and corner of this place. It gave off an indescribably mystical sensation.

There was a golden lotus in full bloom with a woman sitting on top of it. She was barefoot and had long hair flowing down her yellow dress. Her hands were forming mudras with an air of serenity. The peaceful and gentle rays coming from her body resembled the warm sunlight during winter. These hands would be incredibly gentle when caressing one's face.

She was a supreme beauty with a kingdom-toppling figure. However, she was now a Bodhisattva and had transformed in accordance with the Buddhist doctrine. Both her supreme face and figure were nothing more than a bag of skin in her eyes.

Li Qiye looked at this all-too-familiar woman ahead. He didn't say anything and sat down on a cushion.

Rumors were circulating in the Buddhist City that Spirit Mountain had sent a Bodhisattva here for protection. However, no one had seen this Bodhisattva before. This Bodhisattva was the one in the rumors. She was also an old friend of Li Qiye.

At this time, the Beneficence Bodhisattva opened her especially pretty eyes. One could easily imagine how enchanting she must have been before becoming a nun.

"You are finally here." The Beneficence Bodhisattva spoke. Her

voice was still pleasant and gentle even after her transformation.

Li Qiye gently placed his palms together and revealed a dignified expression: “I didn’t want to disturb your meditation.”

“Let me look at your real body for a bit.” The Beneficence Bodhisattva requested.

He wordlessly turned back into his true form and revealed the face of Li Qiye.

The Beneficence Bodhisattva carefully stared at him with her hands still performing mudras. She spoke: “Waking up one day to find millions of years have passed. Time lasts forever.”

“You have been enlightened and can have eternal life in the future. Millions of years are but the blink of an eye to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.” Li Qiye gently spoke.

Her mudras continued to emit an overflowing Buddhist aura. She was still calm while talking about the past. Today, she was a Bodhisattva, a mortal no more.

She softly said: “I know you didn’t fully agree with us joining the Buddhist faith.”

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “No, this is something that you deserve. Back then, you personally led the legion to calm the era for me. During the tough times, you were next to me. With one

writ of mine, you left several times to carry it out. No matter what it may be, you deserve everything.”

“In the past, each life that followed me, every warrior whose blood washed the battlefield, they were all living beings...” The Bodhisattva spoke with her Buddhist rhythm. The past was now gone with the wind.

Long ago, she was the leader of one of the four great legions under Li Qiye. She went on several expeditions for him. From north to south, her illustrious fame was a great deterrence to everyone in the nine worlds.

Chapter 1035: Farewell Forever, Young Master

She remained calm while talking about the past and maintained her mudras: “I didn’t join Buddhism and enter Spirit Mountain for eternal life. The only thing I want is peace in my heart.”

“I know.” Li Qiye nodded quietly: “War has always been cruel. If you can’t even sleep well at night, I will always feel guilty. I am happy that you are able to find peace at the plateau.”

“I chose to escape... I have let you down.” She answered softly.

He shook his head in response: “No, you should have had a normal and happy life. This was all because of me, I was the one who brought you into a world of killing. It is full of fate, karma, and grievances. All of this should have been my responsibility, my hands were already stained with blood. I should have shouldered it all.”

The Beneficence Bodhisattva slowly said: “Just let past causes and effects go.”

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Just let it go. Leave it all to me, I will go to the very end at the final world where I shall have my answer.”

The Bodhisattva didn’t say anything from on top of her golden lotus. She was peaceful and distant for she had severed her ties with the mundane world.

“Today, this will be our last meeting, so I will tell you something.” Eventually, she spoke: “The Buddhist Kingdom has a new Buddhist Lord.”

Li Qiye was caught off guard: “This is actually surprising. There should only be two candidates for the new Buddhist Lord. One is the Radiant Bodhisattva and the other is you. If the new lord isn’t one of you two, then who can it be?”

She replied: “I haven’t been back to the kingdom so I haven’t seen the new Buddhist Lord. I only received the message from there.”

Li Qiye finally bowed his head then got up to leave. He walked very slowly with a solemn air. The Bodhisattva also quietly watched each of his steps.

“Farewell forever, Young Master...” She gave him one last look before closing her Buddhist eyes.

Li Qiye’s heart fluttered. He finally turned back to look at her and imprinted her image into his memories while softly speaking: “[Farewell forever, Zhan’er.](#)”

With that, he left the room and gently closed the doors.

Before he knew it, the corners of his eyes became a little wet. Time was insignificant; millions of years was only a blink of an

eye. It felt as if it was just yesterday.

There had been many people by his side, but not many were with him for as long as the Beneficence Bodhisattva. No matter what, he still respected her choice. After generations of bloody battles, it wasn't easy and peaceful for her.

Throughout the eras, she had paid a great price. If she wanted eternal life, Li Qiye would have exerted all of his efforts to grant her her wish. However, everlastingness was not her wish, she only wanted peace of mind.

“Death is not the most painful thing. Only extrication would bring about peace.” Li Qiye sighed softly after leaving the shrine.

He couldn't describe his current emotions. He had sent away many friends in the past. In his eyes, death was not the worst thing. The most insufferable emotion came from separation, especially seeing someone off that was still alive, only to never be able to meet each other again!

He transformed back into Chu Yuntian and blended in with the bustling streets of the Buddhist City.

There had been too much pain and separation in the past. He didn't want to look back, so he could only move forward on this long and winding path!

The Rainflower Terrace was a very famous inn at the Buddhist

City. Many prominent cultivators would stay in this place after arriving.

Li Qiye quietly sat on the terrace and drank in silence. He watched the clouds in the sky and felt the wind. He was staying here to wait for Li Shuangyan's group because they had made plans. If the girls wanted to come to the plateau, he would stay at the Rainflower Terrace to wait for them.

Today, Evil Buddha was very famous, so when he was drinking by himself, many cultivators at the terrace looked at him from the distance. They quietly whispered about him. Of course, no one dared to disturb him.

It was a notorious title. One Buddhist phrase could cause the new young king of the Nantian Clan to commit suicide, so who would dare to come and talk to him recklessly? What if he started with a chant, then they wouldn't even realize how they died.

“Pop!” A stomp shattered the sky as a person arrived with a clear battle intent. His body emitted strings of lights carrying massive weight.

“The Jewel Pillar Mortal King is here.” A few cultivators on the terrace shouted after seeing this person crushing the void.

His aggressive demeanor made it clear to many what he was here to do.

“Unbeatable War God! Never utters the word defeat!” His supporters couldn’t help but loudly cheer.

Even his non-supporters nodded their heads and murmured: “The Mortal King indeed has the ability to compete for the Heaven’s Will. He does not mind defeat and will stand up from where he fell. As long as he stays alive, there is always the hope of victory.”

Supreme cultivation geniuses were quite vain and prideful. This was because this type of genius always had a smooth road and almost never tasted defeat. Therefore, their first defeat would easily become their inner demon. From then on, they wouldn’t be able to get up again.

There were too many examples of this across the ages. Some supreme geniuses couldn’t handle defeat and suicide became their ultimate end.

“The Mortal King will have a way to suppress Evil Buddha for sure this time.” Another commented.

From his past records, others could tell that he would normally lose the first match, but he would reverse the tides on the second challenge and defeat the enemy.

At this time, he seemed to be full of confidence in challenging Evil Buddha, so everyone assumed that he had found a way to suppress him.

Li Qiye didn't even bother to look at the Mortal King. He continued to pour his own drink and gulped it up with a relaxed demeanor.

["Sir, come out and fight."](#) The Mortal King stood outside of the terrace and shouted gravely. His voice was immense. Each resonating word was full of power.

At this second, he resembled a divine mountain — majestic and immovable. His pair of eyes were extremely sharp, capable of cutting the world apart. The aura that emanated from his body was a cause for fear.

Li Qiye slowly sipped his wine. Today, he was in no mood to play with a junior like the Mortal King.

The majority of the cultivators were holding their breaths anxiously in anticipation of this battle. However, they noticed that Evil Buddha was still calm and didn't even glance at the Mortal King. They looked at each other and felt that this Buddha was being too contemptuous.

The Mortal King's expression turned cold. Today, he was able to deter the world. No one dared to look down on him regardless of who they might be.

However, this Evil Buddha was too lazy to even look at him. This was even more humiliating than his defeat last time.

“Sir, do you dare to fight or not!” The king’s voice was as sharp and cold as the edge of a blade.

Li Qiye simply ignored him. In his eyes, the king was an insect shouting at a behemoth. He was in no mood to listen.

“If the Sacred Teacher doesn’t care for you, then go cool off to the side.” A slightly languid voice came about. A person suddenly appeared in the sky.

“South Emperor...” The sudden emergence of this person caused people to cry out. Everyone inside and outside of the terrace was startled.

“Era Evader from Mysterious Bamboo.” Anyone would tremble after seeing South Emperor.

Even the proud Mortal King’s expression sank after seeing him. An Era Evader was not an empty title. The South Emperor had competed with the empress for the Heaven’s Will before. Even Godkings would dread this existence no matter which generation it was.

The king looked at South Emperor. He took a deep breath and spoke with great momentum: “If Era Evader wants to give me some pointers, I am willing to test your supreme arts.”

South Emperor glanced at him and said dismissively: “You? Wait until you are recognized by the Heaven’s Will, then you can

challenge me. Right now, you are not qualified. The person behind you, on the other hand, is barely qualified to fight me.”

This remark was uttered in such a plain and carefree manner that it made the king change his expression. Such blatant contempt was humiliating to a genius like him. In his mind, it was an intentional insult.

The king was determined and spoke solemnly: “I would like to see Era Evader’s supreme arts!”

“I said, cool off.” South Emperor didn’t want to bother with the king. He casually reached out with his finger. However, this simple gesture crushed the stars in the sky.

The king was shocked at this oncoming finger strike. He shouted and wanted to use his strongest attack to stop it. However, he was too slow compared to this finger attack that soared across the sky.

“Bang!” The crowd watched as the Mortal King was blown away by a single finger.

“Boom!” People in the distance saw the king slam into a mountain. The impact shattered it while the king continued to fly before disappearing into the horizon.

Such a scene astounded everyone. The Mortal King was among the most outstanding talents in this generation. Even a Virtuous Paragon from the last generation would treat him with some

respect. However, just one finger from South Emperor was able to push him thousands of miles away!

Zhan'er was a name he mentioned before; I think the ultimate universal law said Zhan'er as well. She must be a lover.

“Sir” here is a respectful “you”, but it is not quite at the “sir” level. It is more of a polite “you” of two people at the same level. It is interesting that if we still use the informal “thou”, then “you” can be the formal version. But it seems like in modern usage, “thou” has the impression of being formal compared to “you”. So if we were to be weird and use an archaic vernacular in the modern sense, “thou” would be appropriate here to show a higher level of respect.

Chapter 1036: South Emperor Seeking Guidance

The crowd took a deep breath from astonishment. They were quite perplexed by the gigantic gap between the two.

“How are people in the current generation going to compete for the Heaven’s Will?” A powerful youth lost his confidence right away. The Mortal King was strong enough in the eyes of the younger generation, but he was not worth mentioning when it came to South Emperor.

“The word ‘emperor’ alone is enough to tell the tale. Not just anyone can claim to be an emperor!” Another murmured.

“That’s an Era Evader for you.” A paragon spoke: “If the current geniuses don’t grow to the point where they are recognized by the Heaven’s Will, they simply can’t compete with him.”

One person even went as far to say: “Is that an Emperor Assailant? To blow the War God away with just one finger, truly unstoppable.”

Li Qiye didn’t look twice at what was happening. He was still nonchalant in his own world.

South Emperor approached and sat in front of him. He smilingly said: “Let this junior drink with you in this busy mundane world.”

With that, he casually flipped his palm and they instantly teleported away.

In the blink of an eye, the pavilion that Li Qiye was sitting on disappeared. Many people on top of the terrace looked over and realized that the South Emperor had teleported the entire building.

Somewhere in the southern region, there was a waterfall running with green pine trees everywhere as if it was a paradise.

At this time, the emperor took some of Li Qiye's wine and began to drink even faster than Li Qiye, as if he wanted to compete with him.

Li Qiye sat there in contemplation. After a while, his mind returned and he glanced at South Emperor who was gulping down cups of liquor.

“Little Guo, if you want to drink, go take out your imperial brew from your mountain, don't steal mine.” Li Qiye said slowly.

South Emperor's name was Gu Guo. In the present times, no one knew his name and of course, no one would ever dare to call him “Little Guo”. Even Immortal Emperor Yin Tian was his junior, so who at Mysterious Bamboo would dare to call him Little Guo?

South Emperor didn't really want to put the aged wine down. He felt the urge to pull on his hair with a suffering grimace.

“What’s wrong, Little Guo.” Li Qiye revealed a rare smile after looking at the emperor.

The emperor let go of his hair and waved his hands in front of Li Qiye: “I want to suicide, Sacred Teacher. You, you are pushing me to the edge right now.”

“Pushing you to the edge? I don’t think it has anything to do with me.” Li Qiye looked at the fella and laughed.

South Emperor reluctantly explained: “Can I get any unluckier? At fifteen, I met Empress Hong Tian. Fine, I accepted defeat. I evaded one era and came out at twenty. Oh well, I met Immortal Emperor Bing Yu. I’ll just attribute that to bad luck again, so I evaded another generation. At thirty, I made another debut only to meet Immortal Emperor Qian Li, so I hid again and finally came out now. My god, Sacred Teacher, you are personally doing it this time.”

“Teacher, are you purposely doing this to ruin me? Empress Hong Tian was your direct student, Immortal Emperor Bing Yu was given a new fortune by you. And as for Immortal Emperor Qian Li, you were her dao protector!” South Emperor bitterly spoke: “Every time I come into being, I just happen to come by you. I should just buy a bunch of noodles so I can hang myself already.”

South Emperor was indeed very unlucky. The first time he came out, he met Empress Hong Tian. Even the most brilliant geniuses would be finished, so he chose to run.

The second time, the Dark Crow granted a great fortune to the young Immortal Emperor Bing Yu. Others didn't know about the existence of the Dark Crow, but South Emperor did. This was because the second emperor of Mysterious Bamboo was groomed by the Dark Crow!

At a certain level, the Dark Crow granting a fortune was akin to determining Immortal Emperor Bing Yu's right to the Heaven's Will, so South Emperor hid again.

The third time was even worse. The Dark Crow personally became the dao protector of Immortal Emperor Qian Li. South Emperor knew better than everyone else that no one would be able to bar the Dark Crow's path. Thus, he evaded another generation.

This was his fourth time coming out, and worse turned to worst. The Dark Crow himself came out! Even if he was stronger, he wouldn't have the chance to become the Immortal Emperor.

Having to evade four generations was a kind of torture to South Emperor, enough to drive him crazy.

Li Qiye laughed and gently shook his head: "Little Guo, this has nothing to do with me. It is all about your inner demon." Li Qiye pointed at his heart: "If you don't come out from the shadow of Empress Hong Tian, how are you going to compete for the Heaven's Will?"

"Sacred Teacher is right, I do have a shadow looming in my

heart.” South Emperor bitterly smiled: “But this inner demon is not from losing to Empress Hong Tian, it is you, Sacred Teacher. I cannot defeat this inner demon, so when you take action, I can only retreat!”

Li Qiye chuckled and stated: “If that’s the case, it isn’t hard for you to defeat it. Just kill me, then it will no longer loom over your conscience.”

“Sacred Teacher, please don’t scare me.” South Emperor shook his head: “Even if I wanted to, it wouldn’t be my turn. I wouldn’t be among the top ten of those who want to kill you, no, not even the top fifty. The number of giants across the ages that want you dead is too numerous to count.”

South Emperor was very powerful and he went very far back. It could even be said that he was extremely close to being an Immortal Emperor. However, he knew himself very well. It was impossible for him to kill an existence like Li Qiye. Otherwise, the Dark Crow would have disappeared from this world long ago, there wouldn’t be a need for him to take action.

He became quite sad at this point. He wanted to drink more aged wine to become drunk. Alas, he failed at this too.

“Sacred Teacher, I’m so sad right now.” He said helplessly: “I have evaded four generations, should I do it again or just be satisfied with this one?”

Li Qiye smiled in response: “That depends on what you want.

Your chance of becoming an emperor is greater than anyone else. If you give up this generation, there will be bigger opportunities later. Avoid me and you can definitely become emperor in the next generation.”

He spoke forlornly: “Sigh, but I have given up on so many already.”

Li Qiye replied: “Era Evading isn’t anything to be ashamed of. Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo, Di Yu, and Qing He all evaded eras. If you manage to evade four generations and come out in the fifth, then it can be considered a miracle. It is not your dao heart that is lacking, and the same is true for your talents. The only thing I can say is that your luck is quite bad.”

“Sigh, this is why I’m sad, it’s as if I was born to be hapless.” The emperor smiled wryly: “Unlucky for four generations.”

“Who told you to do so well in your youth? You nearly reached the Heaven’s Will at fifteen years old, what more do you want? If we were to make a list of all the top geniuses across the ages, you definitely would be among the top ten. Consider this as a test from the heavens.” Li Qiye laughed.

With a painful expression, he moaned: “It was indeed smooth early on, but do you need to torture me like this?”

“What do you think? Even though you are among the top ten geniuses, look at the list. How many of them actually had an easy life or peaceful ending?” Li Qiye shook his head: “The heavens

granted you such great talents, so it has to harden your willpower first.”

“Fine then, the old villainous heavens can continue to torture me.” South Emperor complained before becoming serious: “Sacred Teacher, I came this time just to listen to your opinion.”

Li Qiye looked at the guy and laughed: “Gu Guo, I know you are very arrogant. The truth is that you had a chance of becoming the Immortal Emperor, but you couldn’t let go of your pride and were too reluctant to come ask me.”

“I know.” The emperor chuckled weakly: “I know that Sacred Teacher would remember old sentiments. If I asked you on my ancestor’s behalf, you would become my dao protector. Just like you said before, I nearly reached the Heaven’s Will at the age of fifteen, how could I not become arrogant? Even though the empress was more heaven-defying than me, in terms of our accomplishments at a young age and cultivation speed, she was not my match...”

“So, I couldn’t resist my pride. I always thought that I could still become the emperor without relying on you. Sigh, who would have thought that I would have to evade one generation after another. It seems like you are right, I have to let go of all posturing to come and ask you!” South Emperor was very honest at this moment.

He didn’t need to hide anything before an everlasting existence like Li Qiye. Moreover, as the Dark Crow, Li Qiye had always watched over their Mysterious Bamboo Mountain.

“You are right this time. In fact, even now, you could still become an Immortal Emperor without my help. However, due to your bad luck, you always chose the wrong generation.” Li Qiye smiled.

South Emperor took a deep breath and solemnly asked: “Sacred Master, I have seen through the past. In this generation, I am sincerely asking you, should I evade this generation or go all out?”

“That depends.” Li Qiye chuckled: “Do you want to live brilliantly for one generation, or do you only want to become an Immortal Emperor?”

“If you only want to become an emperor, then evade this era and you will definitely become one in the next after I leave. No one will be able to stop you. However, if you want to see this generation’s brilliance, then go all out.” Li Qiye looked at the emperor and said: “Remember, Immortal Emperor is only the beginning.”

“I know that.” South Emperor gently nodded: “Emperor is only the beginning. However, Sacred Teacher, if I can’t become an emperor, how can I even talk about starting...”

“There is another choice.” Li Qiye revealed a mysterious smile: “You don’t need to become an Immortal Emperor since you can be an Immortal Monarch instead! This is another option.”

Chapter 1037: Mythical Immortal Monarch

“Immortal Monarch..” South Emperor’s eyes flashed for a moment before he looked at Li Qiye and murmured: “I’ve heard of it before.”

Li Qiye gently sipped his wine and leisurely said: “What kind of generation do you wish to see? Do you just want to become an Immortal Emperor, to be at the starting point?”

South Emperor stared at Li Qiye with disbelief: “Sacred Teacher, are you really commencing the plan? You aim on going all out to the very end in this generation?”

“We have been waiting for this day for too long.” Li Qiye continued to drink: “The truth is that I’m a bit tired of living. I want an answer.”

South Emperor batted his eyes and became a bit excited. There were a few secrets that others did not know. They were not qualified to know. However, he, who was so close to Immortal Emperor, knew these secrets that even Godkings couldn’t touch.

After a while, he couldn’t help but ask: “That place, what is it like?”

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “Immortal Emperor Yin Tian is your junior so you should have learned a little bit when he was at his peak. Others aren’t qualified to watch, but you were definitely an exception.”

South Emperor was a bit dazed as he replied: “That moment, it was indeed a big storm...”

He sat there absent-mindedly. Those who were allowed to watch back then would never forget that shocking scene. It gave people an entirely new goal.

After seeing that, they would come to understand the phrase — Immortal Emperor is only the beginning!

Li Qiye grinned after seeing the dazed emperor: “What do you think now? Do you wish to fulfill your dream of becoming an Immortal Emperor or fight above the nine heavens?!”

“Immortal Monarch...” South Emperor pondered for a moment. Immortal Monarch was not a title of the nine worlds; no one here knew what it was. However, he had always wanted to become an Immortal Emperor, so he was hesitant on the prospect of becoming a monarch instead.

“Little Guo, you were a bit arrogant before, but after being polished by the river of time, your value has increased. You are now over thirty; just like the polishing of jade, your gloss will become eternal.” Li Qiye spoke.

“Is it possible?” South Emperor wondered. If Li Qiye wasn’t here, then he was certain of becoming the Immortal Emperor. However, before going to an unknown place, he needed guidance.

“It wasn’t possible in the past, but it is now. I can guarantee this.” Li Qiye drank more wine: “However, you need to be prepared. Becoming an Immortal Monarch is different from becoming an Immortal Emperor, so you need to be sure. Let go of your pride and I can show you the way.”

“This particular shift is allowed?” He asked Li Qiye. After growing older, he no longer had a rash and willful temperament. In the past, even though he didn’t act arrogant, he felt it inside. He was confident that he could become an emperor even without the Dark Crow as his teacher.

Because of this, he never asked the Dark Crow for help. Otherwise, he could have been an emperor already by letting go of his pride.

“Oh? You are not confident this time?” Li Qiye laughed and shook his head: “Even though you were wrong for four generations, things really aren’t that serious. Remember, you are among the top ten of all the geniuses across the eons. You satisfy all the conditions right now — firm dao heart with an understanding of the grand dao’s origin as well as being recognized by the Heaven’s Will. No matter which generation it may be, you are still the most outstanding genius.”

He looked at South Emperor to say: “As long as you are willing, you will definitely be able to do it. The only question is your own desire. To test your might in this generation, or to become an Immortal Emperor. Of course, each has its own merits. They are different paths leading to different worlds.”

“I will test my might in this generation then!” South Emperor took a deep breath and said solemnly: “I’m also tired of evading one generation after another, so this generation it is! Just like Sacred Teacher said before, I’m also tired of living!”

“You are only thirty years old, what is there to be tired of!” Li Qiye smilingly shook his head: “You are at your prime, so you should be high-spirited. To tell the truth, I’m a bit envious of you. Unburdened and without restrictions, this is how one should be when seeking the grand dao.”

South Emperor chuckled awkwardly after hearing this. Even a top character like him became a bit embarrassed: “Not loving anyone and having nobody to love me, is this still considered lucky?”

“It’s because your standards are too high. Back then, countless fairies and goddesses adored you, but you simply didn’t like them.” Li Qiye smiled and paused for a moment: “Not knowing love is also a kind of blessing.”

He gently sighed: “When you live for a long time, you will have to watch some people leave, both those whom you love and those who love you. The real pain is never being able to see each other again!”

“I no longer care too much after my master’s death...” South Emperor replied: “That’s good, I suppose. No regrets when it is time to part.”

“Let us not talk about this sad topic.” Li Qiye gently shook his head and smiled while drinking.

South Emperor took a deep breath and bowed like a junior: “For this journey towards the grand dao, Sacred Master, please show this junior the way.”

“How can I refuse if you put it this way? Even without being considerate of Xue Xi, I can’t say no after you have asked, considering your talents.” Li Qiye smiled.

In this undisturbed location, the two of them talked for a long time about many secret matters unknown to the world!

After the talk, Li Qiye smiled and told South Emperor: “I asked the Radiant Bodhisattva earlier, they will open that place soon. If you are interested, you can come take a look. It is absolutely a fun and interesting location.”

“One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil — this is definitely worth taking a look.” South Emperor praised.

Outside of the Rainflower Terrace, many people were waiting for Evil Buddha and South Emperor to reappear. In the present times, these two were the most famous at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. They even overshadowed Jikong Wudi’s group.

“Buzz!” Before the eager crowd, space finally shook and the pavilion reappeared on the terrace. Both Evil Buddha and South Emperor were still sitting there.

Many people held their breaths and were curious about the conversation between the two and whether a battle would occur or not.

However, contrary to their expectations, neither attacked. There were no wounds on either of them. Both had natural expressions, so it didn't seem like they fought at all.

Eventually, they saw South Emperor getting up; he clasped his fist towards Li Qiye before disappearing. As for Evil Buddha, he continued to sit there, drinking his wine.

“They didn't fight at all? Maybe they are acquaintances?” Many people whispered in private.

Someone speculated: “Perhaps Evil Buddha is also an Era Evader?”

Regardless of the speculations, no one bothered Li Qiye during the next several days at the terrace. Outside of Jikong Wudi's group, other people would need to think twice about their own abilities before provoking Evil Buddha.

Li Qiye waited several days at the terrace, but Li Shuangyan's

group didn't come. He gently shook his head and said: "It seems like there is some trouble."

However, he was not worried. Li Shuangyan and the others were quite skilled now; it wouldn't be easy to kill them. If something big had happened, they would have already asked him for help.

He paid for the drinks then left the terrace to enter the streets of the city once more.

The Buddhist City was large. Even if it wasn't the largest in the Barren Earth, it would at least be among the top three. It spanned for tens of thousands of miles with countless temples.

Li Qiye walked along the streets before finally arriving at a huge Buddhist temple. It was quite magnificent with a grand atmosphere.

It was not particularly eye-catching in this city, however. There were many temples that were even more extravagant than this one.

"I want to see Veda Vajra." Li Qiye casually stated outside of the temple.

"Amitabha, Benefactor, the Vajra is not seeing guests." The monk at the door shook his head.

"Amitabha." Li Qiye placed his palms together, causing his

Buddhist light to bloom. He turned into a Buddhist Lord.

The monk couldn't stand straight anymore and immediately prostrated on the ground, kowtowing.

“Please excuse this little monk, I didn't know Bodhisattva was coming.” He bowed three times before going inside to report.

Soon after, the monk came out and placed his palms together to say: “Bodhisattva, the Vajra will see you, please come inside.” With that, he led the way for Li Qiye.

Li Qiye recalled his Buddhist light, making him resemble an ordinary man again, and followed the monk inside the temple.

Eventually, the monk took him to a building and quietly left. Li Qiye gave it a quick glance before entering.

A vast Buddhist aura could be found inside the room, an aura that would drown any newcomer in an ocean of Buddhism. They would instantly have the urge to convert and become a Buddhist themselves after feeling this aura.

Of course, this aura had no effect on Li Qiye. He leisurely walked inside.

Chapter 1038: Vedas Vajra

A Vajra adorned with a monastic robe was sitting inside the room. He exuded a scintillating brilliance as if his body was not made of flesh but was rather a statue cast from gold.

His very long brows were as white as snow. The monk markings on his head were especially conspicuous. Each of them emitted light, like little lanterns.

Li Qiye sat down on a cushion and only smiled while looking at the Vedas Vajra.

The Vajra opened his Buddhist eyes that were as sharp as blades. In the blink of an eye, people could feel his evil-subduing power. His eyes were shiver-inducing; no one would dare to act presumptuously before him.

Alas, this had no effect on Li Qiye; he still sat there leisurely.

“High Monk must be the recently famous Evil Buddha?” The Vajra placed his palms together. Despite his great status, being rude was not part of his nature.

Li Qiye smiled and casually said: “Let them call me what they want. I am here not to talk about the dharma or to debate, I just want something from you.”

The Vajra spoke: “A monk only has the four great tribulations

and a cushion to sit on, nothing else.”

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “I’m not asking about your other possessions. Vedas, I am here for the item that you obtained from the Lesser Deva World.”

The Vajra’s eyes turned sharp for a split second before turning back to normal. He gently shook his head: “I do not know what High Monk is talking about. A monk has nothing besides the tribulations.”

Li Qiye calmly uttered: “Vedas, my patience is limited. I must have that item today.”

The Vedas Vajra didn’t become angry in his refusal: “High Monk, you are making this difficult. I don’t have anything, nor do I know of the item you are talking about!”

“Vedas, I am sitting here talking to you. This means that I do not want to fight. If you don’t hand it over, the consequences will be unimaginable.” Li Qiye spoke.

“High Monk, is that a threat?” Vedas’ eyes turned fierce as he exuded an oppressive aura: “A monk should be free of anger. However, when a Vajra is furious, they shall subdue all evil.”

“Subdue evil?” Li Qiye smiled: “My Vedas, tell me, who is evil here? Letting go of the butcher’s blade to become Buddha? Haha, it’s pretty funny saying it out loud.” He looked at the Vajra and

continued: “Vedas, I almost burst out laughing, hearing you say the words ‘subdue evil’. It doesn’t matter whether you are Vedas Vajra or Vedas Devil right now, I only want to take that item then leave. I don’t want to waste time here.”

“Who are you!” The Vajra stared at Li Qiye with a glare capable of suppressing the hearts of others.

“Who I am is not important. Even if I say it, it will only make you jolt in horror.” Li Qiye said dismissively: “Hand that item over and I’ll pretend that nothing happened. Otherwise, not to mention that you are only a Vajra, even if you were Buddha, I could still banish you to hell!”

“Amitabha, I shall subdue evil today!” With a chilling glare, the Vajra emitted an aura capable of crushing all things. Even if a Godking was here, they would still immediately fall to their knees.

“Vajra, my patience is limited. Brace yourself for the consequences if you don’t comply.” Li Qiye lightly said: “Back when I destroyed your Vedas Kingdom, blood flowed for three years! If you think that was a disaster back then, you haven’t seen anything yet. If I take action now, I will show you a real calamity, I will banish you to hell with no chance of reincarnation!”

“You...” The Vajra stood up with his eyes wide open! A terrifying Buddhist aura erupted as he harshly shouted: “You, you are that devil... the Dark Crow!”

“Devil?” Li Qiye smiled: “Vedas, you are not one that can call me

a devil. Yes, I massacred your kingdom, but if I am a devil, then what are you and those from your kingdom? You weren't even qualified to be called devils. At the very least, I, as a devil, slew all of you openly so that your kind would never rise again!"

"But you all..." Li Qiye glanced at the Vajra dismissively: "All of you are just a bunch of wretched abominations. Your kind drank blood and flay skin for pleasure. You built your kingdom upon the belief that humans were mere ants and treated them as food, using their bones to build your palaces. To tell the truth, Vedas, you don't even have the right to be part of the human race. In my eyes, you are only the lowest of abominations. The human race doesn't have such disgusting creatures as you!"

In an instant, the Vajra's chest was shaking with anger. He was quite emotional despite being a Vajra who had severed all mundane ties! His mood was swinging intensely.

"Dark Crow! You killed my wife and slaughtered my children as well as my entire family!" The Vajra shouted.

"So what?" Li Qiye was too lazy to look at him: "Vedas, I don't care who you are now. Back then when you rampaged across the nine worlds as an invincible Godking, no one dared to touch you. But in my eyes, you were only an ant!"

"That's right, I destroyed your sect and slaughtered all of your family!" Li Qiye calmly said: "I won't say that it was for justice or retribution in the heaven's stead. I will just say that maggots like your kind were not eligible to be included in the human race. Thus, I deemed you an eyesore and killed all of you!"

He paused for a moment and glanced at the furious Vajra: “Vedas, did you really think you managed to escape my grasp? How amusing, you were only a lost dog forced into a corner, crying in despair. Then all of a sudden, you finally wanted to become a good person, throwing away your butcher’s blade and repenting!”

“Isn’t this hilarious, being a devil for your entire life only to suddenly want to become a good person?” Li Qiye coldly glared at the guy: “Are you aware? If the Buddhist Lord didn’t guarantee me that you had truly repented and would never kill again, not even an ant, I would have crucified you down in hell so that you would never reenter samsara. Even the Buddhist Funeral Plateau wouldn’t have been able to protect you!”

After hearing this, the Buddhist light from the Vajra pulsed in an unstable manner. His expression changed unpredictably as he stood there.

Eventually, he sat back down on the Buddhist cushion. He placed his palms together and chanted: “[Shanzai, Shanzai, Oh Merciful Buddha, how sinful...](#)”

Suddenly, his eyes shed tears.

Li Qiye looked at the vajra and spoke: “The Buddhist Funeral Plateau is indeed unfathomable; it even managed to convert an evil heart into a Buddhist heart. It seems like you have repented, so I won’t kill you today.”

The Vajra sat there and continued to chant scriptures over and over again. His pulsing radiance began to stabilize. Once it lit up again, he turned back into a Vajra like before.

“Because the Buddhist Kingdom gave its assurance, I will spare your life.” Li Qiye spoke: “But if you don’t hand that item over, not to mention the kingdom’s assurance, even the high heaven’s assurance won’t do!”

“Amitabha.” The Vajra chanted and finally relaxed. He opened his eyes to say: “High Monk, the thing you desire is no longer in my possession.”

Li Qiye narrowed his eyes and repeated: “Not in your hands?”

The Vajra placed his palms together in response: “A monk does not lie. Veda Devil is dead, so I don’t need to trick you. A few days ago, a young miss from the Eternal River School traded an old item for it.”

“That girl.” Li Qiye knew who it was. He looked at the Vajra and said: “I trust that you wouldn’t dare to lie to me.” He stood up to leave.

“Your Excellency Dark Crow...” When Li Qiye reached the door, the Vajra stood up then kowtowed on the ground.

“What?” Li Qiye looked at him: “Thanking me for sparing you?”

“No, Your Excellency, even dying a hundred times over wouldn’t be enough to atone for my heavy sins.” The Vajra prostrating on the ground spoke: “I thank you for sparing my newborn [great-great-grandson](#) back then.”

Li Qiye answered: “Those who deserve to die were completely killed off, both men and women alike. However, for those who didn’t deserve to die, I wouldn’t bother staining my hands with their blood. I didn’t spare him, he was not guilty from the start.”

“I know that even suicide wouldn’t allow me to redeem myself. After becoming enlightened, I only want to stay and train at the plateau in hopes of saving mortals in agony to make up for my crimes back then.” The Vajra spoke with piety.

“Interesting.” Li Qiye glanced at him: “You left Spirit Mountain as well as your Buddhist heart at the Buddhist Kingdom while they branded you. Truly interesting.”

“I wish to reduce the suffering in this world and bring about kindness and light. Once my beneficence is enough, I want to return to my homeland and spend my final moments there to purify the grievances in that place. Just like you said, I am not qualified to become Buddha.” The Vajra spoke.

“That is your Spirit Mountain’s business. You being able to live for so long and become a Vajra is indicative of your will to change for the better.” Li Qiye spoke insipidly: “I don’t care for the Buddhist Kingdom’s matters. Just keep in mind that Veda’s Devil and Veda’s Kingdom are no more. Otherwise, I will show you what eternal damnation is!”

“Amitabha...” The Vajra’s forehead met the ground: “My sin is immense...”

Li Qiye didn’t say anything else and left the temple.

Remember that one word meaning good/excellent? That is shanzai, but imagine putting excellent in the beginning. It is a bit jarring, so I’ll just use the pinyin here.

Chinese has a word for great-great-grandson, so it flows better in the raws.

Chapter 1039: Seeing Mei Suyao Again

After leaving the temple, Li Qiye went to another part of the city. It seemed to be quite impoverished.

It seemed to be a mortal town without anything special. Li Qiye entered a house with no one trying to stop him.

After taking the first step inside, the scene immediately changed. In this place was a vast realm with bridges and green sceneries that belonged in poems.

His intrusion was met with the eruption of several powerful auras. One of them was even of the God-Monarch level. Without a doubt, this inconspicuous little house had extremely powerful Virtuous Paragons protecting it.

“Immortal Emperor Xiu Shui is truly amazing. Not only did she establish a heavenly grotto here, she also managed to shield it from the Buddhist affinity of the plateau. Such keen insight is truly admirable.” He took his time walking through this place to enjoy it fully.

The powerful auras surged; their owners wanting to attack Li Qiye. However, a voice that resembled an immortal hymn resounded: “He is a guest, do not be rude.”

Li Qiye only smiled and strolled through the place to reach a particular pavilion. It was built in the middle of a lake with a woman sitting on a stone chair. She was looking at the pretty view

of the lake.

Anyone would marvel at the sight of this woman ahead. She was beautiful beyond words. It was not enough to call her a goddess.

Mei Suyao! The woman praised as a goddess in the Mortal Emperor World. She was sitting quietly with an indifferent demeanor, like a fairy detached from this mundane world. She also had this appearance in the past, but the current Mei Suyao was completely different from before.

In the past, her steps were accompanied by visual phenomena like a deity descending to this world. But now, she had returned to the origin and held a simplicity far from striking visuals and hymns of the grand dao. Nevertheless, she was still a goddess removed from the pollution of the world and was about to fuse together with nature.

Her core remained unchanged, but she now used a different attitude to deal with the world, resulting in a different style.

She stood up the moment she saw Li Qiye walk into the pavilion. She looked at him and, with a slightly surprised expression while her forehead flashed with a glimmer, she inquired: “Is it you, Young Noble Li?”

She was not completely sure of this either.

“Not bad, an Immortal Bone is worthy of its prestige. To be able

to see the truth and communicate with true gods.” Li Qiye nodded his head and praised. He revealed his true form and freely sat down on another stone chair.

After seeing his form, Mei Suyao bowed her head gently with a respectful demeanor: “Please excuse me for not personally greeting you.”

He waved his sleeve and interrupted her: “Okay, little girl, there’s no need for cumbersome formalities.”

Goddess Mei Suyao was always the focus of the show regardless of the time and place. Even peerless geniuses like Jikong Wudi’s group would always show their best side in front of her. Only Li Qiye didn’t pay her any mind.

She was not angry and sat down. She poured some tea into a jade cup for him while speaking: “Please have this simple cup of tea.”

He accepted her jade cup and took a sip before commenting freely: “It seems like you have finally understood, this is Immortal Emperor Xiu Shui’s Alaya Heavenly Fragrance Dao.”

“This is thanks to you. In recent years, I was enlightened and spent time meditating before understanding the profundities within.” She spoke with sincerity: “If you didn’t wake me up from my dream, my path would have been even longer.”

Li Qiye smiled and enjoyed his tea as well as the charming beauty

before him. He was relaxed and carefree; everything else became insignificant.

She didn't speak and only quietly kept him company, pouring more tea for him in a demure and natural manner.

He closed his eyes to feel the calm rhythm. After a while, he gently nodded: "Mmm, it is this feeling. You have truly understood the core of the fragrant dao and will be able to enter the heavenly dao. This will be a grand dao that belongs to you, allowing you to eventually embark on one that is unique to yourself."

Mei Suyao subtly [smiled like an apricot](#) bud slowly blossoming. It was quite a scene to behold.

She was neither arrogant nor proud; everything was natural and in accordance with her will.

"May I ask the reason for your visit? This little sister is all ears." She softly asked while pouring more tea.

Li Qiye lazily glanced over and spoke: "Girl, can you confirm that you are here for the ascension of your school's senior?"

She answered his inquiry calmly: "I understand your skepticism. The truth is that I am indeed here for my senior's ascension."

"And then what?" He tasted the tea once more while freely looking at her.

“Young Noble must have met Veda Vajra.” She was extremely smart. At birth, she received a soulbone of the immortal level and was capable of seeing through everything directly to their essence. This was amplified after she truly understood the fragrant dao.

“Mmm...” Li Qiye hummed in agreement. He waited for her to continue.

She went on: “I won’t hide it from Young Noble. The real reason for me coming to the plateau is for the ascension. Obtaining the treasure from Veda Vajra was a spur of the moment idea.”

“What happens next?” He smiled leisurely.

She replied: “I thought that you would surely come to the plateau, and if that was the case, the Lesser Imperial Devil World would open for sure, signaling the appearance of the Nihility Temple. After being guided by my ancestor, I learned the language of this lesser world, so I went to the Vajra to trade for his treasure.”

“Kind of interesting.” Li Qiye laughed: “It seems like an old geezer from your school has finally appeared. What else do you know besides this?”

Mei Suyao looked at him and spoke: “The truth is that I want to know more about you. Your battle at Godwar Mountain made you famous, so my school’s ancestor immediately ran here.”

“Among the old geezers in your school, I know very well that only one of them knows the runes from the Godwar Mountain.”

He narrowed his eyes to stare at her: “What did he say to you?”

“Not much.” She gently shook her head: “I know that the ancestor knows something about you. I am very curious as well, especially about your identity. Unfortunately, the ancestor didn’t want to reveal it.”

“Is that right?” Li Qiye smiled as if he was at home.

She met his gaze in a straightforward and natural manner and spoke without guilt: “I wouldn’t dare to hide it from you.”

After looking into the deepest depths of her eyes for a long time, Li Qiye finally nodded satisfyingly.

“Your school’s old geezer is still not senile. I suppose this wisdom will last forever.” Li Qiye withdrew his gaze and spoke calmly: “Girl, since I am here, I don’t need to say more.”

Mei Suyao took out an old box and slowly handed it over to him: “One half of the treasure is here, please take a look.”

Li Qiye opened it and glanced at the item inside before nodding his head: “Where is the other half?”

“It was taken back by the ancestor.” Mei Suyao calmly answered: “My Immortal Bone still has difficulty understanding this thing, so I asked the ancestor to bring back one half so that the other ancestors could take a look. Maybe they will be able to see through its mysticisms.”

“I have consulted Veda Vajra as well about this issue. He didn’t know either, the only thing he said was that the item is extremely unfathomable.” Mei Suyao told the truth.

“If Veda Vajra could comprehend it, then he wouldn’t be Veda Vajra.” Li Qiye said dismissively: “This thing is connected to an ancient mystery. People who don’t know about the ancient legends would never be able to understand the item’s secrets.”

She asked curiously: “Young Noble is referring to the era before the Desolate Era? The mythical Legendary Era?”

Coming from the Eternal River School, a sect with three emperors, she was an erudite person with few peers. However, she didn’t know if the item came from the Legendary Era.

“It may be even older.” Li Qiye only smiled without saying much.

Mei Suyao was dazed for a moment. In the minds of common cultivators, the Desolate Era was the oldest. She knew about the existence of the Legendary Era that came before it, but what kind of era was even older?

Li Qiye put away the box and said: “I want the whole thing. Half of it is tantamount to trash.”

“Don’t worry, Young Noble. I have sent a message to the ancestors and told the school to immediately bring it to you without delay.” She was very open and agreed right away.

Li Qiye looked at her and chuckled: “Girl, if I didn’t know that you have understood the fragrant dao’s essence, I wouldn’t believe it either. Such a great change in a short period of time, you can even call it a metamorphosis! Before coming, I expected you to make bargains. It seems like I have underestimated you.”

Mei is apricot/plum flower.

Chapter 1040: Mei Suyao's Beauty

“Would any attempt at negotiation be useful?” She smiled wryly and slightly shook her head: “Do I have any room to bargain?”

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile while looking at her to leisurely say: “I'm actually curious, what did the old geezer tell you?”

She smiled without responding like a flower bud on the verge of blossoming. It was of transcendent beauty and boundless charm.

Li Qiye stood up and wanted to leave, but Mei Suyao spoke: “If you don't have a place to stay, you can stay here. Our school is willing to offer our humble abode to you.”

He looked back at her and smiled before sitting down again to say: “Girl, what ideas are you having? What are your plans?”

Mei Suyao chuckled. She spoke in a playful tone: “It seems like you are still cautious of me. I suppose I can't really blame you. It is my fault for being naive back then and leaving you with a bad impression.”

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “Girl, you are a beauty capable of causing disasters. Of course, I understand what the old geezers from your school are thinking. However, [I'm even more curious about your thoughts.](#)”

The alluring beauty smiled in response: “I am not someone who

is unduly humble. Of course, I am not saying that I want to marry you and seek the position of Imperial Queen either. In my mind, I am more than happy to be friends with you; whether it be as a close female friend, a friendship without taking age into consideration, [or just an acquaintance](#).”

Li Qiye stared at her while she directly met his gaze in a frank and natural manner.

“I believe you.” Li Qiye slowly said: “However, your old geezers are counting their chickens before they have hatched.”

“I don’t blame them. As the main descendant, I have the great responsibility to implement a plan of paramount importance for the growth of the school.” She spoke in a serious manner: “The ancestors do hope to arrange a marriage between us, regardless of your identity. In short, he values you much more than me.”

Li Qiye smiled. He knew the old geezer from the school. After he reclaimed the emperor formation, this old man should have guessed his identity. It was understandable that he would try to curry some favor.

“Do you want to marry me?” He directly asked with a smile towards the peerlessly beautiful Mei Suyao.

Her face flushed. She was already pretty enough, but she now became even more enchanting with this shade of red. People would become intoxicated with a single glance.

She smiled and met his eyes to speak frankly: “I trust that you have no lack of women. If I marry you or if you are willing to marry me, I’m afraid the position of wife is not for me to take, am I right?”

“Smart girl.” Li Qiye smiled and didn’t say anything else.

She smiled back to say: “No matter what, I don’t hope to trouble you with this matter. Let it be up to fate, I’m confident that you will have a different view of me in the future.”

“There’s no need to wait for the future.” He looked at her to say: “I have a new view of you now. If, say, you were a smart woman before, then you are definitely a wise woman now.”

“I’m honored to hear such praise.” She was graceful and natural [as she gave him a feminine blessing](#).

Li Qiye was quite pleased. The past was now gone with the wind. He was not a petty person; since Mei Suyao had maintained a humble posture today, it was more than enough to show her sincerity.

“I think you already know, but the people from the Soaring Immortal Sect are coming.” She told him as he was about to leave.

“What level of character?” He nonchalantly asked since he didn’t really care.

The Soaring Immortal Sect was a monstrous behemoth to anyone, no matter who they may be. Anyone would be alarmed after hearing about it.

“I don’t know what will happen in the future, but right now, it is someone of high status, an emissary.” With that, she looked at him with an implicative stare and said: “I heard this emissary has deep ties with the Heavenly God Sect.”

“Deep? What do you mean?” He asked with a smile.

Mei Suyao explained: “Rumor has it that this emissary married the saintess of the Heavenly God Sect when he was younger back in the Difficult Dao Era.”

“A bit interesting.” Li Qiye rubbed his chin amusingly. The Heavenly God Sect and Cleansing Incense used to be mortal enemies. Back then, the Heavenly God Sect defeated Cleansing Incense and took its territory.

Mei Suyao went on: “The current saintess of the Heavenly God Sect is called the Soaring Heavenly Saintess while her aunt is the first wife of this emissary.” She looked at him at this point and added: “A while ago, the young king of the Nantian Clan formed a great relationship with the Soaring Heavenly Saintess as well.”

“I hear you.” Li Qiye smiled and narrowed his eyes: “These old geezers from the Soaring Immortal Sect can’t handle the boredom anymore.”

“There is a chance that the Soaring Immortal Sect might descend in this generation.” She seriously nodded and spoke with gravity: “I heard the sect managed to groom an extremely heaven-defying descendant.”

“The descendants from Soaring Immortal have always been extraordinary.” Li Qiye did not refute this point. For many generations, the sect’s descendants had always been exceptional.

“The ancestors in my sect also received some secret information.” Mei Suyao’s expression turned austere: “They speculate that this descendant’s Immortal Physique is not yet at grand completion, but it might be within a few years.”

Grand Completion Immortal Physique — this was a very heavy topic. Rumor has it that at grand completion, its user could assail an Immortal Emperor. If anyone could reach this level in the contemporary times, it would be quite frightening.

“I see, grand completion.” Li Qiye only smiled and didn’t comment.

Mei Suyao looked at him and continued: “I know Young Noble is unbeatable, but I wonder if I should say one more thing.”

“Go for it.” He gently nodded.

She maintained her austere demeanor: “It doesn’t matter whether you are Evil Buddha or Li Qiye, a few people consider you

to be a thorn in their eyes. Some even invited me to join them to eradicate you for a simpler future. I hope you will be careful.”

“I can count those who are qualified to work together with you with my fingers. Maybe just two are enough.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh.

Mei Suyao chuckled in response. She didn’t say who it was, but any discerning person could figure it out.

“Girl, I won’t take your item without giving something back. Since you have given it to me, I will give you a creation.” Before leaving, he told her: “Before entering the lesser world, come find me. I will point you to the right path.”

“Thank you, Young Noble.” She charmingly bowed: “I speak on behalf of my ancestors when I say: just say the word if you ever need my school for anything. We will assist you at any moment.”

“Your old geezers indeed have a little foresight.” He laughed and left.

Mei Suyao watched him leave then ordered an elder from the school: “Elder, please go back to the school and bring the other half of the treasure here for Young Noble Li as fast as possible.”

The elder acknowledged this command and immediately went to carry it out.

Because Li Shuangyan and the others hadn't come, Li Qiye stayed behind at the Rainflower Terrace again. The moment he arrived, he sent Sikong Toutian a message.

In the shortest amount of time, Sikong Toutian appeared before Li Qiye and immediately spoke: "Boss, you have an order? Is it about the Heavenly God Sect?"

He looked at Sikong Toutian and asked: "Heavenly God Sect? What's going on with them?"

Sikong Toutian answered right away: "Boss, I received a direct message that there has been some friction between Cleansing Incense and Heavenly God. This news has yet to reach the Barren Earth."

"The Heavenly God Sect is quite brave now. They finally can't stay patient anymore." Li Qiye smiled.

"Boss has probably heard about it too. Right now, their backing is even stronger than before. It was the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom back then, and now it's the Soaring Immortal Sect." Sikong Toutian spoke: "Right now, even the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom has to show the Heavenly God Sect some consideration."

"Not to mention the Soaring Immortal Sect hasn't descended yet, even if they did, I still wouldn't give a damn." Li Qiye freely smiled: "They have already started sharpening their blades before Soaring Immortal is even here. Wait until I return to the Grand

Middle Territory, the first thing I will do is destroy their Heavenly God Sect!”

Li Qiye was not worried about Cleansing Incense at this moment. Because of Peng Keng’s group, nothing big should happen.

“Just give me the command and I shall be your vanguard, the first to kill my way into the Heavenly God Sect.” Sikong Toutian smacked his chest loudly three times.

Li Qiye gave him a look: “Will you be there to kill or to grab the treasures? I definitely believe that you will be the first to charge into the Heavenly God Sect. Their treasury, to be specific.”

“Hahaha, Boss, I will be killing and plundering, not stealing!” He didn’t blush at all and spoke with incredibly thick skin.

Li Qiye smiled and didn’t scold him: “This time, I didn’t call you to tell you to go kill the Heavenly God Sect. I want you to do something else.”

“Boss, just say the words. Tell me what you want and I shall carry it out perfectly. You can rest assured when I am the man doing the job.” He smacked his chest loudly again and confidently assured Li Qiye.

Femme fatale, Helen of Troy — these would be the localization for this common idiom.

The last line seems really silly in English, but they are all idioms that flow much better in Chinese. Basically, she is saying that she

is content to be his friend in a flowery manner.

This will be dependent on the era/dynasty, but women have special gestures that they would perform in China. One example is having both hands placed before their chest then a bow. A lot of examples are shown in the period dramas.

Chapter 1041: Soaring Heavenly Saintess

Li Qiye looked at the boasting thief and said: “Okay, stop messing around. This is an important matter.”

Sikong Toutian stopped messing around and solemnly stated: “Boss, don’t worry, I will definitely successfully carry it out.”

Li Qiye asked: “How much time will it take for you to return to the Heaven’s Secret Valley?”

Sikong Toutian immediately responded: “How fast do you want, Boss? I can go as fast as you want.”

“The fastest.” Li Qiye said: “I will give you a deadline of five days, you must return to me. Both ways, got it?”

“Roger, Boss. I’ll give you my assurance that I won’t need five days to do this, just three for both ways.” Sikong Toutian accepted the order.

“Very good, tell the Mortal Monarch to come to me.” Li Qiye commanded.

“Uh, that...” Sikong Toutian was jolted: “Boss, call, call for the Mortal Ancestor? This, this might be a bit difficult.”

Li Qiye looked at him with one eye and said: “Oh? Didn’t you pat

your chest and guarantee me earlier?”

The thief smiled wryly and awkwardly spoke: “Boss, you should know that although this little one does have a bit of status at the valley, His Venerable Mortal Ancestor does not come out anymore. He wouldn’t answer the call of the other ancestors, let alone a junior like me.”

The Mortal Monarch was called the Mortal Ancestor by the disciples of the Heaven’s Secret Valley. He was the most ancient ancestor there, completely unfathomable. It could be said that even the disciples there had never seen him before and had only heard of his prestige.

“Take this.” Li Qiye took out an item and handed it to him: “Take it to the Mortal Monarch and show it to him. Tell him to come see me right away without error.”

He accepted the item that seemed quite normal. However, after hearing Li Qiye, his mind trembled a bit.

The Mortal Monarch was a grand character, yet Li Qiye was speaking with a commanding tone. How could he not be shocked by this?

He didn’t dare to waste words and carefully put away the item. He clasped his fists and said: “Boss, I got it. I shall return within three days.” With that, he turned and left.

After his departure, Li Qiye took out the old box he received from Mei Suyao. He took out the item inside for a careful look.

This item was completely fragmented and seemed to have been put together by someone, but the person failed to do so perfectly.

These bits and pieces were only one half of the entire thing. Only when they were perfectly combined with the other half would it be complete again.

In the past, Veda Vajra obtained it from the Lesser Imperial Devil World by complete accident. Li Qiye knew about it a long time ago, but he didn't expect the Vajra to be so lucky to actually get it.

After looking at the pieces, he began to stitch. Of course, he wasn't stitching with fabric and threads but rather extremely tiny strings of universal laws.

It was a meticulous and long process, not to mention being extremely difficult. Each universal law combined and intertwined only to increase the process's difficulty as time went on. It didn't only involve the mysteries of the grand dao but also a secret from the ancient era. There were totems here that the world had never seen before.

Li Qiye locked himself in the room like a seamstress busy at work. Meanwhile, the Buddhist City became quite lively since two pieces of news had spread out.

The first was from an unknown source. Some people believed it came from Spirit Mountain.

“Did you hear? Nalanda wants to open the Evil Den.” After this news came out, many people immediately told their friends and seniors.

“Evil Den? Isn’t it that fiendish world of the legends? The place known as the Lesser Imperial Devil World?” A cultivator heard this from his friend and immediately became excited.

This was a cause for excitement because many people knew that Nalanda opening the Lesser Imperial Devil World was a rare opportunity.

“When Nalanda opens its Buddhist gates, the lesser world will be there as well.” An old paragon commented: “What’s truly interesting is why a powerful existence like Spirit Mountain would allow the Lesser Imperial Devil World to exist. Why is it that they want to open the lesser world every generation?”

The older generation that had lived for a long time found it quite strange due to Nalanda’s stance on the lesser world.

The second piece of news quietly spread after this one.

“I heard people from the Soaring Immortal Sect are about to enter the Mortal Emperor World.” Many sects and cultivators discussed this secret message.

Many people, including even ancestors, quivered after hearing this.

An ancestor couldn't help but murmur: "Is the Soaring Immortal Sect really coming? It's the only giant in the nine worlds that can control each generation."

It was the only sect with five emperors in the nine worlds. Legend states that among the river of time, it had controlled many generations of the nine worlds. It had left its mark in history across time itself.

"I heard the sect has not appeared for at least three generations, the era of the Black Dragon King. But now, its sudden appearance... don't tell me it wants to groom the next successor to the throne?" A few ancestors discussed it within their group.

In fact, anyone would be alarmed after coming up with this possibility because if the sect truly groomed a successor, no one in the contemporary would be able to compete with them.

"Is a lineage with six emperors about to appear?" An ancestor absent-mindedly mumbled after thinking about it.

"Is it true that the Soaring Immortal Sect is coming to the Mortal Emperor World?" Many people didn't believe this because it hadn't shown itself for three generations.

A well-informed person clarified some points: “It’s not certain for now, but an emissary is coming. I heard he went to the Heavenly God Sect already. Also, I heard that the Soaring Heavenly Saintess has arrived at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.”

Sure enough, on the same day, a rainbow swept over the sky. A golden vessel emerged right outside of the Buddhist City and poured down an auspicious light.

It made no effort to constrain its overbearing brilliance. It came into the city with great fanfare and zero restraint.

On top of the vessel was a gorgeous woman. She wore a golden robe, making her seem like a golden phoenix perched on a branch. Her brows held an air of arrogance, as if she sat on top of the world.

Several old men stood right behind her. They emitted a terrifying aura, making it clear that they were paragons that had entered the path of the grand era.

“The Soaring Heavenly Saintess is here.” Someone cried out after seeing the woman on the ship.

Many in the city quickly came out to greet her. Among them were leaders and tyrants; there were even Virtuous Paragons from the previous generation.

At this time, even though Jikong Wudi’s group of geniuses didn’t

personally come out to receive her, they still sent their followers to greet her.

“Even Jikong Wudi’s group sent disciples to see her, she is quite renowned.” Someone was surprised to see this scene.

However, others were full of disdain, especially the young geniuses. One of them sneered: “Hmph, this Soaring Heavenly Saintess, her talents aren’t that bad and can even be considered a genius, but she is still far from being a true genius. Just her alone isn’t qualified for this grand act. She is simply borrowing the prestige of her backers!”

“Shh, quiet down.” His friend immediately stopped him and whispered: “Though the Heavenly God Sect and this saintess might not be all that powerful, no one can mess with her right now. Her aunt married the emissary and she is partially considered a disciple from the Soaring Immortal Sect. Rumor has it that this emissary wants to take her in as a disciple as well! In the future, she will be part of that sect.”

“Hmph, then how is she not a fox borrowing the tiger’s might?!” The genius saw her pompous attitude while accepting the reception from the sects and big shots. He became very annoyed and sneered.

“We’ll just keep this between us.” The friend warned him: “I know you’re not convinced, but who can provoke the Soaring Immortal Sect? Plus, if she truly joins the sect, she will become a God-Monarch or even a Godking sooner or later with her talents after being taught by the masters there! So, even if you don’t like

her, don't say it in public lest you offend her. It would be the same as courting death! No one will risk antagonizing the Soaring Immortal Sect to protect you. Your master might be the first one to punish you, got it?"

Despite his grievance and disdain towards the saintess, the genius didn't dare to say anything else.

The saintness receiving the grand reception of the other sects and Jikong Wudi's group made many people envious.

Someone spoke with envy: "It's so nice to be able to hug the Soaring Immortal Sect's thighs, just like a carp leaping over the dragon gate and flying to the nine heavens."

Chapter 1042: The Mortal Monarch

Li Qiye continued this embroidery process for two days and three nights before finally doing a good job of sewing the laws together. Looking at the flashing totems in his hand, Li Qiye couldn't help but chuckle. After struggling for so many years, an unknown era had disappeared without anyone knowing.

Even though Sikong Toutian was a carefree fella, he didn't dare to do a sloppy job on a task given by Li Qiye. On the third day, he finally returned. However, he was obediently standing behind someone at this time.

The person entered Li Qiye's abode and instantly began inspecting him from top to bottom carefully. It was more accurate to call this person an iron statue, other than his head, the rest of his body was made out of an unknown material.

His body emitted a faint silver luster and the cold air of metal. Even though there were all type of races in this world such as golems and demons, this iron man might be one of a kind.

He was not cast from a particular piece of metal. To be precise, his body was formed from the combination of many exquisite parts.

For example, Li Qiye's Brave Tiger Legion was formed by pouring metal into the same mold. However, this iron man was not created by that process but rather assembled in a sophisticated process beyond imagination.

However, his head was clearly that of a normal person. Judging from his gray hair and beard, he was a man whose age was too old to be determined. Even though his eyes were muddled, there were flashing starry glimmers in their depths with wavy nebulae. Anyone who stared in his eyes would definitely be shocked, for they would come to realize his terrifying power.

“Your Excellency...” After taking a good look, the iron man prostrated on the ground with great emotion: “Your Excellency, it really is you!” Excitement was plastered all over his face.

Even though his iron body had turned cold, at this very second, he couldn’t control his emotions.

His actions frightened the soul out of Sikong Toutian. He was an obedient child before the iron man and didn’t even know where to put his hands.

However, this untouchable Mortal Ancestor in his mind was actually calling Li Qiye “Your Excellency”, so how could he not be scared out of his mind?

The iron man was the oldest ancestor in the Mortal King Palace of their Heaven’s Secret Valley. He was a supreme existence; many disciples never even had the chance to see him. But now, their valley’s ancestor actually prostrated before Li Qiye, leaving Sikong Toutian in complete astonishment.

Li Qiye propped the Mortal Monarch up and smiled: “I’m very

happy to be able to see you.”

The Mortal Monarch stood up. His decrepit face revealed a touching smile. At this time, he gently waved his sleeve. Sikong Toutian didn't say anything and quietly left.

“I didn't think I would be able to meet Your Excellency again. I thought I would die of old age at the Mortal King Palace.” He smiled.

Li Qiye laughed in response: “With your advantages, as long as the valley has sufficient Blood Era Stones, you will be able to live for a long time. I didn't want to disturb you in this generation. After all, it isn't easy to seal you once more...”

“What are you saying, Your Excellency?” He quickly interjected: “My life was given to me by you. Without you, I would only be a pile of scrap iron in the darkness, trying to hold onto my last breath. If you didn't defy the heavens to prolong my life, the me of today wouldn't exist, and neither would the Heaven's Secret Valley.”

Very few people in the present times knew about an existence like the Mortal Monarch, and even fewer knew about a lineage like the valley.

A very long time ago, the monarch was a man made out of iron. During that period, he was broken into little tiny pieces. As he put it, a pile of scrap metal with feeble vitality. Later on, he met Li Qiye. Li Qiye spent countless efforts and finally saved his life and

prolonged it.

He was not a human or a demon, not even any of the other races of this world. His origin traced back to a very archaic era. However, the monarch himself knew very little about his own era because he was exiled into the shadows in his youth and had always been sealed. It wasn't until later when he met Li Qiye that he able to see the light of day!

As for that distant era, it had been annihilated long ago and no longer existed.

“No matter what, you have managed to pass down your craft.” Li Qiye patted his shoulder and smiled: “Your valley’s mechanical prowess can be considered the best in the nine worlds.”

The monarch shook his head and said: “Your Excellency is teasing me, it is only a minor trick, it’s not enough to get into your eyes.”

“No, I actually do need this skill of yours this time.” Li Qiye smiled: “I have an item. If I do it myself, I will need a very long time to finish, but time does not wait for me, which is why I specifically called for you.”

With that, Li Qiye took out the old box and handed it to him. Inside were the scattered parts that were extremely delicate.

The monarch was instantly attracted like a master-level artist

immersing himself in an unparalleled work of art.

After a good look, he lifted his head in shock: “Your Excellency, this is...”

With that, he took a deep breath to calm himself: “This, this can only be from that era.”

“Yes, only in that era can you find this. To be precise, I want to go to a certain place in the Lesser Imperial Devil World.” Li Qiye nodded.

“Your Excellency has finally found it?” Even an existence that had lived for so long like him became emotional.

“I’m not sure how I will face it. I have thought about this matter for a very long time, so I am fairly confident.” Li Qiye told the monarch: “Do you want to go take a look? Perhaps this will let you understand that era better.”

The monarch pondered for a long time. Eventually, he smiled wryly and said: “I know very little about that era. Some of the things I know were taught by you and the legends from your tales. That era has vanished. I belong in the present, not that destroyed past.”

“Really, I have so many children and grandchildren now, what is there in the past for me to yearn for?” He smiled and shook his head: “Just let the past go. I won’t try to search for it since I am

very satisfied with the present. Tracing my origin is no longer a priority of mine.”

“I understand.” Li Qiye gently patted his shoulder again. He watched over the Mortal Monarch all this time, how could he not understand him?

At this time, the monarch took another look at the item inside the box before speaking: “Your Excellency, this thing is not complete, it must be missing another half.”

“I know, the other half is with the Eternal River School. They should have it here within the next two days.” Li Qiye said: “I want you to get it ready as soon as possible. In my opinion, Nalanda will release the Lesser Imperial Devil World in the next several days.”

The lesser world had always been sealed by Nalanda. Although they would open it in each generation their Buddhist gates opened, they would normally wait for a very long time before doing so.

However, Li Qiye came to Spirit Mountain this time and asked the Radiant Bodhisattva to open it early since there was something he needed inside!

“Hmm, I’m afraid this is difficult for me as well.” The monarch stared at the item and said: “Your Excellency, this thing is of the utmost importance and relates to the totems of that era. I can’t prepare it well in a short amount of time, I have to understand these totems first before knowing their derivations and transformations.”

“I don’t have many memories about these totems, so if I wanted to complete it, I would need a very long time.” The monarch was ashamed to say: “I’m afraid you will be disappointed.”

“You don’t have to worry about that.” Li Qiye smiled: “I have prepared the totems for you.”

With that, he took out the totems that he had been sewing for the last two days.

Seeing the animated totems before him, the monarch became startled and stared at them in disbelief: “Your Excellency, this, where did you get them from?”

“I made it.” Li Qiye smiled: “I didn’t live all of these years for nothing. After reading many ancient scrolls, I finally understood a few things from that era. Later on, I went through numerous images so I was able to derive them into these totems. Because there isn’t a real one in our possession right now, I had to make them myself.”

“Everything should be easy with this.” The monarch became excited and spoke: “Don’t worry, Your Excellency, I will prepare this for you to the best of my ability!”

“I believe in your ability.” Li Qiye gently nodded: “As long as the Eternal River School brings the other half here, we’ll have plenty of time.”

In the end, the monarch had to ask: “Your Excellency is entering the Lesser Imperial Devil World for that item in the legends?”

“Not just for that item.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “I want to know exactly what went on at the very end of time, it will be a good reference point for me. Of course, if that item is still there, then nothing could be better. But if it’s not, I won’t force the issue.”

The monarch softly sighed and didn’t say anything else. He began his task.

Li Qiye didn’t bother him and left the room.

Outside, Sikong Toutian stood on guard. After seeing Li Qiye, he felt quite awkward and didn’t know what to do with his hands.

“My relationship with the monarch is separate from my relationship with you.” Li Qiye laughed: “Just act like before.”

After hearing this, Sikong Toutian finally heaved a sigh of relief.

Chapter 1043: Lesser Imperial Devil World's Appearance

Mei Suyao didn't let Li Qiye down. The Eternal River School quickly brought the other half over. After obtaining this half, the Mortal Monarch's pace of assembly quickened.

At the same time, Li Qiye was meditating with his eyes closed. It seemed that his soul had left his body and was wandering around the vast Buddhist Funeral Plateau.

In his vision, there were no mountains and rivers nor temples and cities. No living creatures were to be found, only the Buddhist aura and rhythm was present.

There was no end to the vast Buddhist sea. Anyone would be lost inside without turning back. It was just like Li Qiye's phrase: "[The Buddhist sea is boundless, turn back to see the shore.](#)"

There was no way out of this endless sea once one stepped inside, unless there was a guiding beacon.

His soul had left his body with the protection of his true fate. Li Qiye traveled in this vast sea and murmured quietly to himself: "This is the true form of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau!"

Anyone who entered this boundless Buddhist sea would feel a fatal attraction. It could suck in any beliefs and thoughts. In this process, one's thoughts and beliefs would be changed into the

purest Buddhist affinity.

It was a frightening situation. Imagine, it didn't matter whether one was a devil or a different existence; it didn't matter whether their faith lied in the Blood race or the humans. Once their souls left their bodies to enter this Buddhist sea, they would immediately be converted to Buddhism.

Under such circumstances, it was essential for one's blood energy to protect the flesh while the true fate protected the soul. Otherwise, one would immediately become a monk, a disciple of Spirit Mountain.

“How many actually know about the secret of Spirit Mountain's everlastingness?” His soul that was traveling in this sea thought to himself.

The eternal life at Spirit Mountain had always been a secret. Although the eighteen temples couldn't grant true eternal life, as long as one joined the Buddhist faith and become converted by the mountain, they could live for a very long time. After ascending to the Buddhist Kingdom, it would really be the eternal life of the legends.

In this process, anyone who was converted or did so out of their own will — including ascension — had one thing in common: their blood energy was withered and lifespan exhausted. They gave up their physical bodies to transform into a Buddhist being for eternal life.

For other living beings and cultivators, those were signs of death, but at Spirit Mountain, it had become a symbol of rebirth.

The fatal attraction tried to suck in Li Qiye's soul that was traveling towards the center of the Buddhist sea. It was not rough; on the contrary, gentleness was its essence, like the embrace of a mother. It made people reminisce and yearn for it...

Li Qiye was unmoved in the face of this temptation. His soul continued towards the center. The ocean-like Buddhist law continued to wash his soul, trying to cross it over to the Buddhist gate.

"I am Buddha, my will is the Buddhist law; where I tread is the land of Buddhism." His soul spewed out a mantra to suppress the laws that wanted to cross him over. A grand path emerged among this vast sea as it failed to convert him.

After creating this path, Li Qiye walked for a long time before reaching the center. A Buddhist tidal wave of endless height soared in the sky. In this place, the ocean actually flowed into the sky.

At the deepest recesses above, a hazy figure could be seen. A supreme Buddhist Lord was sitting there. In this place, he derived the boundless Buddhist Kingdom. Here, he was the master of the universe!

It was of unparalleled grandeur. Countless people would instantly prostrate before a Buddhist Lord of this level and immediately join Buddhism. His Buddhist power was great to the

point where it could convert a Godking in the blink of an eye!

Li Qiye's soul was finally effected at this point; it trembled and flickered. Li Qiye scowled and fortified his will in order to suppress this urge. His invincible dao heart quickly took control of this Buddhist conversion.

While looking at the faint figure in the sky, he murmured: "Continuing to convert from one generation to the next, I would like to see the day when you take action. Don't let me take the initiative or you won't have the chance anymore."

The faint Buddhist figure in the distance didn't show any movement. He sat there in that place as if it was everlasting and forever unchanging! This appeared to be true eternal life.

After a quick glance, Li Qiye didn't say anything else and turned around to leave this Buddhist sea. After his soul departed the sea, his body suddenly moved inside the room. Next, he slowly opened his eyes and murmured: "Buddhist Funeral Plateau, one thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil!"

"Amitabha—" At this time, a Buddhist chant suddenly emanated from Spirit Mountain and echoed across the entire plateau. Countless living beings in this area were alarmed.

An endless Buddhist light shot to the ends of the sky. Many people rushed out in order to figure out what was going on.

At this second, a terrifying phenomenon occurred. A new world emerged from every nook and cranny in the plateau.

This world had majestic rolling hills covered in a Buddhist brilliance. No one could see it too well. However, one could faintly see that there were cities and all sorts of buildings inside this world, not to mention flying creatures and beasts and other living beings.

The all-encompassing light made it difficult to see the whole picture. Nevertheless, one thing was easily discernable in this ethereal world — a Buddhist temple, the fortress of this world.

It was not majestic and could even be said to be very old. However, it seemed to guard this world.

Upon the world's emergence, the vast energy across the plateau poured into this temple. After absorbing the Buddhist aura, the temple became even more powerful as it continued to suppress all else.

This world seemed to exist alongside the plateau. As many people tried to touch it, nothing was there, as if it was only an illusion.

“The Evil Den appears.” People rushed out and saw this world.

“Lesser Imperial Devil World, Spirit Mountain finally released it.” An older cultivator emotionally murmured.

“Go fast, find the entrance. The person who seizes the Buddhist lotus will obtain a great fortune.” An experienced Virtuous Paragon immediately brought his juniors out of the Buddhist City.

A sect master muttered: “Devil World, maybe this is the reason why the plateau is listed among the twelve Burial Grounds.”

This world ahead had many names. Some called it the Evil Den while others preferred Devil World. However, the most popular name was the Lesser Imperial Devil World.

Legend states that it was sealed by Spirit Mountain. Without its approval, it would never appear. However, Spirit Mountain would release it each generation.

Li Qiye came out of his room at this time as well and looked up to see the emerging world. He revealed a faint smile: “Lesser Imperial Devil World, I’m coming, are you ready?”

Sikong Toutian had been guarding the door the whole time, but he kept up with his intelligence gathering. He saw the emerging world and asked Li Qiye: “Many people are going to try to grab the lotus. Are you going too, Boss?”

“Yes.” Li Qiye smiled as his gaze fell upon the temple in the lesser world. It seemed that this temple greatly attracted him, like a lover captivating his glance.

“Nihility Temple.” Sikong Toutian commented after seeing Li

Qiye's stare: "Legend states that it is the scariest temple, even more frightening than Nalanda."

Li Qiye laughed and looked at the guy: "It seems like you know quite a few things."

Even if many had heard of the name Nihility, very few truly understood it. Everyone was more familiar with the eighteen temples and Nalanda. The Nihility Temple remained a mystery to most.

"Haha, I've heard from the seniors in the valley." Sikong Toutian rubbed his palms together and smiled: "If Boss won't make fun of me for showing off, then I'll tell you."

Li Qiye chuckled: "It's fine, go for it."

Sikong Toutian looked over at Nihility and swallowed some saliva as if he was looking at a nice piece of braized pork.

"Okay, don't have any ideas about it. With just you? You're not qualified to even go up there, let alone think about stealing from there. The Mortal Monarch wouldn't have trouble going up there, but you aren't capable for now." Li Qiye smilingly said.

Sikong Toutian chuckled awkwardly. He scratched his head in response: "This little one knows that too. My meager skill can't allow me to go up there. I heard that the people who have been up there before were practically all Immortal Emperors."

“Not necessarily just emperors. Powerful Godkings and True Gods can go as well.” Li Qiye stared at the temple as his eyes became quite profound: “No matter who it is, that place is indeed worth visiting at least once.”

It means the mundane world is an endless sea of pain, only enlightenment would lead to salvation. Even the most heinous sinner could have a way out by repenting.

Chapter 1044: The Legendary Lesser Imperial Devil World

Despite not knowing how to get up there, Sikong Toutian still swallowed his saliva greedily while looking at the Nihility Temple. He said: “I heard Immortal Emperor Fei Yang went there once and even took a stone Buddha statue away. Is that true?”

“About that, what else does the legend say about it?” Li Qiye asked with a grin.

Sikong Toutian went on: “Rumor has it that the emperor went there and was so eloquent that he managed to take away a stone statue willingly. It left the Nihility Temple and the Buddhist Funeral Plateau to go with him.”

Li Qiye smiled: “This legend can be considered true. However, there are a few minor details unknown to the world.”

Sikong Toutian immediately became spirited and asked: “What kind of details?”

Li Qiye answered with amusement: “There was a secret. Immortal Emperor Fei Yang indeed won. However, he didn’t bet on the ultimate gamble. To be precise, he only tricked a stone statue to leave with him. But nevertheless, the emperor was indeed amazing, using just his [3-inch tongue](#) in order to take that statue. This could absolutely be praised as one of the greatest achievements of his life.”

“I have heard about it before.” Sikong Toutian was startled: “Legend states that there is an extremely heaven-defying item in the Nihility Temple that even Immortal Emperors coveted. The ancestors have talked about the ultimate gamble before; Immortal Emperor Hao Hai was someone who took the wager.”

Li Qiye gently nodded: “Immortal Emperor Hao Hai was indeed brilliant. Across the eons, even if he was weaker than Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng or Immortal Emperor Fei, his brilliance is comparable to Immortal Emperor Fei Yang.”

“In those days, the emperor really did enter the Nihility Temple to make the challenge and participate in the ultimate gamble. Unfortunately, he was not the victor.” Li Qiye stared profoundly at the temple and slowly recalled the past: “Nevertheless, the emperor proved himself to be extraordinary. In the end, he left the temple with an invincible momentum. It could be said that one couldn’t leave unscathed after participating in this gamble, it was truly difficult even for emperors.”

“Pretty amazing.” Sikong Toutian’s blood was boiling. He excitedly rubbed his palms together at the thought of a gamble of the emperor level. This was taking it to the limit and prompted him to say: “The ancestors told me some more. Later on, Immortal Emperor Hao Hai never dared to enter the Buddhist Funeral Plateau again for the rest of his life.”

“You can put it that way. Even if he wanted to, he couldn’t return.” Li Qiye spoke: “However, even if he could, it wouldn’t be a good thing for him. That event casted a shadow over his mind, so

he didn't wish to go back.”

“Just who are the people in the Nihility Temple? How are they able to make an emperor never want to return to the plateau? To make them not even dare to take half a step inside?” Sikong Toutian was amazed and murmured in awe.

“No, not people, just one item.” Li Qiye muttered: “It’s just as you have said, an item coveted even by emperors.”

“Is it located in the temple itself?” Sikong Toutian began to salivate again like a little thief looking at a supreme treasure.

“Yes and no.” Li Qiye answered: “The pot isn’t in the Nihility Temple. However, in order to see it, one must go through the temple. The temple is the key.”

“It must be an immortal pot.” Sikong Toutian swallowed hard and smirked: “If I could just touch this kind of immortal pot, my life would be fulfilled.”

“You touching it?” Li Qiye glanced at him and lightly said: “Without considering whether you can get up there or not, even if you could, this doesn’t guarantee a chance of seeing the broken pot. Now let’s assume that you could see the pot. Not to mention touching, if you just looked at it a bit, heh...” Li Qiye laughed deviously at this point.

“What will happen?” Sikong Toutian felt an itch and had to ask:

“Will I die just by looking at the immortal pot for a bit?”

Li Qiye smiled: “You won’t die, it would just be a fate worse than death! Not just anyone can touch this thing; it is a double-edged sword. If you can control it, then it can grant you everything. If not, then it will suck you dry! At that point, death will no longer seem scary and instead be a sweet relief! The worst part is that you won’t be able to die even if you wanted to. Not only that, your incessant torture will last for a very, very long time!”

Sikong Toutian shivered and added: “Just like being condemned to hell with zero chance of reincarnation?”

Li Qiye didn’t answer him. He looked into the distance and spoke: “The lotus is coming out, so it is time for me to take action.”

Sikong Toutian quickly patted his chest and said: “Boss, I will stay back to watch over the place.”

Li Qiye nodded and stepped into the sky, instantly disappearing in the horizon; he headed for Spirit Mountain.

“The Buddhist lotus is about to come out.” In fact, this news was spread all over the plateau around this time. Many people were searching for it.

At first, the younger generation didn’t know what it was. However, after being told by their seniors, they immediately went to find the lotus.

Whenever the Lesser Imperial Devil World opens, a Buddhist lotus would appear. It had a great effect in the lesser world, so everyone wanted to have it.

Not far from Spirit Mountain was a withered valley. Not long ago, the entire place had sunk. However, it was now a welcoming golden spring.

“Splashh!” Golden spring water oozed from the valley. In just a short period of time, the valley turned into a large lake. Under the sunlight, the water that was already golden became even more dazzling.

In just half a day, countless experts rushed to this place. This was because they predicted the lotus, as well as the entrance to the Lesser Imperial Devil World, would appear here.

In a short moment, both the sky and ground surrounding this lake filled with people. Blood energy was surging everywhere. Both young and old were crowding here.

In the four directions, some stood alone in the sky while others used huge vessels to make space. The strong ones took up a peak all by themselves while the cool ones sat under the shade of the trees...

In this place were many experts, including Heavenly Kings and Virtuous Paragons. Naturally, the famous geniuses wouldn't miss this for anything.

Jikong Wudi, Heavenly Emperor Lin, Zhan Shi, and the Jewel Pillar Mortal King were all here. It could be said that they were the first to get here. Even Bing Yuxia came to play. Seated on her divine chariot while adorned with male attire, she looked around and said: “It seems like I’m not late.”

She took up a spot, but others didn’t dare to compete with her.

The group of geniuses all had their own territories. Other experts, both young and old, weren’t willing to fight them for it.

Among these geniuses, one would naturally become the Immortal Emperor in the future, so no one wanted to offend them. Not to mention, the powers behind them were quite powerful as well!

The undercurrents of both the lake and atmosphere simmered. There were a few powerful paragons here as well as a few God-Monarchs unwilling to show their faces.

Some of these paragons had already embarked on the path of the grand era. They wanted to seize the lotus as well. However, Jikong Wudi’s group was not afraid of the old paragons since they were well prepared.

Many noticed their confidence and couldn’t help but tremble. This meant that the group of geniuses had powerful dao protectors present as well.

In terms of cultivation, this young group couldn't necessarily compete with older paragons, especially the grand era paragons and God-Monarchs. However, their secret dao protectors were dreadful to just about anyone, including God-Monarchs.

“We're missing Goddess Mei and Bai Jianzhen.” Someone murmured after looking at the young group.

“If Goddess Mei and Bai Jianzhen come, then all the young people most qualified to become the emperor in the Mortal Emperor World will have gathered here.” Even the older generation had to admit this.

“There's Evil Buddha as well.” Another blurted out.

At this time, someone shouted: “Evil Buddha is here!” People looked around and sure enough, Evil Buddha was flying here. Below his feet was an auspicious cloud, giving him the appearance of a Buddhist Lord that had ascended.

Li Qiye landed on a peak with many eyes on him. Recently, his reputation was sky-high and had even overshadowed Jikong Wudi's group.

The Mortal King was giving him a particularly cold glare. However, he was surprisingly able to contain himself this time and didn't make a move.

“The battle is about to begin.” Some people smelled blood with

this gathering. They left the large lake to avoid being involved.

Even under the prying eyes of so many, Li Qiye remained calm as he stood alone while looking at the glittering golden lake with a faint smile on his face.

Chapter 1045: Venerable Dry Peak

“The Sword Goddess is here...” Not long after Li Qiye’s arrival, someone shouted and drew a lot of attention.

In the present times, only Bai Jianzhen was qualified to have the title of Sword Goddess. She came holding her sword and had returned to the origin. No one dared to block her path as she walked forth; the spectators quickly made way.

In terms of battle records, she was not as illustrious as the Mortal King since he challenged everyone. As for prestige, she was lesser than Jikong Wudi; he had a triple saint aptitude and was untouchable. However, she was still quite dreadful in her own right.

There was a saying: when the mad sword comes out, meet god slay god, meet devil slay devil. No one wanted to test her fury because people said that it was quite horrifying. She even chased the Mortal King around. With nowhere to hide, he struggled to escape alive from the battle.

After coming here, she simply coldly glanced around and didn’t care for the group. She sat down next to a tree.

All the strong cultivators were gathered here. Suddenly, the atmosphere became heavy to the max. Everyone understood that a bloodbath was absolutely unavoidable.

Bing Yuxia looked around and said with a smile: “The lotus

hasn't come out yet, so does anyone want to fight first?"

However, no one took her up on it. The arrogant Jikong Wudi remained standing there. Lin Tiandi was still carefree and cool. Zhan Shi had no response, and the Mortal King was as immovable as a peak.

"How boring." Bing Yuxia saw the group staying patient and knew that she wouldn't be able to fight until the lotus appeared. She was too lazy to look at them, so her eyes fell upon Li Qiye instead.

At this moment, he was Chu Yuntian, so she naturally couldn't recognize him. However, for some unknown reason, she felt that this Evil Buddha gave quite a familiar sensation. It was just that she couldn't put her finger on it.

She felt that she had met him before but couldn't recall the exact time.

"The current world is the playground of the young." An old sect master gently sighed while looking at the geniuses lording over their respective territories. He chose not to compete for the lotus and retreated to the horizon to watch instead.

Despite their past feuds, the group remained calm and waited for the lotus flower's appearance.

The tense atmosphere permeated this entire area. At the same

time, an old man flew here and took a look around before focusing on the lake.

This old man exuded the aura of a paragon. It was quite oppressive. Moreover, he came with great fanfare, as if he was not afraid of antagonizing others.

“Venerable Dry Peak.” Someone recognized his identity and murmured: “I didn’t think someone of his status would actually work under the Soaring Heavenly Saintess.”

It turned out that this old man was a famous Virtuous Paragon. He was from a big sect and many people called him Venerable Dry Peak.

As a paragon, he shouldn’t have joined the banner of a junior, especially one like the saintess since she couldn’t compare to Jikong Wudi’s group. However, he actually went against the norm because he wanted to use the emissary behind the saintness to join the Soaring Immortal Sect. He wished to become an external [disciple](#) to pave the way for his sect in the future.

No one wanted to speak out against the venerable’s attitude, including the young geniuses. With their status and strength, they simply didn’t care for the saintess. However, they didn’t want to provoke the Soaring Immortal Sect behind her.

After all, it would be unwise for those who aspired to become an Immortal Emperor to oppose the Soaring Immortal Sect.

The venerable came to scout for the saintess. After glancing around, he knew the Buddhist lotus had yet to appear and was about to leave. However, he suddenly saw Evil Buddha.

“You are that Evil Buddha.” He went before Li Qiye and coldly stared at him.

The venerable’s aggressive maneuver against Li Qiye made the crowd look around at each other. Someone murmured: “The storm is finally brewing.”

Li Qiye smiled and replied: “That is what people call me.”

The venerable fiercely shouted: “You are the one who used evil arts to kill the Nantian Young King’s people!”

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “That would seem to be the case.”

Li Qiye acting as if he didn’t care at all left the venerable angry. He coldly stared at Li Qiye and raised his voice: “Monk, you are a Buddhist practitioner, so you shouldn’t involve yourself with mundane feuds. It is not too late to resolve this grievance; otherwise, even if you sever mortal ties, you still won’t have anywhere to go.”

Many people held their breaths after hearing this. They knew that the Nantian Young King was working for the Soaring Heavenly Saintess and was killed by Evil Buddha. The saintess absolutely wouldn’t let this go. Otherwise, how could she establish

her prestige in the Mortal Emperor World?

“Oh, so you are saying that this grievance is resolvable.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh.

The venerable coldly uttered: “If you come with me now and kneel and beg for forgiveness before the saintess, then perhaps she will spare your life and show mercy. Otherwise...” At this point, he snorted with contempt.

“Otherwise what?” Li Qiye chuckled.

The venerable immediately snapped: “Otherwise, there will be no place for you in this world even if you leave the mundane realm! I’ll break your legs right now and drag you to see the saintess.”

“So you are saying that you are confident in being able to break my legs.” Li Qiye laughed in response.

Everyone was watching since they wanted to see Evil Buddha’s dharma.

“Monk, although your dharma might be peerless, you can’t rely on Buddhism while traveling in this world. Obediently comply or I’ll have to be forceful.” The venerable had heard of how the young king died. However, he didn’t pay it any mind. He felt that the young king was too weak and that his dao heart was not firm, so he was confused by the dharma. This kind of junior was too useless.

“Amitabha.” Li Qiye placed his palms together. In an instant, boundless Buddhist lights blossomed from his body and illuminated all four directions.

At this time, Buddhist hymns descended and gave birth to golden lotuses all over the sky. This powerful rhythm moved the entire Buddhist Funeral Plateau as Li Qiye turned into a Buddhist Lord.

“Go!” Many felt uneasy the moment Li Qiye began his chant. They didn’t want to be anywhere close to him lest his dharma control them.

Venerable Dry Peak was instantly submerged in the endless light. Under its powerful rhythm, his body froze and was drowned in the Buddhist sea. Despite being a Virtuous Paragon, he lost control over himself in this ocean and was instantly converted.

“Evil with grave sins should be exterminated!” Li Qiye continued on spewing out mantras. His decree resonated with the Buddhist hymns: “Go, subdue the evil!”

“Goodness, goodness.” After the decree came out, the venerable actually placed his palms together and turned around to leave. He instantly disappeared into the horizon.

Li Qiye’s light disappeared and he resumed his normal appearance. It seemed as if what happened just now was only an illusion.

“That’s it?” Many people felt disappointed after seeing the venerable leave. Some thought that he would commit suicide and were slightly let down by Li Qiye’s dharma.

A Virtuous Paragon stared at the faraway Buddhist City and murmured: “No, it’s more than that!”

“Ahh—!” Screams rang out from the city. Blood spurted everywhere where the Soaring Heavenly Saintess was staying. After the venerable returned, he started massacring the people in the camp!

“Something is happening!” The spectators noticed the commotion back at the city and immediately flew there to watch. Many experts opened their heavenly gaze to view it as well.

“Dry Peak, are you insane?!” Eventually, Dry Peak’s slaughter alarmed the other Virtuous Paragons under the saintness. One of them shouted and went to stop him.

“Rumble!” In a split second, the world spun. Virtuous Paragons had a showdown in the sky and broke through the firmament. Treasures slammed into each other, causing flames to spark and light up the sky.

“Ah!” Eventually, a shrill scream resounded. Venerable Dry Peak was assassinated by another paragon and this bizarre event finally concluded.

Back at the lake, many sects masters and paragons all witnessed that scene. They shivered and glanced over at Li Qiye.

People receded like the tides to maintain their distance.

Li Qiye using the dharma to control the Nantian Young King's group was one thing. This could be attributed to their age, lack of cultivation, and brittle dao heart.

However, a paragon like Dry Peak was instantly crossed over by Li Qiye as well — this was too horrifying. If Li Qiye wanted to perform a mass conversion, wouldn't he be able to instantly control countless experts?!

A cold sweat broke out as they thought about Venerable Dry Peak's ultimate fate. In their eyes, Li Qiye was even more frightening than a devil.

Jikong Wudi's group turned quite serious as well. Evil Buddha's terrifying might once again exceeded their expectations!

Even Zhan Shi with his firm dao heart wasn't sure if he could stay strong against Evil Buddha's conversion!

Li Qiye only chuckled. He had grasped the true meaning of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. In this place, he was able to control all Buddhist laws. Unless the existence in the Buddhist sea took action, he could convert just about anyone with his dharma!

Different word from outer disciple. It's higher in this context.

Chapter 1046: A Brewing Storm

People stayed far away from Li Qiye and stared at him in horror. This monk that didn't look like a monk gave them the willies.

Everyone knew the fearful dharma in the plateau as well as Spirit Mountain's power of conversion. However, under normal circumstances, Sacred Monks and Bodhisattvas from the eighteen temples wouldn't take the initiative to convert others.

But now, Li Qiye was a wandering Bodhisattva away from Spirit Mountain with the ability to convert a paragon with one phrase. Anyone would be fearful of such an existence, so they stayed far away.

Supreme geniuses like Jikong Wudi did not avoid him and instead proudly stood their ground. However, their expressions were quite grave. Li Qiye's abilities were too dangerous, even to geniuses like them.

"Hey, are you borrowing the power of the plateau, or is it your own?" Bing Yuxia stared at Li Qiye and asked with some curiosity.

He looked at her and smiled: "Does it matter? The land I tread will become a Buddhist holyland. When I speak, my words become the dharma; where I walk, Arhats and Bodhisattvas will follow me. I control the dharma and the Buddhist laws. Everyone shall join Buddhism under my preaching."

Such words were incredibly arrogant. It was as if he considered

himself a Buddhist Lord. However, no one thought that he was being ludicrous and only felt that this Evil Buddha before them was too horrifying.

“I want to test your dharma.” Bing Yuxia was itching and didn’t hide her intent to fight at all.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Girl, I have no interest in crossing you over. Even if I did, there wouldn’t be that great of an effect because your Heaven Cutting Dao isn’t appropriate for the Buddhist faith.”

Her expression immediately tensed up the moment he said this. Fascinating glimmers flashed across her eyes as she glared at him. Fewer than few people knew about her Dao of Heaven Cutting; it was something she learned from the Heaven Cutting Tablet. But now, this Evil Buddha that she had never seen before suddenly revealed her secret, so how could she not become serious?

“What would be suitable for the Buddhist faith?” She stared at him and slowly asked, intending to find some clues by watching each of his actions.

“Her...” Li Qiye casually pointed at Bai Jianzhen who was sitting under a tree.

After arriving, Bai Jianzhen sat in the shade and closed her eyes, but now when Li Qiye suddenly pointed at her, her eyes narrowed to resemble two divine swords.

“That icy woman.” Bing Yuxia didn’t expect for Evil Buddha to value Bai Jianzhen like this. She curiously asked: “Why do you want to pick her?”

“Because she has discovered the mad sword.” Li Qiye answered dismissively: “Buddhism has furious vajra. This furious nature combined with her mad sword would allow her to reach the apex with a creation that could catch up to the old Immortal Emperor Ye Ti.”

At this point, Bai Jianzhen’s pretty eyes were staring intensely at Li Qiye. She didn’t become angry since she had fallen into a deep contemplation.

Li Qiye chuckled: “If you join my banner, I will show you the way. In the future, people like them wouldn’t be a match for you. The moment your sword leaves its sheath would be the end of them.” Having said that, he casually pointed at Jikong Wudi’s group.

Such words were a blatant provocation towards them. Jikong Wudi turned cold; the Mortal King had a fierce glare; Zhan Shi had no reaction, and Heavenly Emperor Lin was as nonchalant as always.

The crowd, on the other hand, took a deep breath. Evil Buddha’s tone was quite big. This was extremely overbearing since it immediately offended the entire group of geniuses.

Bai Jianzhen didn’t respond to Li Qiye. She only sat there

embracing her sword. Eventually, she slowly closed her eyes as if she didn't care for external matters.

Suddenly, someone shouted: "The Soaring Heavenly Saintess is here!" A golden vessel jumped into the sky and quickly hovered above the lake.

On top of the vessel was a woman — the current descendant of the Heavenly God Sect, the Soaring Heavenly Saintess! Behind her were three old men. They spent no effort to conceal their paragon auras that were surging endlessly like a flood assaulting the sky.

Even though these old men were incredibly arrogant, many people still trembled inside. This was due to the fact that the three old men were not ordinary paragons, they had entered the path of the grand era! Even though they weren't as strong as God-Monarchs, eternal existences like these three would always be dreadful.

"That's the Soaring Heavenly Saintess..." Someone murmured while looking at the proud woman atop the golden vessel.

Many were quite wary of her. She didn't only have the three eternal existences behind her but also a God-Monarch as well.

Everyone knew that although her talents weren't bad, the Heavenly God Sect was not strong enough to let three eternal existences and one God-Monarch become her dao protectors.

But now, her personal value was completely different. The Soaring Immortal Emissary was her uncle, while the sect wanted to descend. If they could groom an Immortal Emperor this generation and unify the nine worlds, then everything would be different!

Now, the majority's first reaction was to look over at Li Qiye. They all understood that she came to cause trouble for Evil Buddha.

“You are the Evil Buddha who used a demonic art to kill the Nantian Young King and confuse Venerable Dry Stone, right?” She coldly looked down at Li Qiye in an imperious manner.

She couldn't be blamed for having such panache. Prior to this, she was well-known in the Grand Middle Territory as the main descendant of the Heavenly God Sect. However, she was far from being comparable to supreme geniuses like Jikong Wudi and the others.

But things were different now. The rise of the Heavenly God Sect and return of her uncle as well as her being chosen for the sect were all a matter of time. In the future, she would actually succeed her uncle's position and become the new emissary of the sect in the Mortal Emperor World.

Overnight, her worth became a hundred times greater, turning her into a big shot that was on the same standing as Jikong Wudi's group.

Thus, how could her confidence not shoot up? Right now, she wanted to establish her prestige so that no one would dare to question her authority. For this, she needed to make an example out of someone. Without a doubt, this Evil Buddha had become her target.

“That’s right.” Li Qiye smiled while looking at the haughty saintess.

At this point, everyone watched with bated breaths. Jikong Wudi’s group was ready to watch the fun as well, especially the Mortal King and Jikong Wudi himself. These two were naturally happy to see Evil Buddha fight against the saintess.

Once Evil Buddha became enemies with the Heavenly God Sect, only death would await him no matter how powerful he might be!

She shouted with a cold demeanor: “I see, you’re an evil monk. You dare to spout heresy to confuse people and killed Soaring Immortal disciples with an evil art. Even ten thousand deaths cannot absolve your sin.”

Many people glanced at each other after hearing this. They knew that both the young king and the venerable weren’t Soaring Immortal disciples. The saintess simply wanted to frame Li Qiye to make him an enemy of the soaring sect!

Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile and shake his head: “Just a little junior that already knows how to wave the banner around, a fox borrowing the might of a tiger. The Soaring Immortal Sect has yet

to recruit you, but you are already showing off. If you become the emissary, won't you begin to order the entire Mortal Emperor World around?"

This retort left the saintess with an extremely ugly expression. It was a clear showing of disdain and directly hit her insecurities. This was the thing she didn't want to hear the most!

Many were very afraid of Evil Buddha, but they secretly applauded his words. In fact, they didn't like watching the saintess acting haughtily due to her backing. Alas, they were afraid of the Soaring Immortal Sect behind her, so they didn't dare to antagonize her.

Thus, when Evil Buddha spoke what was on everyone's mind, it made the crowd feel very good.

"Evil monk, you don't know life from death!" The saintess was shaking with anger and shouted at him.

Li Qiye looked at her and shook his head again: "The Soaring Immortal Sect is in a steep decline. Those old geezers will not leave their coffins to come out, so their descendants can only groom some trash. If a joke like you can eventually become the emissary, then the Soaring Immortal Sect can only continue on this downward spiral, like a river drying up by the day."

The Soaring Heavenly Saintess commanded: "Evil monk, you actually dare to slander the Soaring Immortal Sect, you deserve to be quartered! Elders, go take down this monk and torture him. Let

him know the name Soaring Immortal.”

The three eternal existences stepped out at this time and immediately went for Li Qiye. Their surging blood energies erupted as their fate weapons appeared and poured down universal laws. This was to prevent the dharma’s affinity of conversion.

In their eyes, Li Qiye’s dharma was a confusion technique of sorts, so they sealed their five senses. This way, his dharma wouldn’t be able to charm them.

The crowd truly appreciated this defensive maneuver. They wanted to see if such a method could stop Li Qiye’s dharma or not.

“Evil monk, accept your fate!” With their five senses sealed, three gigantic palms blotted out the sky, not giving Li Qiye a chance to escape as they lunged at him.

A Buddhist light bloomed from his body. This extremely scorching light was dazzling to the point where people couldn’t keep their eyes open.

At this moment, Li Qiye seemed to control the entire plateau. He was the supreme Buddhist Lord.

“Amitabha.” Li Qiye chanted his mantra and instantly gathered the endless Buddhist energy of the plateau. All of its power was within his grasp.

“Amitabha...” With the urging from Li Qiye’s peerless dharma, the numerous temples and monks of the plateau all chanted in unison.

Chapter 1047: One Word Opposing A God Monarch

Such a change left all existences in the plateau quivering. As myriad temples echoed after him, Li Qiye raised his palm. The power in this place was being driven by him. A gigantic Buddhist palm appeared in the sky. Its shadow would make even gods tremble.

“Boom!” This palm shattered the sky and came crashing towards the three eternal existences.

“Initiate!” The three eternal existence shouted in response. They didn’t hold anything back and unleashed all of their blood energy to power their most powerful attacks. They shot it towards the palm in order to stop its terrifying might.

“Bang!” The entire plateau quaked. On the ground was a gigantic palm print as if a blade had used the land as its canvas. Each of its curves was extremely meticulously and skillfully crafted.

As for the three eternal existences, they were rendered into pools of blood. Their corpses no longer existed.

“Mommy...” Countless people felt their knees giving in while their legs trembled in fear after seeing this. Three eternal existences were annihilated by a single Buddhist palm. There was nothing left of them.

Jikong Wudi's group was astounded. Until now, they assumed that Li Qiye could only use his dharma to convert people. They didn't expect that he could destroy three eternal existences with a casual attack.

"Borrowing the power of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau." Heavenly Emperor Lin was astonished after seeing this palm. His eyes became quite profound. This attack left the group of geniuses in fear.

All of a sudden, the scene became quiet. Li Qiye's might extending beyond mere conversion shattered all expectations.

Three paragons couldn't even block a single move before meeting their demise. Anyone would shiver after seeing this development.

The Soaring Heavenly Saintess' expression greatly shifted. With a God-Monarch as her backing, she was previously fearless. However, she didn't expect for the three eternal existences to be unable to block even a single palm.

Li Qiye flew into the sky and instantly stood before the saintess' golden vessel. He smiled: "Tell me, should I convert you or crush you?"

The shocked saintess couldn't help but take several steps back with fear in her heart. However, a figure came out and stood before her.

It was an old man adorned in a hemp robe. His appearance caused the sky to fall into darkness. His eyes flashed a green glint, causing people to quiver uncontrollably.

An aghast spectator uttered: “God-Monarch...” Despite not unleashing his full blood energy and God-Monarch aura, the strands of power radiating from his body were scary enough.

A paragon from the previous generation murmured in astonishment: “Night Scorpion God-Monarch!”

The old man called the Night Scorpion God-Monarch blocked everything with darkness. In order to stop Li Qiye’s conversion, he stood before the saintess and spoke gravely: “Little friend, please hold on.”

“A God-Monarch.” Li Qiye looked at him and chuckled: “Although you barely make the cut, you are still a bit stronger than self-proclaimed monarchs.”

Night Scorpion did not respond. He coldly stared at Li Qiye like a scorpion watching its prey from the shadows, ready to deliver the fatal blow with its poisonous pincers at any time.

“What a shame, a God-Monarch that should be free to travel among the clouds... Instead of retiring and enjoying the rest of your lifespan, you came here to be someone else’s dog. It isn’t anything great to rely on the Soaring Immortal Sect. It cannot protect your sect forever.” Li Qiye leisurely smiled.

At this point, people were ready to see if the God-Monarch could actually stop Evil Buddha. They now understood his terrifying abilities too well.

The monarch remained quiet and bided his time, waiting for an opportunity to deliver a mortal blow. At this time, the saintess kept far enough behind him to stay safe. She finally felt relieved and grew more courageous with his protection.

“God-Monarch, slay this evil monk for me. I want to deliver his head to the emissary.” Her embarrassment from earlier now turned into anger.

The monarch still didn’t attack yet. He was quite cautious as he searched for an opportunity, just like a scorpion shrouded in darkness. With his strength and status, he wouldn’t attack just because the saintess told him to.

“Take my head?” Li Qiye laughed and placed his palms together: “Oh Merciful Buddha...” In the blink of an eye, a Buddhist light illuminated the world. The rhythm of the entire plateau was moved by him.

“Die!” In this split second, the monarch finally attacked since he had no other choice. A cold glint flashed by like a star drifting through the night sky. This glint crossed the sky at an unimaginable speed. Many people’s hearts skipped a beat as they felt their hearts being pierced.

However, at that exact moment, there suddenly seemed to be

millions and millions of sacred monks reciting Buddhist laws in unison. In the blink of an eye, a golden lotus fully bloomed below Li Qiye's feet.

No one knew what was going on. The only thing they noticed was that the monarch had completely disappeared from everyone's sight.

They eventually found that this lotus flower was growing in a boundless Buddhist sea. The other shore of this sea was actually Spirit Mountain.

“Over there!” An old paragon finally saw it clearly and pointed at Spirit Mountain in the distance.

At this time, everyone realized that the Night Scorpion God-Monarch was being trapped in Spirit Mountain, located at the other side of the sea.

Night Scorpion was frightened as well. The moment he took a step forward to leave Spirit Mountain, he was lost in the vast sea and couldn't leave. This scared him enough that he had to pull back his foot.

He was completely pale for he knew he had met a fearsome opponent. Just a single word could banish him forever!

The crowd was astonished, including Jikong Wudi's group. One word to banish a God-Monarch — this was more ghastly than

anything else they had experienced.

It was so quiet that one could even hear the sound of a needle hitting the ground. Both era-defying geniuses and the powerful existences hiding in the shadow alike were shocked.

“Splash! Crash!” While everyone was speechless, the sound of crashing waves could be heard.

The water in the lake crazily spun as a Buddhist lotus slowly emerged from its depths. It was extremely holy and instilled awe in the hearts of the spectators.

“Buddhist lotus...” A cry came out after they saw this lotus coming out of the lake.

It quickly attracted everyone’s attention. The crowd turned restless; different blood energies rushed to the sky and condensed into a terrifying mass above the plateau. It formed an oceanic storm that could tear apart the sky at any moment!

Li Qiye smirked at the sight of the lotus flower. He was the first to take action as he walked towards it. At this second, it already belonged to him. No one else could take it.

“Boom!” But right when he got close, several people immediately took action. They were all experts that hid in the shadows, true masters. All of them were at least at the eternal existence level. One of them was even a God-Monarch.

And this was not the most terrifying part. An imperial aura that tore apart all things was among these invincible powers. An imperial weapon came forth and shattered myriad laws, forcing people down to their knees in worship!

“Imperial weapon...” The majority of the cultivators had already withdrawn far away after sensing the imperial aura. They didn’t wish to participate in this competition since they couldn’t even stand firm at this moment.

A God-Monarch ambushing with an imperial weapon. One could easily imagine how dreadful this attack was.

These big shots that had been hiding were all famous. However, they let go of their reputations and all launched a surprise attack on Evil Buddha.

In their eyes, Evil Buddha’s ability to banish a God-Monarch with one word was too frightening. Thus, they wanted to take the initiative and kill him before he could react.

“Amitabha.” Li Qiye chanted. A boundless light blasted across space. The power of the entire plateau was taken by him, no matter how vast it might be! At this time, he was the Buddhist Lord that controlled the entire plateau!

“Amitabha.” With a loud shout like a Vajra subduing evil, the innumerable monks in this place all shouted. The torrential force of the dharma rushed out like a reversed waterfall. It guarded all

the existences in this world.

“Boom!” The sky sent down a golden word — “Buddha.” It had supreme power and crushed everything in the nine heavens and ten earths.

“Ah...” After screaming miserably, the several groups ambushing Li Qiye were instantly crushed by this supreme Buddhist word. Blood and flesh spilled all over the place. From start to finish, they never showed themselves. Even at the moment of death, the spectators didn’t know who they were. After all, they died without leaving behind a corpse, let alone a grave.

“Bang!” The imperial aura exploded in the sky. Among the ambushers, only the God-Monarch survived. His imperial weapon managed to block the word “Buddha”. However, he was crazily vomiting blood while everyone could hear the sound of bones snapping.

Chapter 1048: One Challenging The Horde

Despite being protected by the imperial weapon, he was nearly mangled by the pressure. At this time, his position was revealed and he couldn't hide any longer.

He was driven to insanity. As a God-Monarch from an imperial lineage with an imperial weapon, he was confident in even challenging a Godking without an equal weapon. However, a junior crushed him so easily.

He held his weapon and ran away, not wanting to stay for a second longer. Evil Buddha's horrifying might far exceeded his imagination.

"Face Buddha's wrath, the sword that shall sweep through the sky." Buddhist lights bloomed from Li Qiye's body and lit up the entire plateau. He chanted and derived the dharma while the monks in this place sang for him. The Buddhist affinity accumulated for generations became blessings on his body.

With this mantra, he spread out his palm. Another Buddhist ray emerged like a stout tree.

"Clank!" A sword assaulted the sky as it swept forth. The stars and the galaxy were split. This one sword was extremely mystical and caused gods and devils to bow their heads.

"Whoosh!" Blood sprayed high up in the air. The God-Monarch's head rolled far away on the ground. His eyes were still wide open.

Despite running tens of thousands of miles away in an instant, he still couldn't dodge the Buddhist Sword.

An escaping God-Monarch, despite having an imperial weapon, would have a weakened defense. After he was killed, the weapon didn't pause at all and instantly disappeared into the horizon.

The world stood still once more while the Buddhist lotus quietly floated above the lake. At this moment, no one dared to cross the line at all. Li Qiye took his time walking to the lotus and nonchalantly stood on top of it.

At this moment, he gathered the affinity of the plateau again. Its rhythm swayed to his will. He became extremely holy while standing on the lotus. Anyone who was close to him would have the urge to prostrate and join the Buddhist order.

Despite Li Qiye's attempts to limit his aura to prevent it from converting people, it was still immensely terrifying. No one dared to come close.

“One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil.” In the Buddhist City, South Emperor watched the whole event and said: “He is Buddha, capable of controlling the entire plateau. So many ignorant fools running to their deaths.”

The whole world was silent while Li Qiye stood on top of the lotus, undisturbed. As for the Soaring Heavenly Saintess, she had run away long ago.

He glanced past the crowd and slowly asked: “Anyone else want to take this Buddhist lotus?”

At this moment, the majority of the experts looked at each other in order to figure out what to do. No one dared to take half a step past this pond of thunder. Jikong Wudi, Zhan Shi, and the Mortal King were silent with ugly expressions.

“Very well, oh Merciful Buddha. It seems like all of you are still unwilling, I will give you young ones a chance.” Li Qiye saw their cold expressions and unwillingness to leave. He smiled: “You, you, you, and all of you, come together.”

Li Qiye casually pointed at Jikong Wudi’s group, including Bing Yuxia and Bai Jianzhen.

This challenge astounded the crowd. Jikong Wudi, Zhan Shi, Heavenly Emperor Lin, the Jewel Pillar Mortal King, Bing Yuxia, Bai Jianzhen — all the supreme geniuses were here.

But now, Evil Buddha wanted to fight all of them by himself. The crowd had no choice but to turn silly. His showing was truly invincible.

A paragon murmured: “This is truly the number one among the younger generation, who can compete with him?!”

Who else right now would dare to challenge all the other geniuses here? Such a person didn’t exist until Evil Buddha showed

up.

The group of geniuses was silent. Even though they were powerful and confident, they didn't feel certain at this moment. They knew that this Evil Buddha was capable of controlling the entire plateau and its power to suppress all of them.

“We can give it a try.” While Jikong Wudi's group was feeling uncertain, Bing Yuxia let go of the beauty in her embrace and exited her chariot.

Bai Jianzhen also stood up from the shade while readying her sword. A sharp glimmer flashed in her pretty eyes, revealing her frightening sword intent. She completely changed in this moment, turning into an unsheathed sword with incomparable sharpness. Anyone would shiver while looking at her.

The Mortal King shouted: “I will go first.” He was the first to step up to Li Qiye. He wanted to discard the annoyance brewing inside him after suffering the previous two defeats by challenging Li Qiye.

The first time, he underestimated the power of the dharma and was almost converted. The second time, he lost to a single finger from South Emperor.

“Very brave.” Li Qiye smiled after seeing the Mortal King being the first to rise to the challenge: “Even though you have been an eyesore all this time, Buddha will be merciful today and shall spare your life.”

“Don’t be so arrogant!” The Mortal King shouted after Li Qiye viewed him as a fish on the chopping block. He had fought experts from all over the world, so being looked down on by Evil Buddha like this was truly shameful!

“Buzz—” A ray of light bloomed. After his shout, a treasure appeared above his head. It was as white as jade and poured down a sacred imperial power capable of suppressing gods and devils.

“An imperial weapon.” Though people didn’t recognize its background, even the foolish ones knew that it was an imperial weapon.

Everyone knew that the sacred school had never produced an Immortal Emperor. However, Jewel Pillar had an imperial weapon right now. This was indeed worth musing over.

“Very smart method, refining the finger bone of an Immortal Emperor who cultivates the Hell Suppressing Physique into a Life Treasure. It can avoid conversion as well as increase your own physique’s power.” Li Qiye smiled after seeing the weapon. He naturally knew who it belonged to.

“Seal!” The Mortal King didn’t waste time speaking and shouted. Light erupted from his body in the form of strings. The Hell Suppressing Physique suppressed the entire world. Even the void was trembling and the area lost its brilliance.

At this point, he turned into a gigantic prison in an instant. A

dark light floated around this huge cage, causing the celestials to dim.

“Pop!” When this cage came down, the void shattered. Nothing could stay intact under its pressure. Even gods and devils could only accept being imprisoned for an eternity.

The Mortal King had exerted his physique to its limit. Anyone would be horrified after seeing this. The absolute suppression from this physique was horrifying. The grand dao shattered and myriad laws screamed.

“Amitabha.” Li Qiye didn’t even move while facing this physique cage. He only chanted and formed a Buddhist mudra with both hands.

“Boom!” Thousands of Buddhist laws from the plateau shot into the sky. Each of them was as grand as a waterfall that had Buddhist images engraved on them. It was a very spectacular scene.

“Clank!” In the blink of an eye, the waterfalls came together to form a Buddhist mudra. Everyone here felt that the plateau was sinking. Even its vast territory couldn’t handle the weight of this seal.

“Boom!” The physique cage couldn’t out-suppress Li Qiye. Under the smashing of the mudra, it shattered completely. The Mortal King was blown flying while spurting blood. Even though the Hell Suppressing Physique was extremely tough, people could still hear his bones breaking.

He was smashed flying and disappeared into the horizon.

“The Mortal King is really unlucky.” Many went silent after seeing this. The Mortal King had challenged Evil Buddha three times and all three ended in his defeat.

The rest of the geniuses stared at Li Qiye. They didn’t have a strategy to deal with him, but fleeing without putting up a fight was not their style either.

Li Qiye looked at them and chuckled: “Are all of you coming together or one at a time?”

“I’m going!” Bing Yuxia rushed forward and immediately flipped her delicate hand.

“Boom!” A monstrous stone tablet fell from the sky. It had countless runes etched on the surface. The world was sealed along with myriad dao upon its arrival.

In this split second, she severed all things. Myriad laws lost their power while myriad dao lost their colors. One could even say that she had severed Li Qiye’s connection to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. At this time, he couldn’t control its power and had lost its protection.

“Did she do it?” The crowd was ecstatic at this sight because Evil Buddha was too heaven-defying. People wanted to see a miracle

that resulted in his defeat.

Jikong Wudi, Lin Tiandi, and Zhan Shi were all startled at her method of severing the connection. This was the first time they saw Bing Yuxia doing this.

“Pop!” However, no one clearly saw what Evil Buddha did right afterward. His hand crossed through time and space. Even the tablet capable of cutting through all things couldn’t sever this hand.

This penetrating hand instantly slapped Bing Yuxia’s sweet buttocks. One slap and one squeeze, all at the mercy of his whim.

Chapter 1049: Only Domination

Bing Yuxia quickly leaped back and stared at him in horror. This Evil Buddha didn't only achieve the impossible by piercing through her Heaven Cutting technique, the part that shocked her was that only one person would do something like this!

“Girl, wait until you perfect your Heaven Cutting, then you can come back and challenge me. You still have a long, long way to go.” Li Qiye patted his palms that still carried the fragrance and smiled.

After leaving the fight, she stared at Evil Buddha and immediately realized many things. No wonder why Evil Buddha seemed so familiar, as if they had met before.

With Bing Yuxia out of the fray, Jikong Wudi's group of three glanced at each other and took deep breaths. They all came forward at the same time.

Each of them took one corner to form a horn-shaped formation to surround and destroy Li Qiye by delivering a fatal blow.

If even these three couldn't defeat Evil Buddha, then others would fall into despair for the bleak future of the competition for the Heaven's Will.

Time stood still. Everyone held their breaths while watching this top-level battle of the younger generation. They were eager to see the result.

Jikong Wudi, Heavenly Emperor Lin, and Zhan Shi all stared intensely at Li Qiye. They didn't attack right away as they were looking for an opening.

"It seems like you all don't wish to attack first." Li Qiye noticed their intent and smiled: "Fine, I'll go first."

With that, he formed the Anjali Mudra. In an instant, an endless amount of Buddhist light blossomed along with chants. All the sacred monks in the plateau sang for him once more just like before.

The light engulfed the three geniuses and seemed to be casting a layer of gold on their bodies.

Even those watching on the distant horizon were shocked and exclaimed: "Conversion!"

"Boundless Supreme!" Lin Tiandi let out a long yell while chanting his daoist scripture. In the blink of an eye, a magnificent light descended from above as if a world of immortals was opening. It wanted to illuminate the entire plateau.

"Heavenly Emperor Lin is truly amazing, he is actually using a different immortal law to resist the Buddhist conversion." Someone praised quietly while watching the immortal light try to purify the Buddhist light.

Though Lin's light was quite powerful, it was far inferior to the Buddhist's brilliance. At this moment, Li Qiye's light was the culmination of the entire plateau. Thus, when the immortal light came down, it was slowly purified and dyed a pure gold. It was about to become a part of the Buddhist light.

"Long live the Supreme!" He took out a physical immortal scripture and flipped the pages then began to chant again. The nearly-converted immortal light lit up once more. This allowed it to barely stop the Buddhist conversion.

"Now!" Jikong Wudi shouted. He understood full well that even if the scripture in Heavenly Emperor Lin's hand was incredible, it still couldn't withstand the power of conversion. They only had a split second's opportunity.

"Buzz!" Zhan Shi took several steps forward with the most powerful offensive rhythm he could muster. Even though he didn't attack just yet, his pace was leading the rhythm of the grand dao. The world moved to his whim while his steps seemed to be stomping on the dao hearts of others to an unbearable extent.

With that, he took out a halberd and, with a shout, rushed forward to attack. There were no profound techniques or fancy variations. The halberd carried an unstoppable momentum. It was not just a thrust from a weapon, it was also Zhan Shi's will. He moved forward, unfaltering and heroic.

"Revered One of the World!" Li Qiye didn't look at the direct attack from the halberd. He simply created the mudra again by placing his palms together. A Buddhist wheel flew out from behind

his head.

“Boom!” Zhan Shi’s halberd struck the wheel to no avail. His attack could thrust through all things, but it couldn’t penetrate this wheel.

“Die!” Jikong Wudi made his attack and unleashed the ancient talisman that he obtained from the Emperor Era Hall. He had completely grasped its profundities.

“Buzz—” The talisman stretched out and myriad eras passed by in the blink of an eye. No one could clearly see his attack as it arrived right in front of Li Qiye, aiming for his forehead. It was only one foot away by the time people realized.

“Watch over all sentient beings!” Li Qiye chanted a Buddhist phrase as the attack was about to pierce his head. At this moment, time seemed to slow.

Without a doubt, the talisman’s effect was to alter time in order to accelerate Jikong Wudi’s death blow. However, before contact could be made, a magnificent light rushed out from Li Qiye’s forehead like an ocean. Even if Jikong Wudi was swift, he would need millions of years before he could fly through this endless Buddhist ocean.

“Zzz—” Among the endless ocean, a Buddhist eye opened and emitted a shining radiance. It illuminated all living beings in order to grant them salvation.

Jikong Wudi was immediately frozen under this eye as his body exuded a Buddhist light.

“Bang!” While Li Qiye was dealing with Jikong Wudi, Zhan Shi let out a loud battle cry and unleashed his raging halberd to destroy the world with an endless barrage of fire. Facing such a fierce offense, even the Buddhist wheel suffered damage.

Heavenly Emperor Lin, on the other side, felt that the situation was quite unfavorable. He shouted and mustered his strength to open the scripture again.

“Rumble!” Boundless immortal runes descended. Each rune was as immense as a towering mountain. It combined with Zhan Shi’s strongest halberd thrust to break through Li Qiye’s defense.

“Ahh!” As the invincible attack was on its way, Jikong Wudi screamed loudly and gouged his own chest to grab his heart. He threw it on the ground and ran away at an incredible speed.

Jikong Wudi thought he could have killed Li Qiye using that great opportunity with his ultimate attack. He was only inches away from piercing through Li Qiye’s forehead.

However, he couldn’t escape the power of conversion from Li Qiye’s ultimate dharma. The moment that eye opened, he would instantly be converted. Alas, Jikong Wudi lived up to his name. At the crossroads of life and death, he destroyed his Buddhist heart. Although he suffered grievous losses from doing so, he still managed to decisively escape.

“Rumble!” Under the combined bombardment of Heavenly Emperor Lin and Zhan Shi, the Buddhist wheel shattered and the sea was about to break.

“Skanda, rise.” Li Qiye let out a chant that echoed across the world.

“Boom!” A gigantic figure emerged from within Spirit Mountain. A huge [Vajra](#) stood on top of the mountain with a skyward Buddhist light.

Protector Skanda was the guardian deity of Buddhism. At this moment, all the affinity of the plateau condensed into this figure that was the legendary Skanda.

Skanda shouted. Even though he was thousands of miles away, his vajra weapon was not limited by distance.

“Boom!” With a deafening blast, the immense divine runes of Heavenly Emperor Lin were annihilated. Zhan Shi’s endless barrage of thrusts collapsed as well under the attack of this vajra weapon.

No matter how domineering and strong their attacks were, they shattered before Skanda’s might. Nothing could withstand his attack.

Both Lin and Zhan Shi were blown to the horizon while vomiting

blood.

“Clank!” A sword hymn resonated throughout the nine heavens. Right as Skanda defeated Lin and Zhan Shi with one strike, Bai Jianzhen made her move. Her sword slashed through the sky, causing the stars and myriad existences to lose their light.

This imperceptible sword was simply too fast. However, people still quivered before the unknown since they could feel the horror of its edge that was capable of destroying all things.

Once the exchange became clear to the spectators, they saw Li Qiye’s fingers holding onto something as if he was picking flowers from the ground. However, he was not picking flowers and instead was tightly clasping Bai Jianzhen’s sword.

“You have reached the essence of the dao of the sword and know when to deliver the fatal blow. Unfortunately, your opponent is me.” Li Qiye easily held onto her sword while she couldn’t move it the least bit.

Despite all of this, Bai Jianzhen was still coldly glaring at Li Qiye without any emotion. She was as cold as the steel edge of a blade. Nothing could shake her emotions.

At this time, she abandoned her sword and shouted: “Die!”

Her sword dao emerged. She slightly turned her hand and her dao turned into a heavenly sword. With this, she became an

entirely different person, a Sword Goddess that loomed above the nine heavens. Her sword could sweep through myriad laws.

“Dum—” Myriad realms quaked before the heavenly sword. It turned into countless swords that frantically attacked with an endless bloodthirst. The entire world shook before them.

“Mad Sword...” The world turned into a sea of swords with Bai Jianzhen at the center. They rampaged inside like torrential whirlwinds, leaving nothing behind.

It gave off the feeling of a mad tyrant with her sea of swords destroying an entire civilization and world. Anyone would shiver before such rage. The end of days had come.

It says Vajra here, but Skanda is a Bodhisattva on the Wikipedia page.

Chapter 1050: I Alone Am Invincible

Mad Sword was Bai Jianzhen's sword dao. Perhaps she was not the most invincible in the younger generation, but she was certainly incomparable with regard to the sword. She was at the apex, an unsurpassable supreme existence.

In the past, the Mortal King had lost to this Mad Sword Dao and was cornered by her.

“Buzz—” Li Qiye's Buddhist light soared even higher. The Buddhist light turned into Buddhist swords of endless length. They carried a peaceful and gentle aura.

If Bai Jianzhen's Mad Sword was a raging storm in the middle of an ocean, then Li Qiye's Buddhist Sword was a sea of Buddhism. They were two polar opposites. One was furious and the other tranquil.

“Boom!” The two oceans of swords collided. The furious swords quickly entered the Buddhist sea. Upon receiving this blow, the Buddhist sea generated a huge tidal wave.

The tranquil Buddhist sea was agitated by the stormy sea. However, it also affected the other side.

Despite its furious nature, the Mad Sword Dao was shaken by the calmness of the surroundings. It gradually melted under the Buddhist sea's serenity and gained the same peacefulness.

Bai Jianzhen was shocked after seeing this. Her dao of the sword emphasized fury. Once unleashed, it was unstoppable until everything was destroyed. If the Mad Sword became calm, then it would cease to be the Mad Sword.

Bai Jianzhen's sword intent rose even higher and unleashed shockwaves throughout the sky. This endless sword intent resembled thousands of waterfalls rushing to the sky in order to empower the Mad Sword.

“Merciful Buddha, Excellent, Excellent.” Li Qiye chanted his dharma. His Buddhist intent instantly engulfed her sword intent, causing it to slow down.

Bai Jianzhen saw that the situation wasn't good and turned around to leave. At this time, losing was not shameful to her at all. Her departure was extremely fast and there was no trace of her remaining after a split second.

“Bang!” Without Bai Jianzhen's support, the raging sea of swords instantly moldered, no longer capable of stopping Li Qiye's Buddhist swords.

“Not bad.” Li Qiye voiced his praise, but he didn't give chase.

This battle had finally ended. Whether it was the ambush from a God-Monarch or the final battle of the younger generation, everything ended.

Jikong Wudi, Heavenly Emperor Lin... all the supreme geniuses had lost. Even their combined efforts couldn't defeat Evil Buddha.

“Is he the number one of the younger generation now?” The crowd was silent for a long time while they looked at Evil Buddha. In their eyes, it was impossible for the other geniuses to beat Evil Buddha unless they were able to become Emperor Candidates.

“Maybe, just maybe, one person can take him on.” Someone thought of a different invincible master and murmured: “South Emperor, he might be able to.”

After hearing this, the crowd recalled the tales of South Emperor. Maybe only someone like him would be able to oppose Evil Buddha.

Li Qiye withdrew his Buddhist light and became ordinary once more, transforming from a Buddhist Lord into a mortal. Who would have thought that this normal looking guy was able to sweep through all enemies?

“Anyone else want to try for this lotus?” Li Qiye leisurely glanced at the crowd. However, both those nearby and the spectators on the horizon were quiet.

No one dared to utter a word, they only kept on staring at him. At this point, who would dare to try him? Even a God-Monarch with an imperial weapon had died miserably. Others naturally couldn't match up to him.

“Such a good lotus yet no one wants it, I guess I have to take it then.” Li Qiye cheerfully smirked and collected the lotus.

Even if others wanted to, they didn’t dare to compete with him. Maybe there was a little hope for someone of the Godking level, but not them.

The only one who stayed behind among his opponents was Bing Yuxia. She stood there and stared at him from start to finish. She was certain of her speculation and knew who this Evil Buddha was.

“What now, girl? You still don’t want to leave?” Li Qiye smiled at Bing Yuxia who was staring at him: “Should I send you off?”

She angrily glared at Li Qiye before turning around to go back to her chariot. With beauties on both sides, she said: “Ladies, time to leave.” With that, her chariot disappeared into the horizon.

Li Qiye glanced at the large lake for a bit but didn’t linger behind. He slowly walked towards the Buddhist City instead.

Many spectators dispersed after seeing him leave. There were also those who stayed behind to wait for the opening of the Lesser Imperial Devil World.

“When can we actually go to the lesser world?” A junior lost his patience while looking at the tranquil lake.

A paragon that had lived for several generations spoke: “Who knows? It depends on how long Spirit Mountain takes to remove the seal. It might take a while this time since Evil Buddha channeled the power of the plateau. That might have had a great impact on Spirit Mountain.”

“Evil Buddha is back.” Someone shouted right when Li Qiye appeared in the Buddhist City. The entire city erupted into a clamor.

Those who saw him took the long way around; no one dared to come close. He was someone who was feared by all people and even made devils nervous.

It was not an exaggerated response to the killing of a God-Monarch and defeating all geniuses. In the eyes of many, no one except the South Emperor could compete with him among the younger generation.

He was the center of attention after entering the city. Both young and old and even a few God-Monarchs hiding behind the curtains had their eyes on him.

Someone curiously asked: “Will Evil Buddha fight South Emperor?”

This was the question on everyone’s minds. In fact, it could even be said that the crowd wanted nothing more than for this to happen. It would be a good thing regardless of who won.

“Jikong Wudi’s group all lost.” A pedestrian murmured. Everyone knew that this group was the most promising to compete for the Heaven’s Will. However, they lost completely. Even Jikong Wudi, Heavenly Emperor Lin, and Zhan Shi fighting together couldn’t hurt Evil Buddha in the slightest, it was an utter defeat.

“I wonder how strong Evil Buddha truly is?” In fact, paragons from the previous generation with keen insight wondered: “If he leaves the Buddhist Funeral Plateau, will he still be invincible?”

The insightful in the crowd all saw that Evil Buddha had never revealed his true power. From beginning to end, he only borrowed power from the plateau!

In this way, his true strength was a mystery. Many people wanted to unravel it, but they didn’t dare to do so.

“Hmph, if he leaves the plateau, he probably isn’t a match for Deity’s group. He is only unbeatable by relying on the plateau.” A few youths stated.

All of the young geniuses had many supporters who unavoidably felt indignant after seeing them lose.

In just one night, the entire city was talking about Evil Buddha. Even after such a great battle, no one knew anything about him, including his identity and real strength.

Because of this, rumors about Evil Buddha started circulating.

Some said that Evil Buddha was born in an imperial lineage. Upon birth, a bright Buddhist phenomenon emerged, so he started practicing Buddhism at a young age while keeping his hair. Others said that he cultivated the legendary Heavenly Buddhist Scripture, which is why he is so invincible and never met his match during the Buddhist debates at Spirit Mountain. A more ridiculous version claimed that before even coming into this world, he was a Buddhist embryo. This made him destined to become the [only Buddhist Emperor since the start of time...](#)

Rumors spread everywhere overnight and became more outrageous by the minute. However, they were nothing more than figments of the gossipers' imagination.

“Boom!” On this night, a Buddhist light erupted above Spirit Mountain. A golden grand dao from the mountain paved the way straight to the Buddhist City.

At this moment, one person walked onto the path. It was a Vajra with a huge Buddhist Kingdom behind him. Inside the kingdom were millions and millions of sacred monks. There were also Buddhist Lords, Bodhisattvas, and other Vajras... All of the living beings there worshiped Buddhism.

The leading Vajra's appearance filled the entire plateau with chants. They were all reciting scriptures for him.

His appearance caused countless stupas to rise. One could easily

see that he had accomplished [countless acts of kindness in his life](#).

The Vajra was carrying a huge Buddhist pestle. This pestle on his back seemed to have endless weight, capable of crushing the sky and suppressing all evil.

Each of his steps caused the entire plateau to quake, as if it couldn't bear his weight.

This Vajra coming out shocked countless people in the plateau. Even Godkings had serious expressions on their faces.

Different word than Di Shi. This one is much more literal.

To understand this sentence, one has to know the idiom it is based on. The idiom is “Saving a life is a holier deed than to build a stupa of seven stories.” My interpretation is that instead of worshipping Buddha himself, be a better person, be kind to others.

Chapter 1051: Vaisravana Vajra

The people inside the Buddhist City were startled to see this Vajra approaching. Both Buddhist worshipers and mortals dropped to the floor in worship.

“Who is that?” Someone murmured while looking at the Vajra. Not to mention the younger generation, even many of the older paragons didn’t know who it was.

“[Vaisravana Vajra](#), the legendary guardian Vajra of Spirit Mountain.” An old God-Monarch recognized him and spoke: “Even though the guardian protector of Buddhism is Skanda Vajra, no one has seen him before. However, Vaisravana Vajra is indeed the guardian of the mountain.”

“Is he unbeatable?” The junior of this old God-Monarch saw the presence of the Vajra and was in awe.

“Very powerful.” The monarch muttered: “Rumor has it that before this Vajra came to Spirit Mountain, he had no match in the entire nine worlds. Some even speculated that he was able to assail an Immortal Emperor. However, no one knew the details. After joining Spirit Mountain, he never took action again, but he was still ranked top among the mountain’s protectors. The common belief outside is that this Vajra is the most powerful in terms of strength in the mountain! The eighteen Vajras combined might not necessarily be able to defeat him.”

Eventually, everyone saw the Vajra approach Li Qiye’s abode.

“He wants to see Evil Buddha...” Someone exclaimed after seeing the Vajra’s destination.

Even though everyone saw the Vajra going there, none of them dared to approach to spy on the meeting.

Another murmured: “All along, I heard that the Vajras and Bodhisattvas in Spirit Mountain won’t leave it. But now, the strongest Vajra actually left, this is insane.”

“Maybe Evil Buddha made too big of a commotion by borrowing the power of Spirit Mountain. This enraged them, so Vaisravana Vajra is coming down to take him in to avoid further trouble.” Someone was really looking forward to it.

In fact, many people wanted this to happen. It would be great if Spirit Mountain could imprison Evil Buddha. This would allow the crowd to finally breathe easy.

Li Qiye still sat there quietly after Vaisravana appeared in his room. He only gave a quick glance to the vajra who was carrying his ceremonial weapon.

Li Qiye smiled lightly and said: “What now, does Spirit Mountain want to move against me?” He was still carefree in the face of the strongest Vajra.

“Sacred Teacher already has control over the power of the

plateau, Vaisravana is not a match for you.” The Vajra placed his palms together and bowed: “I came at midnight without an invitation, I hope Sacred Teacher can understand.”

Li Qiye remained seated in the master chair and spoke: “I understand, so tell me why the Radiant Bodhisattva sent you here.”

“Sacred Teacher, you are taking control of our plateau’s power.” Even the Vajra that had jumped out of this mundane world couldn’t help but smile wryly at this time.

“I can’t be blamed for that.” Li Qiye smiled: “If the Bodhisattva thinks I am abusing the plateau’s power, then there’s nothing I can do about it. One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil — this issue does not lie with me, it is ingrained in your plateau. I am not forcefully taking your plateau’s power, for this is the fundamental principle of Spirit Mountain. I have become Buddha, so this place accepts me.”

“Since I have such a great power in my grasp, I would be a fool not to use it.” Li Qiye continued: “If your Spirit Mountain or the Buddhist Kingdom wants to complain, then go find Di Shi or that broken pot. Of course, whether you all can see them or not is a different matter.”

“We dare not complain.” The Vajra replied: “The Bodhisattva only hopes that Sacred Teacher will refrain from using the power of the plateau so trivially. When you do so, you gather the force in its entirety. This makes the millions of monks here worry that you are forcefully stripping them of their faith.”

“I see what the Bodhisattva is trying to say.” Li Qiye smiled: “Well, I’m afraid I can’t comply. When I challenged your temples, I was only using them to sharpen my dharma, to perfect my transformation into Buddha. I don’t have anything I want from Spirit Mountain.” He paused for a bit to look at the Vajra and gently shook his head: “But now, your Spirit Mountain wants something from me. Since I never took anything from you, you can’t ask me to stop using the power of the plateau.”

Li Qiye couldn’t help but chuckle before starting his next point: “After defeating those juniors who aren’t too shabby, I trust that the big shots behind them are coming. I want to try to use the real power of the plateau at least once. Today was only using a butcher’s blade to kill a chicken, sigh, it was not satisfying at all.”

“I actually hope for Emperor Assailants to come so that I can use the chance to kill those who are blind.” With that, Li Qiye narrowed his eyes and revealed a gentle smile.

If Jikong Wudi’s group heard this, who knows if they would feel lucky or sad that Evil Buddha only used so little power to defeat them.

If Li Qiye truly channeled the power of the plateau, then not to mention Jikong Wudi’s group, even giants capable of assailing Immortal Emperors would be slaughtered.

The power of the plateau was beyond their imagination. Only Immortal Emperors would know of its limit. Otherwise, Immortal

Emperor Hao Hai wouldn't have stopped coming to the plateau for all those generations.

After hearing this, Vaisravana pondered for a moment before asking: "What does Sacred Teacher want?"

Li Qiye finally revealed a true smile and said: "What I want is very simple, that thing in the other space. If your Spirit Mountain gives it to me, then I can guarantee not to use the power of the plateau again from now on."

Even though Vaisravana had severed his ties with the mundane world, he still had to sigh softly. If Spirit Mountain didn't give something up, this guy definitely would not stop.

He understood that the Sacred Teacher was only playing around with this power against the numerous experts. He simply didn't care about defeating the enemies or borrowing the plateau's power, his intent was actually on that other item.

Li Qiye dismissively said: "I am someone who has always been merciful, don't you think? If I really wanted to rob that item from you guys, I would have done so long ago. After all, since I am such a sentimental and considerate person and your Spirit Mountain took in several old generals and sages of mine, I didn't flip your mountain over just for the item."

He looked at the Vajra and continued: "I'm quite reasonable as well. Even though I have some grudges with your Nihility Temple, I have never directed it at your Spirit Mountain. Of course,

although I won't go bother you all, I will be more than happy to slaughter all of those Immortal Emperor's generals and invincible Godkings if they are without eyes and come to provoke me in the near future."

"The power of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau... this is good. Let the world witness the invincible might of the plateau, the strength of our Buddhism. What do you think, Vaisravana?" Li Qiye leisurely smiled.

"The Bodhisattva has anticipated Sacred Teacher's wish." Eventually, Vaisravana spoke helplessly: "So, he has sent me here to hand it over to Sacred Teacher so that you can go to that place. However, whether you can obtain that other thing or not has nothing to do with Spirit Mountain." With that, he handed a Buddhist container over to Li Qiye.

Li Qiye opened it for a look and then closed it before smiling: "It is still the Radiant Bodhisattva who understands me the most. He is truly extraordinary with peerless wisdom. If he didn't join Spirit Mountain to become a monk at your plateau, I would have wanted to groom him into an Immortal Emperor."

Vaisravana didn't know what to say. Being watched over by an existence like this Sacred Teacher was the same as being a fish on the chopping block. He was a hawk who would not let go until he spotted and caught the rabbit.

"Your Spirit Mountain can rest easy, I am a man of my word." Li Qiye put the box away and smiled: "I have taken your item, so from today onward, I shall not use your Buddhist Funeral Plateau's

power.”

“Thank you, Sacred Teacher.” The Vajra formed a mudra and bowed towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye smilingly said: “You all can relax now. Tell those other monks to keep chanting in peace. Something like today won’t happen again, no one will try to strip them of their faith.”

The Vajra didn’t say anything else. He bowed again and left.

Meanwhile, the people in the city were all watching Evil Buddha’s place; they were looking forward to an earth-shattering fight between Vaisravana Vajra and him.

Unfortunately, such a battle did not happen. They only watched the Vajra leave with no discernible change in his calm demeanor.

They didn’t know what actually happened in there. They only felt that it was a shame that no battle had taken place.

However, on the second day, many temples in the plateau received a message. From now on, there would be no more absorption of the Buddhist affinity in this area. The countless monks here could continue their days as usual while chanting and meditating.

“Is it true?” Many cultivators heard this news as well. One person curiously asked: “Does that mean Evil Buddha won’t be able to use

the power of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau anymore?”

While many were quite skeptical of this news, another rumor quickly spread in a short amount of time.

“Evil Buddha has quietly left the Buddhist City, and no one is certain of his direction.” No one knew who the first was to receive this message, but it traveled across the city like wildfire.

Vaisravana is one of the Four Heavenly Kings, not a Vajra. The author is using the names/titles of these figures and adding Vajra to them. His prefix means “All-hearing” — the Heavenly King that can listen to the entire world.

Chapter 1052: Venerable Ninesword

“Evil Buddha left the city?” The crowd crazily celebrated after hearing this message.

“Evil Buddha has really left the city!” People were able to breathe easy after this news was confirmed.

“Haha, it looks like he was banished by Spirit Mountain.” Thinking about the visit of the Vajra last night in addition to the news sent to all the temples at the plateau, the cultivators in the city unanimously thought that Evil Buddha had been banished.

“Borrowing external force will never end well. The only correct path of cultivation is to rely on oneself.” Some laughed gloatingly: “Evil Buddha is smart. After losing the power of the plateau, he should be a nice turtle and shrink his head into his shell, or else he won’t survive past tomorrow.”

People then tried to figure out Evil Buddha’s destination. They had all kinds of different thoughts. Some believed that with his banishment, his combat prowess must have weakened a lot. If they could use this opportunity to kill him, they would become famous right away. Of course, others were also looking for him with different intents.

His departure was a huge relief, even for people like Jikong Wudi. He used his own strength to fight against the world, fortifying his existence as a shadow that loomed over their minds.

Even though many people were searching for his whereabouts, he seemed to have evaporated into thin air after leaving the city. No one knew where he went.

“Haha, at least he knows his own circumstances, running away like a dog with his tail tucked between his leg.” Someone sneered.

“If someone reports the whereabouts of Evil Buddha, the reward is one Virtuous Paragon weapon. Take his head and it will be a God-Monarch’s treasure.” While the crowd was excited, the Soaring Heavenly Saintess suddenly showed up and sent out this bounty.

The crowd glanced at each other. Back during the competition for the Buddhist lotus, the saintess ran away like a dog that had lost its owner, not daring to show her face.

But now, after hearing about his banishment by Spirit Mountain, she suddenly put such a high bounty on his head! Many were quite surprised by her choice of action and became tempted. After all, a treasure from a God-Monarch was too much to pass up. Plus, Evil Buddha should be much weaker now, taking his head might not be a difficult matter.

Of course, some were dismissive of her as well. When Evil Buddha was at his zenith like the sun at noon, she ran away while pissing her pants and hid in her rat hole without uttering a single word.

Now that Evil Buddha had lost his advantage, she came here

prancing around. They didn't like such wretched behavior.

Regardless of the opinion of others, the saintess had to do this. When she tried to establish her authority and show off her might, Evil Buddha completely annihilated her. If she didn't kill him, it would be too detrimental to her wish of becoming the future representative of the Soaring Immortal Sect in the Mortal Emperor World. Her aspiration would become a fool's wish. Thus, no matter the price, she must take his head.

Therefore, after several days without any news of Evil Buddha, she raised the bounty: "Those who have information about Evil Buddha's whereabouts will be rewarded with two Virtuous Paragon's Life Treasures. Those who bring his head will receive a God-Monarch's treasure as well as a set of ancient armor!"

This increase in rewards made even more people search for Evil Buddha; even more desired the treasures now.

In the eyes of many experts, Evil Buddha wouldn't have run if he still had the power of the plateau. This was the best time to take his head.

"A bunch of naive fools." South Emperor, who was still staying behind at the plateau, heard this news and laughed: "They don't even know the kind of behemoths they are facing. It looks like some people want to be massacred."

Jikong Wudi's group only smiled after seeing the saintess make her move. Even though they wanted to defeat Evil Buddha as well,

they still maintained a graceful bearing befitting their status. To do something like what the saintess was doing was a huge disgrace and would be an affront to their reputation as geniuses!

“Thud, thud, thud...” A very strange sound came from the Buddhist City. It was as if someone was knocking on the sky with a particular rhythm.

After a while, someone finally saw a person walking from the horizon. He walked very slowly like an eighty year old man floundering about.

In fact, this newcomer looked just like an old man, at least from the perspective of a mortal.

This wizened man had winter-white hair and a bamboo branch in his hand. He slowly came from the horizon while seemingly struggling with all of his might due to his staggering.

However, contrary to his appearance, the old man was walking extremely fast. In fact, each of his steps spanned ten thousand miles.

“Who is that man?” Many saw this old man approaching from the distance. After each step, he would knock with the bamboo branch in his hand as if he was afraid of falling down from the sky. They were quite puzzled by this.

No one could recognize this old man, yet they didn't dare to look down on him either.

Eventually, many saw Zhan Shi personally go out to welcome this old man into his abode.

“Old Immortal, rumored to be the strongest and oldest ancestor of the Rampaging Divine Mountain.” An ancient God-Monarch guessed his identity after seeing Zhan Shi going out to see him.

“Legend states that the Rampaging Divine Mountain was created by Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng. Who knows if this is true or not? But if it is, then their oldest and most powerful ancestor must be very terrifying.” A Virtuous Paragon turned serious after speaking.

Zhan Shi came from the Rampaging Divine Mountain located in the Western Desolate Wasteland. It was a very mysterious lineage with numerous myths surrounding it. Some believed that this place was created by Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, but few actually knew the truth.

“This old geezer came as well.” South Emperor saw this oldest ancestor from the mountain and smiled: “I wonder how much he actually learned from his ancestor. However, it is all for naught. If he actually obtained Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng's legacy, then it would be worth seeing. Alas, his ancestor was only an old servant of the emperor.”

South Emperor was one of the very few who knew about the

Rampaging Divine Mountain's origin. It was not created by Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, but his old servant instead. Of course, this old servant had been personally taught by the emperor before.

“Screehh!” An eagle's cry echoed across the nine firmaments. After the Old Immortal from the divine mountain came to the Buddhist City, the cry of this eagle disturbed everyone. They all went outside to take a look.

A gigantic Demon King was flying at swift speeds. Its wings blotted out the sun, causing the region to be drowned in darkness. A beastly aura assaulted everyone in the sky, giving the sensation that millions of Heavenly Eagles were soaring closer.

“Another big shot is coming.” Many people couldn't sit still after seeing this Demon King flying towards the Buddhist City. Virtuous Paragons and eternal existences recognized this Demon King and were quite shocked.

“Heavenly Eagle Demon King...” An ancestor was aghast after sensing the murderous and powerful aura from the Demon King and murmured: “This is a vanguard from Immortal Emperor Ta Kong's legion! Which one of Immortal Emperor Ta Kong's generals is coming?”

The spectators were shocked after hearing this and had to take deep breaths. People knew that the Space Trample Mountain was Jikong Wudi's backing, and it was quite powerful. Jikong Wudi didn't let people down either. With an aptitude that consisted of three saint level constitutions, he was destined to become a deity of

this generation.

Today, an unparalleled character finally arrived to the dismay of the crowd.

“Venerable Ninesword is coming.” A God-Monarch behind the scenes knew the Space Trample Mountain very well and spoke: “The Heavenly Eagle Demon King is a great demon below the venerable as well as his scouting vanguard. His arrival means that the venerable is coming as well.”

Sure enough, not long after the Heavenly Eagle Demon King came to the Buddhist City, a rumbling sound came from the distance. A chariot soared through the sky.

This chariot was not luxurious and instead was quite simple and old. There were no superfluous decorations for it was laden with battle scars from swords and broken arrows. Without a doubt, it had seen many battlefields.

An old man was sitting on the chariot with nine divine swords on his back. Even though he didn't emit a heaven-shattering aura and had his eyes closed, people knew that the moment he opened his eyes, the world would have to change its color.

Even Virtuous Paragons quivered after seeing this old man. An expert's intuition told them that this old man ahead was extremely frightening and mighty.

“Venerable Ninesword, an invincible general under Immortal Emperor Ta Kong.” An ancestor murmured with an aghast expression.

The city became silent right away. First, Old Immortal came, and now it was Venerable Ninesword’s turn. Which other powerful existences were about to arrive and shock the crowd? As for the cultivators with humble backgrounds, they were clever enough to hide without saying a word.

Chapter 1053: Broken Metal

They saw Jikong Wudi personally go greet Venerable Ninesword. It was a very simple ceremony, but people were still shaken all the same.

An ancestor from the previous generation had seen the venerable in action before. He murmured in dejection: “Venerable Ninesword... When all nine blades come out, they will destroy the world. Who will be able to stop him?”

Everyone knew that every imperial lineage had their own power and resources. It could even be said that the majority of them had buried generals to keep them alive until now.

But the more shocking thing was still the Space Trample Mountain. Because Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was the most recent emperor, he was too close to the contemporary times. Many ancestors still recognized his generals or had even seen them sweep through this world.

Therefore, the generals that remained in this world were truly stirring. Moreover, these generals were younger than those of any other imperial lineage.

“Old Immortal from the Rampage Divine Mountain and Venerable Ninesword from the Space Trample Mountain, why did these two giants come?” A junior was confused about their sudden appearance.

“To protect the dao...” The older generation clearly understood: “The path towards Immortal Emperor will be increasingly brutal, so the most powerful dao protectors behind Jikong Wudi’s group are all coming into being.”

After hearing this, the crowd recalled the fight several days ago when Evil Buddha swept through all the geniuses. Against a heaven-defying existence like him, ordinary dao protectors wouldn’t do since he could easily kill even God-Monarchs!

They understood that Jikong Wudi’s group felt threatened. Against opponents like Evil Buddha and South Emperor, their current dao protectors would most likely only die in a confrontation. Only existences like Venerable Ninesword would be able to handle them.

“I heard the Jewel Pillar Mortal King’s dao protector is also here. I’m told that after the last time this dao protector saved him from Bai Jianzhen, he had not appeared again. This time, he is finally here at the Buddhist City.” A well-informed bystander heard this news very quickly.

This dao protector had always been very mysterious. No one knew his origin and some even speculated that he wasn’t from the Jewel Pillar School. Aside from the Mortal King himself, no one had seen his face.

Someone curiously asked: “The dao protectors of Zhan Shi, Jikong Wudi, and the Mortal King are all here, what about the others?”

An ancestor who had a good relationship with the sacred ground answered: “I heard an extremely mighty ancestor from the Sword God Sacred Ground came as well, but rumor has it that Bai Jianzhen denied her ancestor’s protection.”

“I still feel that Heavenly Emperor Lin is in the worst position.” A big shot commented: “In my opinion, among the younger generation, Heavenly Emperor Lin has the weakest background but was able to reach the same height as the rest of the group. It makes sense to say that he is even more remarkable than them.”

No one denied this claim. Everyone knew that Heavenly Emperor Lin came from a mortal family with a literary background. Even with this, he still surged forward without the aid of a powerful master. In the end, he was not inferior to Jikong Wudi’s group. Everyone admired him for overcoming his humble background.

“Sigh, I’m afraid Heavenly Emperor Lin will always be at a disadvantage in the future battle for the Heaven’s Will. The rest of the group has such powerful backings and dao protectors, only Lin is alone. What is he going to do in order to keep up?” Someone felt that it was unfair for Heavenly Emperor Lin.

The crowd nodded in agreement and felt sorry for Lin.

Meanwhile, Li Qiye had disappeared and no one could find him. This wasn’t strange at all because he had entered a different timespace.

In this realm was a vast emptiness. There was nothing besides time and space, let alone any living creature. Eventually, he stopped before this void and looked towards the distance. There was a piece of broken steel far away.

It was neither black nor gray. Strangely enough, its color was quite difficult to discern and had no semblance to the shade of metal. It could even be said that this wasn't a piece of metal at all.

Li Qiye chuckled and murmured while looking at this broken metal: "It is too wasteful to not make something out of this great item. If the monks from Spirit Mountain won't do it, you can come with me instead."

The broken steel quietly remained there in space without any reaction. Li Qiye slowly approached. Once he was close enough, a sudden blast resounded. A sea of blood gushed out and engulfed the world. It instantly blotted out this spatial realm. Inside this sea of blood were countless corpses.

This all seemed too real and captivating. Anyone who saw this scene would be frightened out of their mind.

Li Qiye simply narrowed his eyes at this sight. He focused his mind and the sea of blood quickly disappeared along with the corpses. At this time, there appeared the verdant lushness of trees shouldering the sky. Green vegetation was everywhere, painting a picture of paradise.

But the next moment, Li Qiye changed his thoughts and the thick

forest disappeared. A Buddhist light soared for countless miles. A majestic Buddha emerged in space with incredible tangibility.

Li Qiye smiled and shifted his mind again. Next, endless universal laws rushed upward. They frantically intertwined yet that frenzy had a type of order. However, they were too profound and mysterious. The process went on for a while before the laws couldn't continue any longer. With a pop, they all shattered...

“You are still far too lacking compared to that broken pot. A failure is still a failure, can't compare to the real one.” Li Qiye leisurely taunted.

Alas, the broken metal was still motionless. It had no reaction after failing.

“One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil.” Li Qiye smiled: “Even if you are only a failed creation, you are still peerless and I happen to need you.”

With that, he opened his fate palace and the World Seal flew out. In the blink of an eye, it turned into the Bright Flame Cauldron. After opening, an endless imperial flame poured out.

Li Qiye controlled the cauldron and used this flame to melt the metal. However, despite the raging fire, there was no change to the metal.

Keep in mind that his World Seal had copied the Bright Flame

Cauldron. Although there was a certain gap between it and the real deal, its power was still quite formidable. This type of imperial flame could incinerate a great power at a moment's notice.

But now, this fire failed to melt the metal.

Li Qiye shouted: "Open—" The cauldron changed and an endless imperial might ravaged this space. Li Qiye had finally unleashed a Heavenly Annihilation — the Karmic Imperial Flame!

The raging power of this karmic flame was quite terrifying and capable of burning through space and time. Just a little bit of this fiery essence could destroy an entire country.

However, the metal didn't undergo a great change even after being struck by this annihilation. After being burned for a long time, it only began to turn red.

"Incredible, definitely tough enough. Of course, this is exactly what I want." Li Qiye murmured to himself: "There might not be a flame in this world that can melt you. But coincidentally enough, I have just the thing."

With that, he took out the green lamp. The quaint lamp had a wavering black flame that seemed as if it would go out at any time.

"Go!" Li Qiye shouted and used his Resplendent Break to activate the lamp.

“Boom!” The black flame incinerated all things. With this ultimate attack, even time was burnt to a crisp. Everything in this space was destroyed. Nothing could stop this lamp’s black flame. Even if immortals existed in the heavens, this black flame would still burn them to ashes.

This attack was really too powerful, even Godkings would be annihilated.

Finally, under the heat of the constantly scorching flame, the piece of metal began to melt. Li Qiye channeled his merit law and all four Inner Physiques emerged at the same time — Hell Suppressing, Soaring Immortal, Sky Destroyer, and Void Imperfection.

At the same time, he opened his palace while singing an immortal scripture. The most profound law in this world surfaced while the strands of laws inside the broken metal were being melted down.

Li Qiye channeled his supreme art to refine this metal. In this zone, there was no sun and moon, so one couldn’t tell the time. Eventually, the metal was completely refined by Li Qiye.

Finally, he opened all of his palaces. With a loud explosion, a kingdom appeared behind him with endless blood energy as if it was the most powerful kingdom in this world.

Such vast blood energy did not come from Li Qiye but rather the pool of blood from the Blood Primal Ground and the kingdom of blood of the Blood-devil Tribe.

Li Qiye murmured: “This the perfect stuff to feed you.”

The pool of blood came from the legendary Blood Progenitor while the kingdom of blood was made by Immortal Emperors. Li Qiye required a lot of effort to refine these two types of blood. This was the perfect opportunity to use them.

After refining it well, he polished it again using the runes from the Physique Scripture in another ritual.

Chapter 1054: Soaring Immortal Emissary

While Li Qiye was refining away in the lonely space, the Buddhist City became lively again. Another piece of news spread and made things much more exciting.

“The Soaring Immortal Emissary has just arrived.” This news spread so fast across the city that it was like it had wings.

Many people were shaken after hearing this. An old paragon spoke: “The Soaring Immortal Sect is finally here.”

The emissary had arrived. However, he was not as cold and arrogant as everyone imagined. He entered in a low-key manner and went to visit powerful people like Venerable Ninesword and Old Immortal...

Without a doubt, his humble attitude was very welcomed by the Space Trample Mountain and Rampaging Divine Mountain along with the other imperial lineages. In a few short days, they became quite close. Even Venerable Ninesword himself would personally go out to see the emissary.

“It looks like the Soaring Immortal Sect wants to go big in this generation.” After seeing the emissary acting so flexibly while rallying support from the other lineages, a few ancestors realized something.

The Soaring Immortal Sect had five emperors. It was a supreme existence, but the emissary was still acting courteously, trying to

befriend the other sects. This made others speculate that he was not just here for a short time and instead wanted to stay in the Mortal Emperor World for quite a while.

“The Soaring Immortal Sect will certainly have someone that will compete for the Heaven’s Will this time around.” This was the final conclusion of a great character of the previous generation.

Not long after the arrival of the Soaring Immortal Emissary, two striking women came to the city as well. They both had peerless charm; one was hugging her sword while the other had a saber in her hand. Every location would brighten up with their presence.

“Li Shuangyan, Chen Baojiao...” Someone inside the city recognized these two and had to murmur: “That must mean Fierce Li Qiye is about to come too.”

“Fiercest is coming to the Buddhist City!” Even though no one had seen Li Qiye yet, this news exploded all over the city.

“Fiercest is on his way...” The Buddhist City became rowdy right away. Someone else said: “It is gonna be really fun this time, Fiercest has never given anyone face and is prone to killing. I want to see who will attempt to halt his steps this time around.”

Some were happy and some were sad to hear about Fiercest coming to the Buddhist City. Of course, some were happily gloating over the pain of others. They loved it when supreme geniuses met their match, and Fiercest was the perfect person to do just that. After all, he caused storms wherever he went.

“The stench of blood follows Fiercest, I wonder who will be unlucky this time.” One person was too excited to watch the fun.

Recently, Evil Buddha and South Emperor had overshadowed the others while Fiercest maintained a low profile. Everyone nearly forgot about his existence.

Today, the legendary Fiercest was about to come to the Buddhist City — this was quite shocking to some. They knew that he had a feud with the Blood Race. Not only did he nearly kill the Storm God, the daughter of an Immortal Emperor, he also massacred the Blood-devil Tribe.

His grand showing was enough to shake the southern region, so people were eagerly anticipating his arrival. Some were secretly cheering, wanting to see how he would massacre these supreme geniuses.

Some young geniuses prayed for Fiercest to kill Jikong Wudi’s group. If that happened, perhaps the world might be their stage in the future. Just thinking about this left them drooling in their daydreams.

While people were gossiping about Fiercest, the Soaring Immortal Emissary sent out invitations for a meeting between the great powers. He was planning a summit at the Rainflower Terrace to discuss world events.

Many cultivators naturally wanted to participate in such an event

to bolster their knowledge. However, those who were invited only consisted of rulers or supreme geniuses like Jikong Wudi's group.

At the same time, the saintess became active again. With the emissary as her backer, she worked with the other sects and became the person in charge of communications. She relayed messages from the emissary to the other sects and vice versa. Because of this, her status immediately soared.

After obtaining this prestigious position, she was very excited and carried herself with a smug air.

“The Soaring Immortal Sect is doing something really big. They are inviting all the young geniuses, so they must be trying to take control of the Mortal Emperor World.” Anyone would feel quite dreadful because just one emissary was enough to gather this great group.

“I'm afraid that it is a matter of course. This sect has not only reigned over the nine worlds in the past, they did so for several generations.” An old man gently sighed: “If they really wanted to take control of this generation, I don't think it will be too difficult.”

Besides the other geniuses, the emissary also invited Fiercest Li Qiye. However, Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao accepted the invitation in his stead.

Chen Baojiao asked Sikong Toutian: “Hey swindler, where did our Young Noble go?”

He put on a bitter face and replied: “Grandmas, please, how would this lowly one know? Grandpa goes wherever he wants, he doesn’t report to me.”

The Mortal Monarch was assembling the item inside, so Sikong Toutian had to stand guard by the door. He didn’t dare to leave.

Li Shuangyan glanced over the invitation from the emissary and said: “Should we wait for Young Noble, or should we go?”

“Of course we’re going, why not?” Chen Baojiao became quite spirited and lightly spoke: “Look at that Soaring Heavenly Saintess acting all proud. Hmph, don’t think that just because their Heavenly God Sect is sucking up to the Soaring Immortal Sect that our Cleansing Incense is afraid of them! If it wasn’t for the sect master not agreeing, we would have attacked her sect already!”

So it turns out that the reason why these two were late was that recently, there had been some friction between the Heavenly God Sect and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Due to their rising momentum, the Heavenly God Sect provoked Cleansing Incense several times.

Keep in mind that Cleansing Incense was no longer what it was before. Its younger generation was extremely powerful and was developing at a rapid pace. This was especially true with the sudden appearance of their three Immortal Physiques. Anyone would be quite wary of such a force.

Moreover, due to its relationship with the Heavenly Dao Academy and War God Temple, the Heavenly God Sect had been very honest; they simply didn't want to mess with Cleansing Incense.

However, because they were able to latch onto the Soaring Immortal Sect's thighs, they started acting imperiously and began to provoke Cleansing Incense.

This made the hot-headed Chen Baojiao want to show her might. She took several disciples to take care of several establishments of the Heavenly God Sect. As a result, the Heavenly God Sect calmed down quite a bit.

It could be said that when Chen Baojiao and Li Shuangyan worked together with their physiques, people would be hardpressed to find a worthy opponent for them. They always stayed together so people didn't dare to act recklessly before them, not even Virtuous Paragons.

Chen Baojiao spoke directly due to her frank nature: "Even though Young Noble has yet to return, we can go in his stead, lest that saintess begins to think that we are afraid of them and the Soaring Immortal Sect."

"Fine." Li Shuangyan gently nodded: "That saintess is definitely provoking our sect. If she chooses to be unreasonable, we'll teach her a lesson even if the Soaring Immortal Sect is her backer!"

Li Shuangyan was much calmer and rational than the hot-

blooded Chen Baojiao. However, she was very proud as well and wouldn't show weakness before others.

As for Sikong Toutian, he wanted to attend the event as well. His thinking was that he could take advantage of this opportunity to do some business. However, since the Mortal Monarch was here, he didn't dare to mess around and had to obediently act as the housekeeper.

The Soaring Immortal Emissary's event was held at the Rainflower Terrace. The venue became very lively with many sect masters from great powers personally attending. There was no lack of ancestors as well.

These sect masters and ancestors brought their juniors along. In their eyes, this was a rare opportunity. If they could seize this chance to form a connection with the Soaring Immortal Sect, it would only be beneficial to their sects in the future without any downsides.

In fact, many of the young kids wanted to participate in such a grand event. They wanted to broaden their horizons and meet more experts. Unfortunately, only disciples from the great powers were eligible to enter.

Jikong Wudi, Heavenly Emperor Lin, Zhan Shi, the Jewel Pillar Mortal King, Bai Jianzhen, and Bing Yuxia were all present at this event.

Of course, their dao protectors, such as Old Immortal and

Venerable Ninesword, didn't come. Apex experts like them had no need to lower their standing and come to this place. Only the Heavenly Eagle Demon King under the venerable came as Jikong Wudi's companion.

The demon king was the general's vanguard. His presence was the best declaration; it clearly implied that if anyone wanted to attack the descendant of the Space Trample Mountain, they better ask Venerable Ninesword for permission first. It was a very deterring move.

The emissary sat in the master seat of this event. He personally presided over this meeting while the saintess stood beside him. Without a doubt, he was trying to train her and give her more chances to meet the great experts of the Mortal Emperor World.

Chapter 1055: Direct Confrontation

Before the event officially began, the honored guests quickly sat down. Mei Suyao also came by herself around this time, keeping a very low profile.

However, she couldn't hide her presence even if she wanted to for she was otherworldly like an immortal. No matter where she went, she would attract all gazes. Thus, the guests turned towards her.

The younger ones became intoxicated after looking at her. In the contemporary times, many people considered her to be the prettiest beauty in the Mortal Emperor World. Countless youths lost precious hours of sleep because she was haunting them in their dreams.

“Goddess Mei is here!” Someone couldn't help but exclaim after catching a glimpse of her.

In the past, she traveled with great panache in the form of visual phenomena and had many fans chasing her. Now, she was solitary with a natural demeanor, as if she had returned to the origin.

The emissary went to greet her before gracefully sitting down again. Meanwhile, many of the youths here couldn't divert their eyes from her.

Chen Baojiao and Li Shuangyan arrived a bit after Mei Suyao. Although they were not as supreme as Mei Suyao, they were still

kingdom-toppling. Anyone would have to praise and marvel at the sight of them.

“Cleansing Incense Dual Blades Messengers are here, so where is Fiercest?” Someone wondered after seeing the two ladies.

Everyone knew that Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao were part of Li Qiye’s crew, so when they appeared, the crowd looked behind them to see if Fiercest was there as well. To the disappointment of many, there was no one behind them.

The group of great geniuses like Jikong Wudi also glanced over to look for Li Qiye as well.

These days, Li Qiye’s notoriety had spread far and wide. The group had no choice but to watch out for this opponent.

After seeing Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao sitting down, the Soaring Heavenly Saintess snorted and coldly asked: “Your master Li Qiye isn’t coming?”

She felt that she was in a commanding position with great status. At the same time, their sects were mortal enemies. This was exacerbated by Chen Baojiao and Li Shuangyan leading their disciples to wipe out several branches of her sect. The saintess couldn’t swallow this anger and wanted to use this opportunity to counter.

“Out Young Noble is busy, so we are attending in his stead.” Chen

Baojiao directly responded to the saintess' provocative tone.

Li Shuangyan, on the other hand, was just sitting there like a cold glacier, too lazy to answer the saintess.

“Hmph, don't tell me he's too afraid to come.” The saintess sneered: “I heard he has enemies everywhere. Now that all the heroes in the world have gathered here, he is probably afraid of people seeking revenge so he chose to act like a cowardly turtle.”

Before coming, Chen Baojiao had already guessed that the saintess would use this opportunity to show her aggression. Their conflict was inevitable due to the history of their sects.

Chen Baojiao harshly stared at her and countered: “Our Young Noble isn't afraid of anyone! You are not qualified to comment on our Young Noble. I dare you to say it in front of him.”

“Hmph, Fiercest or whatever, there's nothing special about him.” The saintess mocked: “I don't even put him in my eyes, so why should I talk to him? Who the hell does he think he is?”

Mei Suyao, who was sitting to the side, quietly shook her head after hearing this. The saintess was too inexperienced. After obtaining this measly bit of power, she immediately raised her tail without knowing what kind of person she was opposing!

“Your words alone warrant decapitation!” Chen Baojiao's eyes suddenly turned fierce. She immediately stood up and walked

forward while holding her saber, the glints lighting up the venue.

“Such a big tone!” The saintess currently had a great backing and also a God-Monarch protecting her. She was full of confidence and was not afraid of Chen Baojiao. She sneered: “This is the territory of the Soaring Immortal Sect, not a place for you to run amok!”

She wasn't very bright, but she was well-versed in using other people's prestige for her own goals.

The emissary slightly frowned. He was a bit unhappy with the saintess' conduct. However, she was still his junior in the end. Even if she was in the wrong, he couldn't sit by and watch.

“Young Miss, this is not the place for you to swing your blade.” The emissary lowered his tone. His speech carried a commanding persuasiveness.

The Mortal King told Chen Baojiao: “Junior sister, take a step back and all will be well.”

She coldly glared at him and uttered: “Who is your junior sister?”

The Mortal King didn't become angry. He flatly said: “Junior sister, I know you were bewitched by the others back then so you have some grievances with our school, but in the end, you are still from the Jewel Pillar Sacred School...”

Ever since her Immortal Physique reached half completion, the

school had wanted to drag her back. Some ancestors even hoped that she would marry the Mortal King.

However, she didn't bother giving them any face. In her eyes, she had severed the relationship long ago.

She interrupted him without showing any sensibility: "There's no need to utter such unctuous words. Don't act like you are my senior either since I have no relations to the sacred school."

"Mortal King, you should be annihilating a traitor like this!" The saintess fanned the flames after seeing the two argue.

"Little tramp, come out here and I'll decapitate you in three moves!" Chen Baojiao was impulsive and hated people who brought up her being a traitor the most. She paid a huge price back then to leave the sacred school. She was exiled from her home and family! Thus, her anger immediately erupted after the saintess twisted the story.

"Enough!" The Soaring Immortal Emissary shouted then scolded Chen Baojiao: "This isn't a place for you all to go wild!"

"Is that so?" Chen Baojiao glared at him: "It is not difficult if you want me to show respect to your sect, you just need to keep a tighter leash on your dogs!"

"So insolent." Jikong Wudi slowly spoke at this time: "This event for everyone in the world shouldn't be ruined because of just one

person like you. I don't care who your master is, you should bow your head and apologize this instant."

Before Chen Baojiao could answer, Li Shuangyan stood up with her eyes sweeping through the crowd and declared: "If some people want to release their dogs to bite us, then we'll beat these dogs down regardless of whether they're from the Heavenly God Sect or the Soaring Immortal Sect. We won't show any consideration for their masters!"

Regardless of who they were facing, Li Shuangyan would always stand together with Chen Baojiao. She would never let anyone bully her sister!

Someone noticed that the two girls were prepared to fight against the world on their own and quietly whispered: "They are definitely crazy enough to be` people on the side of Fiercest, they're exactly like him." Their attitude made others think of Fiercest Li Qiye.

The Fiercest would always act extremely arrogant regardless of who he was facing.

The emissary spoke with a chilling voice: "Mortal King, if it is someone from your school, then your school should deal with her. Otherwise, my Heavenly God Sect will discipline her instead. Things won't end so easily if that were to happen."

The Mortal King smiled and stood up while looking at Chen Baojiao: "Junior sister, you were just tricked by the others. It is not too late to return with me now, don't make me take action."

Li Shuangyan coldly laughed and retorted: “If the Jewel Pillar Mortal King is so confident, then bring it on. Today, we’ll suppress your Hell Suppressing Physique so that you will never be able to rise again!”

Her words were domineering and imposing. She didn’t really care for this genius that had a half completion Hell Suppressing Physique!

Although his physique was amazing, there was still a gap between it and the Void Imperfection Physique taken directly from the Physique Scripture. If Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao attacked together, they absolutely could kill him.

“Two great Immortal Physiques to take down another!” Everyone’s heart skipped a beat. They all knew that both girls had half completion Immortal Physiques as well. Their joint effort would definitely subdue the Mortal King.

The Mortal King’s eyes turned cold as he showed a slight grimace.

“If Miss Li wants to fight someone, then even though I am weak, I will still exchange a few moves with you.” Jikong Wudi slowly uttered at this time.

He had a feud with Li Qiye, so without a doubt, he was on the Mortal King’s side.

“If you want to fight someone, then I will exchange a few moves with you!” Another clear voice resounded. The speaker was the cross-dressing Bing Yuxia. She was still holding a beauty’s hand at this moment while looking down on Jikong Wudi. Regardless of the situation, she would unconditionally be on Li Qiye’s side. After all, their relationship was quite strong.

In just a moment, several supreme geniuses became involved in this storm, causing the crowd to look at each other. They vaguely felt that these geniuses had already begun to form alliances for the sake of competing for the Heaven’s Will.

Meanwhile, Zhan Shi sat there still as a rock and Heavenly Emperor Lin only smiled without making a comment. Mei Suyao slightly shook her head. She understood that the emissary wanted this to happen. Nothing could be better for their Soaring Immortal Sect than these supreme geniuses of the Mortal Emperor World killing each other; they would benefit from this whole dispute.

Chapter 1056: Unbeatable Style

At this time, the atmosphere was tense to the extreme. Both sides were anxious and many great powers beneath the terrace didn't dare to utter a single word.

To these great powers, no matter whether it was the Soaring Immortal Sect, the Mortal King, or the girls, these were all people who they couldn't afford to provoke. They could only stand to the side and watch. No one tried to meddle or persuade them not to fight.

The earth suddenly shook as if something had slammed into it.

“Ahh—” Miserable screams resounded from outside the terrace, creating a scene of chaos.

The experts glanced at each other in confusion after hearing this commotion. Who was it, to actually cause trouble outside? At this moment, all the geniuses were here, along with the emissary from the soaring sect. Whoever dared to cause trouble truly didn't know life from death.

Jikong Wudi frowned and issued an order: “Demon King, go outside to see who is causing trouble and capture him for me.”

Even though the emissary was presiding over this event, the Space Trample Mountain was actually responsible for keeping order.

In fact, it was more than strong enough. Everyone knew that Jikong Wudi was here and that Venerable Ninesword was back at the Buddhist City. These troublemakers must be tired of living to come here!

After receiving the order, the Heavenly Eagle Demon King shouted and spread his wings, blotting out the sun. He instantly flew out of the terrace. A bit later, it became quiet.

“Good, it is peaceful again.” Jikong Wudi looked at the group and said: “We’ll continue the meeting. No one will be able to disturb this event from now on. Otherwise, I’m sure the emissary will give out the order to take them down.”

Jikong Wudi was quite imposing at this moment. He indeed had the strength to do so since among the younger generation, one would be hardpressed to find someone on his level. Moreover, the venerable was in the city as well. Who would dare to maneuver against their Space Trample Mountain? Who would dare to oppose them at this moment?

Jikong Wudi tried to build a good relationship with the Soaring Immortal Sect as well. In his opinion, earning this sect’s support would definitely be favorable for him in the future.

“Well said, no one, regardless of who they may be, will disturb this event!” The Mortal King gravely added: “Otherwise, they will be dealt with.”

At this time, everyone clearly saw that Jikong Wudi and the Mortal King were siding with the Soaring Immortal Sect.

Meanwhile, the Soaring Immortal Emissary — in the most prestigious seat — stared at Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao while raising his voice: “If you two ladies apologize to me, I trust that everyone will understand and act as if nothing happened...”

“Boom!” Before he could finish the sentence, the sky turned black. A gigantic figure came flying at a great velocity and smashed a crater into the ground, startling everyone and forcing them to retreat.

“Heavenly Eagle Demon King...” When everyone finally took a look, they saw that this figure that fell from the sky was the demon king who just flew outside earlier.

Blood began to flow through the cracks on the ground where the demon king was lying while a person was standing on top of him.

This person had his foot pressing on the eagle demon’s head so he couldn’t stand up. Such a scene was too shocking. Keep in mind that this demon was a vanguard of Venerable Ninesword, someone who had swept through the world with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. He was an extraordinary demon king, yet he was being trampled upon by someone else.

“Evil Buddha!” Someone shouted in horror after seeing the person on top of the demon king.

The group of geniuses were shocked and immediately stood up. Everyone knew that Evil Buddha had been chased away by Spirit Mountain, so he quietly left the city. No one expected him to come back and instantly trample the Heavenly Eagle Demon King. Wasn't this too domineering?

Jikong Wudi's expression took a turn for the worse. The demon king was their vanguard, but he was being stomped on by someone else in front of everyone.

The demon king wanted to get up, but Li Qiye stomped on his neck. One could hear a bone cracking. The demon king immediately screamed miserably.

Anyone who heard this scream would shiver and feel a tingling sense of pain as well.

“Evil Buddha, you are too presumptuous!” Jikong Wudi had to shout out. This Buddhist's actions were a merciless slap towards their Space Trample Mountain.

However, Li Qiye was too lazy to look at Jikong Wudi. He got down from the demon king's body and leisurely looked at the Soaring Immortal Emissary: “You better look in a mirror and carefully evaluate yourself before asking my people to apologize.”

Such words left the crowd puzzled. Many didn't actually understand what he was saying due to the sheer amount of perceived impudence.

At this time, Li Qiye waved at Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao: “Girls, come over here, your Young Noble will find out who was bullying you two and take charge of this matter.”

The two didn’t say another word and immediately stood behind him.

“Ha!” Bing Yuxia clapped and laughed: “I knew you smelly brat were pretending to be a monk.”

“That’s right.” Li Qiye glanced at her and smiled leisurely: “It has been a bit boring being a Buddhist Lord, so it is time to switch my identity.” With that, he revealed his true appearance.

“Fiercest Li Qiye!” Someone blurted out after seeing him.

In just a second, everyone’s eyes went wide. They couldn’t believe what they were seeing. Even Jikong Wudi’s group turned silly.

“Evil Buddha is Fiercest Li Qiye!” Someone murmured. This news was too difficult for many people to accept in a short period.

Jikong Wudi’s group had grimaces even more unsightly than before. They would rather be defeated by Evil Buddha than Fiercest Li Qiye.

Among those present, only Mei Suyao sat there calmly. She knew something like this would happen the moment Li Qiye came.

Li Qiye looked at the crowd for a bit before revealing a friendly smile while slowly saying: “It is time to take care of some overdue business.”

With that, his eyes fell upon the Mortal King: “I heard someone say earlier that our Baojiao is a disciple from the sacred school?” He turned and looked at the crowd to declare: “Now, I will say this only once, don’t try to gild your face with gold. The next time your school tries to do something like this again, I will personally go to your school and annihilate it!”

This declaration left the Mortal King with an extremely ugly expression. The guy told everyone about his intention to destroy his school. This was not just a slap to their face, but the pinnacle humiliation.

As the school master, how could he swallow this anger? He couldn’t help but shout: “It doesn’t matter whether you are Evil Buddha or Li Qiye, your words are too arrogant. Daring to humiliate my school? I—”

“Since you don’t seem to understand what I’m saying, I’ll teach you what I mean.” Li Qiye interrupted and reached for him with one hand.

“Open!” The Mortal King let out a battle cry. The Hell Suppressing Physique immediately erupted to suppress the heavens and shatter myriad dao. He lifted his leg that carried the weight of a thousand stars to crush Li Qiye.

At this moment, explosions resounded. Under the might of this physique, even the void itself broke apart as it couldn't withstand this terrifying force.

However, with a loud bang, the Mortal King's thigh was caught by Li Qiye. Remember that the Hell Suppressing Physique had boundless weight, especially at half completion. The weight of his leg was the same as millions of the stars in the sky. Yet, in this split second, Li Qiye easily grabbed his thigh.

“Rumble!”

Before anyone could regain their sanity, Li Qiye immediately lifted him up and mercilessly slammed him into the ground left and right. He smashed and smashed again with full malice, causing the earth to shatter into pieces!

Though the Immortal Physique was very tough, the Mortal King was still battered into a bloody pulp under such ruthless smashes.

A spectator shouted in shock: “Impossible!”

Everyone knew that this physique had infinite weight and no one could lift its user off of the ground. However, the Mortal King, at half completion, was being dragged around by Li Qiye like a little chicken, as if he was as light as a feather.

They didn't know that Li Qiye was using the Sky Destroyer

Physique. If the Hell Suppressing Physique had infinite weight, then the Sky Destroyer Physique had limitless power. The two of them supported and deterred each other like the elements.

Alas, the king's physique law was far weaker than Li Qiye's own. Compared to Li Qiye's Sky Destroyer, the king's Hell Suppressing could only accept the beating.

“You dare to show off with only this much speed?” Li Qiye continued smashing the guy on the ground, causing blood to spray everywhere.

It was well known that the Mortal King's physique was invincible, but it was also obvious that his speed was insufficient. This was one of the weaknesses of the Hell Suppressing Physique. It had infinite weight, but it was much slower compared to the other Immortal Physiques!

Chapter 1057: Blood Everywhere

Li Qiye kept smashing the guy on the ground until he was on the verge of death. Only then did he stop and speak: “Go back and tell the Jewel Pillar School that if they dare to talk about Chen Baojiao’s business again, I will personally destroy them.”

Having said that, he casually threw the Mortal King outside.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” A burst of earth-shattering explosions resounded. The Mortal King was thrown very far. His body pierced several mountains before disappearing from everyone’s sight.

All the people present shivered after seeing the king being thrown away like a piece of trash. They were speechless and stared at Li Qiye in awe.

It didn’t matter whether he was Evil Buddha or Fiercest, Li Qiye was ferocious all the same. This was a guy who would kill gods and devils if they were to stand before him. Nothing could hinder his path.

After taking care of the Mortal King, he clapped to get the dirt off his hands. Then, his eyes fell upon the Soaring Heavenly Saintess. After seeing this, many people were startled. They understood that Li Qiye had turned his focus towards the saintess.

First was taking care of the Mortal King, now it was time to oppose the Soaring Immortal Sect. This was both decisive and arrogant, as if he looked on the world with disdain.

“Well, I did promise the monks of Spirit Mountain to not disturb them in their meditation.” Li Qiye said dismissively: “Unfortunately, time and time again, some people think that I have become a soft persimmon that anyone can crush. I heard that someone has placed a bounty on my head. Very well, my head is right here on my neck.”

With that, he tapped on his neck.

The saintess was ghastly pale, but she couldn't back down when everyone was watching. Moreover, she had the Soaring Immortal Sect as her backer. Thinking about her uncle-in-law, she immediately became courageous and shouted: “Li, don't act all arrogant. If you dare to assault everyone, the people in this world won't spare you and the Soaring Immortal Sect won't spare you either. At that time, you will die without a grave. Even your Cleansing Incense Sect will have a calamity befall—”

“Ugh...” Before she could finish, her neck was gripped by Li Qiye. Her body was lifted up high so she couldn't move at all.

His speed was swift to the point where no one could see him clearly. Even the Night Scorpion God-Monarch standing behind the emissary found it too late despite wanting to help.

“I am someone who only likes to listen to flattery and sycophants, but sometimes, I also like it when people curse me. To tell the truth, if you called me a bastard or a little animal, I could act as if I didn't hear it and only treat your words as a fart.” He

gripped her head and slowly shook his head: “However, if someone threatens me, then I won’t be happy. And if I’m not happy, then it will not be pretty. I might even destroy their entire family!”

Having said that, he let out a chilling glare towards the saintess.

“Uncle, save me...” The saintess finally felt fear with her life hanging by a thread. She felt that a death god was beckoning for her at this moment.

The emissary shouted: “Junior, let her go now to avoid making a huge mistake.”

Li Qiye maintained his grip and stared emotionlessly at the emissary: “And if I don’t?”

“Death is the punishment for killing a Soaring Immortal disciple!” The emissary spoke gravely: “If you let her go, we can let bygones be bygones.”

“Yes...” The saintess felt her courage surge again after the emissary stood up for her and had to add: “I am a Soaring Immortal disciple—”

“Snap!” Her words couldn’t come out since her neck was wrung by Li Qiye.

Her pretty eyes widened in disbelief. Even in death she still couldn’t believe that this was the moment of her doom. She was

still full of spirit, dreaming about joining the Soaring Immortal Sect. It was her time to represent the sect to order the rest of the Mortal Emperor World!

This stunned all the spectators. The emissary had recognized her as a disciple of Soaring Immortal. This meant that she could definitely join it.

But now, Li Qiye has snapped her neck. This was killing a disciple from Soaring Immortal in front of everyone. Just how arrogant and overbearing was this?!

No one was more imperious than Li Qiye, the guy who had just challenged Soaring Immortal. The other supreme geniuses like Jikong Wudi wouldn't dare to do so, but Li Qiye did it without a care.

Li Qiye nonchalantly threw away her body and spoke: “ Even if you are the daughter of an Immortal Emperor, I'll still kill you if you provoke me.”

It was an incredibly tyrannical statement that caused everyone to take a deep breath. However, no one dared to say anything. Not long ago, Li Qiye killed the Storm God, the daughter of an emperor.

“Buzz!” While Li Qiye was distracted with talking, a glint flashed. Someone moved at an unbelievable speed to try and pierce his forehead to deliver a fatal blow.

This strike was too fast, beyond visual perception. The ambusher was the Night Scorpion God-Monarch. He wanted to use this opportunity to kill Li Qiye. Though the saintess was dead, the emissary was still there. If he could successfully kill Li Qiye, it would be quite beneficial for him.

“Watch it!” Chen Baojiao and Li Shuangyan both yelled, but it was too late.

“Pluff!” Blood spurted everywhere. A forehead was pierced, but it was not Li Qiye’s, it was the God-Monarch’s.

His eyes showed disbelief and didn’t know who pierced his forehead. The opponent’s speed was a hundred times faster and was more accurate than him. The person didn’t use any techniques or laws. It was the most simple thrust and it instantly penetrated all of his defenses to send him to his end!

At this time, people finally saw the one who attacked. It was an iron man whose body was made out of exquisite parts. Only his head was that of a human.

There was too big of a gap between a God-Monarch and the Mortal Monarch. He only needed one move to kill the scorpion.

“Splash!” Blood splattered again. The Mortal Monarch ripped out the scorpion’s head along with his spine and casually threw it to the ground without showing the slightest trace of emotion.

From beginning to end, Li Qiye didn't even bat an eye while standing there calmly. Everyone held their breaths at the sight of a God-Monarch being slaughtered like a helpless chicken. This scene was simply too horrifying and sent chills down everyone's spines. This existence that looked like a man made out of metal was too horrifying!

"Your arrival has scared away all of those little pests." Li Qiye gently shook his head.

The Mortal Monarch didn't say anything. He stood there with a chilling air next to Li Qiye. His eyes, however, swept through the sky a little bit.

Li Qiye slowly approached to the Soaring Immortal Emissary. The emissary's expression sank. He coldly said: "Junior, what are you doing?"

Li Qiye glanced at the guy and smiled: "We initially had no enmity with each other. You didn't know me and I didn't know you, so we could have had peace together. Unfortunately, I heard people say that you are the Heavenly God Sect's backer and want to maneuver against my sect. Then there is no other choice, I am someone who finds it very difficult to show mercy to my enemies."

The emissary was jolted. However, he still put on a calm expression and spoke: "If you want to resolve this grievance, then we can sit down and talk instead of threatening me! My Soaring Immortal Sect has never accepted anyone's threats—"

“Whoosh!” Just like before, another victim couldn’t finish speaking before Li Qiye pierced his chest. His cultivation was much weaker than the Night Scorpion God-Monarch. Although he was an emissary, he was only an ordinary one and was not powerful at all!

The emissary had to look down at his chest in disbelief. He didn’t expect that Li Qiye would kill an emissary like him so quickly and without any precursor.

“Pluff!” Li Qiye instantly took out his heart and looked at him with scorn: “You are too weak to be prancing around in front of me. Not to mention an ordinary emissary, even if the Chief Ambassador of the Nine Worlds personally came, I still wouldn’t put him in my eyes.”

With that claim, he casually threw the heart away.

“Bang!” The emissary’s body fell to the ground. It could be said that he died an indignant death. Even though he was only an ordinary Virtuous Paragon, he was still the representative of the Soaring Immortal Sect in the Mortal Emperor World. No matter who they might be, even imperial lineages would have to show him some consideration and reception, let alone attack him.

Even at the time of death, he couldn’t understand where this junior came from to actually dare to kill an emissary from Soaring Immortal!

The scene remained quiet all the same. One could even hear a

needle dropping to the floor. Outside of faint breathing, there were no other sounds.

Li Qiye slowly sat down in the chair that the emissary sat in earlier and wiped his hands clean. He lazily glanced at everyone and spoke: “Anyone else have a problem with me? Feel free to speak up at any time.”

Everyone was silent and dazed while staring at Li Qiye. It didn't matter what name they chose to call him, Evil Buddha or Fiercest. He had reached a level of wanton brutality and would dare to kill just about anyone! At this time, who would dare to have a problem with him?

Chapter 1058: Only Rampant Arrogance

At this time, only Jikong Wudi scowled while staring coldly at Li Qiye. Even though he didn't say anything, his attitude revealed it all. The enmity between them had solidified even further.

“You want to challenge me, right?” Li Qiye looked at him then glanced over at Zhan Shi's group and smiled: “I welcome it at any time. But remember this, I will not always be so merciful. On the next challenge, remember to bring a coffin to avoid dying without a grave.”

Jikong Wudi carried an unsightly expression. Back at the Heavenly Dao Academy, he and Li Qiye had a feud. Not long ago, he was almost converted and had to dig out his heart just to escape. Today, Li Qiye crippled the Heavenly Eagle Demon King before everyone. This feud had reached an irreconcilable level.

In the end, he didn't say anything and carried the demon king away.

Even though there was a furious flame raging in his heart, he still contained it. Challenging Li Qiye right now was extremely unwise. He had lost once already and needed sufficient preparations before challenging Li Qiye again!

“The path for the grand dao is endless. I will challenge Brother Li again in the future.” Zhan Shi also wanted to leave. The difference was that he was still as calm as ever, unlike the furious Jikong Wudi.

Even though he had lost to Li Qiye as well, they had no life-and-death hatred. On the contrary, he believed that winning and losing were normal for cultivators. Thus, he was still able to speak calmly towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye gently nodded and looked at Zhan Shi: “I don’t mind sparring, but if you want to compete for the Heaven’s Will, my former statement will apply — prepare for death with a coffin. If it’s not you, it will be others who shall die on the path for the Heaven’s Will.”

Zhan Shi gently sighed and didn’t say anything before turning around to leave. He understood Li Qiye. In fact, this had been the case for many generations now. There was no friendship on this path since there was only one Heaven’s Will. Unless one decided to exit the competition, it would be a fight to the death, just like Li Qiye had said.

“The green hills are still there along with the clear flowing water. Brother Li, see you again.” Heavenly Emperor Lin left as well after clasping his hands towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile while looking at Heavenly Emperor Lin and leisurely said: “You are truly someone who can maintain a cool demeanor.”

Others might not understand what Li Qiye meant, but Heavenly Emperor Lin naturally got the point. He only smiled freely and floated away.

Many people praised the emperor's demeanor. He had lost to Evil Buddha before but was still so carefree and nonchalant; there were no traces of hatred or resentment.

Bai Jianzhen was the next to leave. She stared at Li Qiye for a bit without speaking. They had known each other even longer than some of the others here.

"I remember that we still have one sword left in our duel." Li Qiye looked at the sword-hugging woman and smiled.

Back at the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground, they had a duel of three sword moves. They only had time for two before the Nantian Young King interrupted the third.

Bai Jianzhen remained silent when the past was brought up. She quietly hugged her sword without replying, showing a demeanor as cold as her blade. In the end, she also left without a care.

The last to leave was Mei Suyao. The people here were holding their breaths to see if she wanted to do anything. Among the current geniuses, none had won against Li Qiye.

Jikong Wudi, the Mortal King, Heavenly Emperor Lin, Zhan Shi, Bai Jianzhen, and Bing Yuxia had all lost. The only person not included in this list was Mei Suyao.

Someone quietly murmured: "Maybe Goddess Mei has a chance.

Back then, the Mortal King challenged her twice and lost both times. After that, he never dared to challenge her again. Rumor has it that she has cultivated an invincible dao. Without becoming an Emperor Candidate, the Mortal King has no chance of beating her.”

The crowd was full of anticipation because they wanted to see Mei Suyao challenge Li Qiye. She was the only one in this current generation who still had a chance of defeating him.

Unfortunately, Mei Suyao didn’t challenge him, disappointing the crowd. She gave him a gentle gesture of blessing before drifting away as well.

“Goddess Mei has not competed for anything in recent years.” Another gently sighed. This sentiment rang true across the experts from the Hundred Cities. They felt that she had changed too much. It could be said that people had almost forgotten her in recent years due to her low profile.

“Okay, the event is over, everyone can leave now.” Li Qiye clapped his hands and smiled at the crowd.

No one here dared to say anything. At this second, who would want to mess with Fiercest? Everyone quickly left one after another.

“Ladies, you guys go back first.” Bing Yuxia told the beauties next to her and followed Li Qiye.

“Let’s go back.” Li Qiye smiled and stood up to leave.

“Li Qiye...” Back at his mansion, Jikong Wudi had an ugly grimace and gritted his teeth.

In his eyes, losing to Li Qiye was not a shameful matter. The only grudge was that Li Qiye humiliated him before everyone. He had a triple saints aptitude and was praised as a deity by others. How could he swallow this blatant and public humiliation?

“Young Noble, how about we ask the Sword Ancestor to kill Li Qiye?” A strategist spoke.

“No.” With a fierce glare, he coldly uttered: “I will personally dispose of him one day. I swear it!”

“Don’t make a move against Li Qiye for now.” At this time, Venerable Ninesword came by. Aside from Jikong Wudi, everyone else here quickly prostrated.

The venerable slightly waved his hand and told the group to leave. Only him and Jikong Wudi were left in the room.

He told Jikong Wudi: “The iron man beside Li Qiye is very powerful.”

Jikong Wudi asked in a serious tone: “Ancestor knows his identity?”

The old man gently shook his head: “I’ve only heard about a distant legend, I’ve never seen him before. I don’t know how Li Qiye managed to bring out an old man that has been slumbering for so long.”

“It seems like this iron man wants to be Li Qiye’s dao protector.” Jikong Wudi’s eyes lit up with a cold gleam. Just thinking back at how the iron man killed a God-Monarch so easily... This was absolutely a terrifying existence.

“I will personally watch his movements.” The venerable lowered his tone: “If he isn’t Li Qiye’s dao protector, then everything will be simple. And even if he is, it’s fine as well. We’ll just have to invite the prime general to come out!”

The prime general was the most powerful general under Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. Legend states that he was a real unbeatable Godking! Some even said that outside of losing to Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, no one else could defeat him.

“No one can stop Young Noble’s path, the Heaven’s Will is yours alone.” The venerable told Jikong Wudi.

With a cold glint in his eyes, Jikong Wudi was completely confident as well: “I’ll personally cut down Li Qiye. That’s the only way to get rid of this hatred in my heart!”

“Yes, that day will come.” The venerable spoke: “Young Noble should lay low for now, give me time to see what that iron man wants to do.”

Jikong Wudi gently nodded and didn't say anything else.

Back in their abode, Li Qiye waved his sleeve, signaling all the girls to leave. Only the Mortal Monarch stayed behind.

He had assembled the treasure well for Li Qiye: “Even though I spent more time than expected, I didn't let Your Excellency down and have finally put it together flawlessly.”

Li Qiye took a look and put it away before speaking to the monarch: “Are you really not going with me to take a look?”

“There's no need...” The monarch sighed softly and shook his head: “What's the point of seeing it? All have been destroyed by the river of time. Seeing it might not make me feel any better, I'll just leave it as a nice remembrance.”

Li Qiye nodded and didn't force the guy. Eventually, he spoke: “I have obtained some decent Blood Era Stones from the Heavenhoof Ravine, a few pieces are from Immortal Emperors. It wasn't easy for you to come out this time, so bring these immortal stones back with you. Maybe they will be able to keep you sealed for another period of time.”

“No.” The monarch refused: “I want to reach my end in this generation.”

“For what?” Li Qiye stared at the monarch with confusion: “Your lifespan hasn’t withered yet. If you seal yourself, you can still live on.”

“What’s the point of holding on?” The monarch smiled wryly: “My old friends have all passed away. The only person who understands me in the current generation is Your Excellency, and I know that you will head towards that ultimate battle. Maybe I won’t be able to see you again in a future generation.”

Li Qiye went quiet for a moment before gently nodding: “You have followed me for so long, so I won’t hide it from you. In this generation, regardless of life or death, I will fight to the very end for an answer.”

“I’m tired as well.” Li Qiye sighed softly while sitting on his chair: “After living for so long, sometimes I wonder what it is I’m living for. Outside of the final battle, I don’t have any other aspirations.”

The monarch stood there quietly, keeping him company.

“Unify the nine worlds? Becoming an Immortal Emperor? Destroying the deities?” Li Qiye felt a bit helpless and smiled wryly: “None of these is what I want.”

The monarch didn't say anything. He knew that Li Qiye had done all of these things before, they were not worth pursuing in his eyes.

Chapter 1059: Bing Yuxia's Beauty

At this time, the mood in the room was slightly somber. Li Qiye had been sitting there in a daze before he eventually smiled faintly to say: "You are right, I might die in the final battle in this generation. That will be my end, the closing of the curtains."

"I believe in Your Excellency." The monarch spoke: "I trust that ultimately, you will be able to stand above the high heavens and become the one and only across all the eons."

"Perhaps the result doesn't matter." Li Qiye smiled: "I just need to keep on working hard and I will definitely get my answer one day!" With that, a gleam flashed in his eyes as his spirits rekindled.

The monarch understood that Li Qiye had always maintained an invincible temperament. Even when he became sentimental, it would pass by very quickly.

"If you want to live through this generation, do you have any wishes?" Li Qiye looked at the monarch and asked: "If you want anything, just tell me."

"Your Excellency, I have no wishes." The monarch gently shook his head: "After returning, I will teach some juniors and enjoy the rest of my years. Even though I have no direct descendants, all of the disciples in the valley are my children."

"I am happy that you are able to see things so clearly. Not everyone can be so open-minded before death." Li Qiye smiled and

was sincerely glad for the monarch. For millions of years, countless invincible Godkings didn't mind paying any cost to prolong their life.

The monarch bowed deeply towards Li Qiye and spoke: "If Your Excellency ever requires my service in the future, I will be waiting at the Heaven's Secret Valley."

"Let this be our farewell." Li Qiye sighed softly and patted the monarch's back: "I'll see you off."

The monarch didn't say anything and quietly walked alongside Li Qiye. Perhaps this was the last time he could walk next to His Excellency, his last chance to assist him.

When they reached the gate, the monarch beckoned for Sikong Toutian. The guy immediately ran over and kneeled.

The monarch spoke: "You are coming back with me."

After hearing this, Sikong Toutian put on a painful expression and looked pitifully over at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye couldn't help but scold the thief: "The Mortal Monarch thinks that you are worth grooming, so he wants you by his side. This is your fortune, something that people can't even dream of."

"Thank you, Ancestor..." Sikong Toutian bowed. He had no other choice at this time. He was also aware that it was a wondrous

creation. For people from the Heaven's Secret Valley, to be taught by the Mortal Ancestor was a great honor, a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity.

However, he was a restless person. He was afraid that he would be stuck back at the valley for a long time. This thought alone gave him quite a headache.

Li Qiye left the city with the Mortal Monarch. They traveled together for a very long distance before the monarch bowed again to say: "Your Excellency, please stop."

Li Qiye paused to look at the monarch. He sighed in the end and commented: "Even if you see a friend off for a thousand miles, in the end, you will still have to part. Take care."

The monarch bowed one last time before flying away with Sikong Toutian.

Li Qiye stood there quietly with his eyes fixated on the departing monarch until he disappeared into the horizon. At this time, he sighed once more.

For millions of years, parting was a common occurrence to him. He had sent many friends away and thought that he would be numb after all this time. However, his heart remained sentimental.

Despite being wrapped in layers of calluses, it was still beating

and full of life.

“Time is compassionless, but humans are full of emotions.” In the end, he lamented and returned to the Buddhist City.

Li Qiye went back to his abode and Bing Yuxia immediately pounced on him while mercilessly beating on him: “Smelly Qiye, you actually dared to molest me! Watch how I’m going to deal with you.”

Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh while slapping her buttocks and squeezed them: “Damned girl, if you keep on messing around, I’m going to push you onto a bed and have my way with you.”

Bing Yuxia blushed after hearing this and felt her body becoming hotter. She kicked him hard and said: “Smelly Qiye, you are just a pervert!”

Li Qiye leisurely replied: “Little girl, don’t judge me with your narrow view. Your beauty alone isn’t worthy of my attention. It could even be said that being molested by me is your honor.”

She was angered by his taunt and put her hand on her waist to retort: “My ass. Li, this lady, no, this Young Noble is the one who doesn’t care for you.”

Seeing the cross-dressing girl ahead in her pouty gesture left Li Qiye smiling: “Girl, you should be thanking me. If I didn’t point out your mistakes, you wouldn’t be as accomplished today.”

“Hmph.” She snorted. However, she still secretly admitted this. Without his pointers, she wouldn’t have been able to comprehend their Icy Feather Palace’s Heaven Cutting Tablet to this degree.

Li Qiye smilingly told her: “Hey, while I still have some time, stay here. I do like you a lot.”

“Bah, get that idea out of your head. I won’t be your woman, so stop daydreaming.” She angrily glared at him: “I have so many beauties around me that I can’t even enjoy them all.”

Li Qiye laughed: “Where did your mind run off to? Who says anything about me wanting you to become my woman? I would have to think about it quite a lot. Look, in terms of figure, you are not a match for Baojiao. In terms of facial features, you aren’t better than Shuangyan at all. Plus, who would like someone who acts like an unruly brat all day?”

“Li Qiye...!” She gritted her teeth angrily after hearing this and glared at him.

Li Qiye gently waved his hand: “Okay, little girl, I won’t play with you. To tell the truth, when I actually have some time, you should be good and stay by my side. I can teach you about cultivation, there is still a long way for you to go while learning about the Heaven Cutting Tablet.”

“Why are you so nice to me?” She became a bit curious and stared at him. It wasn’t like she didn’t know Li Qiye. Even a genius like

her wouldn't necessarily get into his eyes. Plus, she knew that in order to earn Li Qiye's favor, one must pay a huge price.

Li Qiye smiled and said: "Because I like you."

"Please, who would believe that nonsense?" She naturally didn't think that her charm was at this level. Li Qiye simply had no shortage of women. She knew this full well.

"There's no reason, maybe I'm just in a really good mood today." Li Qiye gently touched her face. Even though she was cross-dressing, it didn't take away from her beauty.

"Or maybe I really like your frank character." Li Qiye leisurely smiled while actually feeling sentimental inside.

Sending the Mortal Monarch away made him remember many things. Looking at Bing Yuxia reminded him of Immortal Emperor Bing Yu back then. This made him a bit emotional. Even though time was compassionless, it did leave him with many things.

She looked at him and softly asked: "Have something on your mind?" Don't look at her usual penchant for cross-dressing and masculine demeanor and be fooled. Sometimes, she was also very caring and acted with a difficult-to-describe gentleness.

She caught a glimpse of loneliness before it quickly disappeared from his eyes.

“Nothing really. Maybe I am now old and have become a little sentimental.” Li Qiye smiled faintly.

“Hold it.” She punched his shoulder and said: “Calling yourself old at this age? Don’t you feel embarrassed at all for saying that?”

Li Qiye looked at her and chuckled without saying anything else.

At this time, Chen Baojiao came in and informed Li Qiye: “Young Noble, Goddess Mei wants to see you.”

He slapped Bing Yuxia’s butt and said: “Okay, go. If you want to repay me, you can carry my palanquin next time.”

The victim of such indecency fiercely glared at him before leaving.

Li Qiye waved his sleeve and told Chen Baojiao: “Let her come in.”

A moment later, a fragrant breeze floated by. Mei Suyao came with her transcendent appearance and saw Li Qiye. She gently gave him a gesture of blessing again in a gentle and calm manner.

“I have to admit that you are getting more and more likable. Sensible and understanding.” Li Qiye noticed her peerless charm and chuckled: “This is not letting your immortal bone down.”

“To be in your good graces is my honor.” She calmly answered with a faint smile.

Li Qiye asked: “Go ahead, what is the matter?”

Mei Suyao took out a trunk and handed it to him: “The ancestor found an item in our treasury. He asked me to bring it to you with a message — this is a token of our Eternal River School’s goodwill.”

Li Qiye opened the trunk and found a powerful imperial aura surging inside. There was an imperial robe folded neatly within.

Li Qiye gently rubbed it and smiled. He closed the trunk then looked at Mei Suyao: “It seems like your old geezer is really putting a lot of thought into this.”

This imperial robe belonged to Li Qiye. He wore it all the time in the past. Later on, it was lost outside and he didn’t try to find it again. It was because he had too many treasures; if he had to find every single one, it would seem a bit meaningless.

Chapter 1060: Mei Suyao's Path

Li Qiye was not reserved and accepted the imperial robe. He smiled: "It looks that old geezer really understands me."

"The ancestor said that it might have some use for Young Noble's trip to the Lesser Deva World." Mei Suyao smiled.

He continued on: "That old man is really not bad. However, he still hasn't grasped the true meaning of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau as well as the Lesser Deva World. They are both places where external items are useless, only the dao heart matters." Li Qiye pointed at his heart: "The imperial robe is only a proof of entry, a ticket. However, I do appreciate his thoughtfulness."

Mei Suyao gently nodded and didn't say anything else. Adding her own comments would only be showing one's slight skill before an expert.

He looked at her and chuckled: "What does your Eternal River School want?"

She shook her head: "The ancestor does not seek anything from Young Noble, he only wants to show our good faith."

"The old geezer... a bit interesting." Li Qiye smiled and asked her: "Then what do you wish for?"

Mei Suyao pondered for a moment before gently shaking her

head: “I won’t hide it from Brother Li, I do not wish for anything.”

Li Qiye stared straight into her bright eyes: “I want to hear what is truly on your mind, regardless if it is out of consideration for your progenitor or the goodwill of your old geezer. I can solve quite a few things.”

She wondered a bit more and gently sighed before lifting her head to meet his gaze in a calm and natural manner: “To tell the truth, I’m at a loss. I’m not sure what I want.”

He looked into the depths of her eyes and slowly spoke: “You have lost your goal and do not know where to go from here.”

“Perhaps you can put it that way. My heart desires more than the heavens, yet my life is thinner than paper. I really do not know.” She gently sighed.

“You are mistaken.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “If what you say is true, then everyone in this world should be lamenting since the statement applies to everyone. The crux of the issue is that you are too arrogant.”

“I won’t deny that.” Mei Suyao revealed a wry smile that did not take away from her charm: “I started cultivating at a young age and have always worked hard for the day when I can compete for the Heaven’s Will to become an Immortal Emperor, to stand at the peak, above myriad races and the nine worlds.”

“Alas, I understand that the throne of this generation is not meant for me.” She sighed: “With Young Noble here, all of my efforts are for naught. Regardless of one’s powerful ambition, in the end, both ambition and will shall be nailed into the ground and only a lamentable wail can be heard. Even struggling is in vain.”

“You can try going all out.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “Even though the war for the Heaven’s Will is ruthless, I can spare you in the future battles out of consideration for your school.”

“What’s the point?” She bitterly smiled: “Young Noble should know that I am not belittling myself. Among the countless geniuses in this generation, I can defeat people like Jikong Wudi and Zhan Shi. I am even confident in fighting against the descendant of the Soaring Immortal Sect. Even South Emperor does not deter me, I can let it all go and take him on in the future!”

“Yes, what you lack is time and time alone. There is still some time before the Heaven’s Will war. With your talents, becoming an Emperor Candidate is definitely not a problem, so you really do have a chance of fighting against South Emperor. The outcome will depend on your own fortune.” Li Qiye nodded and acknowledged her claim.

She was born with an immortal bone and cultivated the Alaya Fragrant Dao from the Eternal River School. As long as there was enough time, she indeed had the chance to fight against a top existence like South Emperor.

“But Young Noble exists in this world, so everything is for naught.” She gently sighed and bitterly spoke: “Just like you said,

my immortal bone can communicate with the gods and understand myriad dao. In the past, I was blinded by pride and couldn't see through Young Noble's depth. Today, I have returned to the origin and comprehended great mysteries. Your momentum is unstoppable with a unique physique across all the eons, a peerless fate palace system, the ultimate dao heart, and also an understanding of the ages... Every aspect is incomparable. Challenging you is just a waste of time."

Even though Mei Suyao didn't know Li Qiye's true identity yet, she was aware of his physique, palaces, and dao heart. They all made it impossible for anyone to oppose him.

She was once completely confident, but once her immortal bone gained the ability to see through all things, she understood that even with greater self-confidence, she wouldn't be able to change the outcome.

"This immortal bone located at your soulbone is truly remarkable. Today, you have truly comprehended its profundities." Li Qiye gently nodded. Very few people could see through his constitution, but Mei Suyao was able to do so today.

This was all due to the change of her dao heart. It returned to the origin, the natural path. This allowed her to comprehend the essences of her fragrant dao as well as the immortal bone. With this, she was able to deduce everything in this world.

"Sometimes being ignorant and always arrogant is not a bad thing. At the very least, these things can keep me walking forward with courage." She spoke woefully.

She had lost her goal since she couldn't become an emperor. There were no more ambitions or aspirations. Not knowing a goal is the same as not having one at all.

“Always walk forward on the endless grand dao and you will surely find an unexpected harvest.” Li Qiye smiled.

Mei Suyao disagreed: “This is a battle where the conclusion is already known. It doesn't matter how colorful the process is or how one struggles. Ultimately, the result will still be the same. Losing to you or becoming a pile of bones on the path towards the throne... To be frank, for millions of years, this path has already seen too many deaths. My bones being added to the pavement won't matter, and them being omitted is equally meaningless.”

She slowly said: “It is not that I have lost the will to fight. Even if I keep on cultivating like this, I can still become an Emperor Candidate and a Godking, but it all seems so dull.”

Li Qiye smiled and asked: “What will you do after becoming an Immortal Emperor? When you stand at the top, what will occupy your thoughts?”

Mei Suyao pondered over this question then looked Li Qiye straight in the eye to say: “If you want me to answer this right now, I can only say that I do not know. In the past, I would have said while standing proudly at the top of the nine worlds, I will illuminate the entire generation and herald a brilliant age. But now, I don't know.”

“This shows your maturity and understanding the nature of the grand dao. Even at the very end, you will still be like you are now, a dull existence.” Li Qiye smiled: “But there is something that you aren’t aware of. All things in nature, all origins and even the apex, they are only the beginning.”

“Only the beginning?” She was confused by this answer.

“Come, have a seat.” He gestured her over and patted his thigh.

She didn’t hesitate at all and sat on him. When she felt his thigh, her face blushed and showed a faint shade of pink. Li Qiye was the only man she had been so intimate with.

However, he had no debaucherous intentions and only lifted her flawless face before speaking in a serious tone: “Be ready and fortify your dao heart.”

Mei Suyao took a deep breath and nodded solemnly: “I’m ready.”

At this time, Li Qiye opened his eyes. They lit up in a dazzling manner, as if a new world was opening. Mei Suyao felt her body being sucked into a magnificent world full of wondrous legends.

It was an era of the dao, one with gods and devils bathing themselves in blood. In this place, people were powerful enough to blot out the sky. Mythical tales described this place where fresh blood drowned out everything. Corpses and bones were piled to

the sky. Here, there was laughter and boundless sadness...

Mei Suyao's soul was in disarray as she experienced endless vicissitudes, joys and sorrows, darkness and light...

Her hands somehow tightly hugged Li Qiye's neck. It was a very tight embrace as her tears dripped onto his robes. She unknowingly cried then smiled then cried some more...

After a long time, Li Qiye finally closed his eyes and closed off this world. Her mind returned to the real world.

At this time, she didn't say anything and only leaned on his shoulder with her hands still clutching his neck. Her tears continued to quietly flow down her pretty face and onto his wet clothes.

Li Qiye gently stroked her silky hair and said: "There is no end to this world or the grand dao. Immortal Emperor is just the beginning."

"You were enlightened and have come to understand your immortal bone on top of mastering the Alaya Fragrant Dao. You thought you had seen the entire world and all the dao. In actuality, you have only been looking at a corner of this world, a small section of the dao." Li Qiye slowly spoke.

"Thank you, Young Noble." She leaned on his body using his shoulder as a pillow. Her tears had yet to dry while she thanked

him from the bottom of her heart.

Chapter 1061: Sleepless Night

After a very long time, she finally got up slowly. She leaned over and gently and sincerely kissed Li Qiye on the forehead.

“Go. When you have made up your mind, come and find me again.” Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve.

Mei Suyao didn't say anything else. She bowed towards him before leaving. As she stepped through the door, he spoke: “Go tell the old geezer that I have never shown mercy to my enemies, but I am also not stingy to those who pledge allegiance to me. It is a good thing that he is very sensible and smart.”

“I will relay the message.” She gently nodded and drifted away.

Not long after she left, Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao came in. Chen Baojiao checked him out and said: “Young Noble, don't tell me you bullied her. It looks like she cried earlier.”

“Does your Young Noble look like someone who bullies women?” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “I only helped her open her mind to a new world.”

Li Shuangyan curiously asked: “What kind of world?”

Li Qiye chuckled and replied: “It is a world that you two do not need to see because you already have happiness, joy, and aspirations. She is not the same. With an immortal bone for her

soulbone, she became apathetic to all things after understanding them. If I didn't show her a new world, she would continue down this path and her end would either be converting to Buddhism or living in seclusion. That would be a waste to someone with her talents."

"So Young Noble is saying that you want to take in the prettiest girl in the Mortal Emperor World?" Chen Baojiao blinked and spoke in a misleading manner.

He smiled and shook his head: "I'm only valuing her talents. The Eternal River School's ancestor has been trying to win my favor, so I'm simply giving her a chance. The old geezer has been very sensible this whole time."

"Goddess Mei is the number one beauty of our Mortal Emperor World, so you should take her in. Who else would be a match for her except you?" Chen Baojiao continued on with her teasing.

"You are wrong. To be precise, your Young Noble doesn't care about that." He smiled and shook his head.

"It is not bad to take her in. Why should we let someone else have the number one beauty?" The always-icy Li Shuangyan added with a deadpan delivery.

Li Qiye smiled in response: "Let's not dwell on the matter of my romance. I'll take you two to the Lesser Imperial Devil World now." He looked at the two of them and asked: "Why isn't Chuyun here?"

He had promised to take Ye Chuyun to see the Buddhist Funeral Plateau before and find her some fortunes. However, she wasn't here right now.

"I don't know." Chen Baojiao shrugged slightly: "I don't know what is going on with her, I feel like she has changed quite a bit."

"She wants to live in seclusion." Li Shuangyan was much more sensitive than Chen Baojiao and said: "I think it has something to do with you. In my opinion, she wants to follow you but is not confident in keeping up, so she would rather seclude herself."

Li Qiye didn't say anything else and only sighed. He understood Ye Chuyun's choice. He had given her the option, but ultimately, she chose a different path.

He would rather leave it to fate than force the matters of this world. This was her choice, after all.

In the end, he said plainly: "If it is destined, then we will meet again."

Tonight, many people lost sleep in the Buddhist City after finding out that Evil Buddha was Li Qiye. The cultivators here went to bed with heavy hearts. This was especially true for the younger generation who were drowned in despair and saw no sliver of

hope.

Everyone had seen just how invincible Evil Buddha was with their own eyes. After he was banished by Spirit Mountain, the whole world rejoiced. In their eyes, it was finally time to say goodbye to this Evil Buddha fella.

But now, Evil Buddha's real identity turned out to be Li Qiye. It didn't matter whether he was a monk or a cultivator, he was unbeatable all the same. The truth left people unable to sleep.

"This generation really leaves people in anguish. Even if Jikong Wudi and Zhan Shi's group is fairly strong, I'm afraid they still won't be able to compete with Fiercest." Someone said with emotions.

"The unluckiest is still the Jewel Pillar Mortal King. He lost again and again to Fiercest, so I wonder if his dao heart was affected or not. Will he be able to rise from defeat once more? If he can't stand up from where he has fallen, it will truly be over for him." Another murmured.

Sleep was out of the picture tonight. To all the other geniuses, Li Qiye was Mt. Tai pressing on their chests, leaving them out of breath.

Among them, Heavenly Emperor Lin was the coolest. He stared at the night sky above the city and chuckled: "This great era will surely be brilliant. I can't wait to see senior brother meet a powerful rival."

Even though Zhan Shi was not as nonchalant as Lin over this matter, he was still very determined: “There is no one who is forever unbeaten in this world, the victor will only be decided at the end of the path.” He was trying to bolster his dao heart.

Under the same moon, Bai Jianzhen was embracing her sword and stood silently in place. The night engulfed her icy demeanor that was as chilling as a sword.

Unlike the other geniuses who were brilliant stars along the path towards the grand dao, Bai Jianzhen’s dao of the sword was emotionless and ruthless. This was the grand dao of their Sword God Sacred Ground.

Thus, she always traveled by herself on the solitary and endless path of the grand dao.

Even though the sacred ground had sent an ancestor to be her dao protector, she refused this arrangement because she felt that it wouldn’t be of much assistance to her sword dao.

After trying to understand the mad sword dao, she felt that she was reaching the end of this path. At that moment, she wanted to augment her dao foundation to become an Emperor Candidate for the Heaven’s Will.

However, after fighting against Evil Buddha, she had a different perspective on the dao of the sword, something completely different from the dao of the mad sword.

She needed a breakthrough. There was a calling inside her, and she heard it too well. A cry of desire for the dao of the sword. She was born for the sword and she shall die for the sword!

“A different sword dao!” In the end, her gaze became firm and profound.

At a temple inside the Buddhist Funeral Plateau, the Mortal King was lying on a bed. His injuries this time were quite serious. However, his secret backer truly had heaven-defying capabilities and actually cured these wounds in a short period of time.

“You are not a match for Li Qiye.” A person was standing next to the king’s bed. He seemed to be veiled in darkness.

“I know, so I have to improve. If I have enough speed and power, I will be able to defeat him and grant him a death without a burial.” The Mortal King gritted his teeth.

He viewed Li Qiye as a mortal enemy and had sworn to not share the same sky as him. He wouldn’t give up until Li Qiye was dead.

“Even if your speed increases, you still won’t necessarily be his opponent.” The person next to the bed spoke in a serious manner: “I still can’t see through him, but one thing is certain, his background is definitely extraordinary. Not just anyone can train

someone like him. Even Godkings and imperial lineages wouldn't be able to."

"I don't care who is training him, I must defeat him!" The Mortal King was extremely determined without any intention to yield.

The figure next to the bed replied: "I chose you because I value your oath to never give up. However, I have spent a lot of time on you. If you just die for no reason, then all of my efforts will be in vain."

"If I have to be a coward, then you might as well let me die. Before everyone, that Li humiliated me and snatched my junior sister away. This is an unforgivable offense. Even if I die, I must take him down with me!" The mortal king spoke forcefully.

The figure could only shrug: "If you are so hellbent on going to die, I might not save you. There are too many people at the plateau right now, including some strong beings. Old Immortal and Venerable Ninesword, these two are not easy to mess with, and I have no plans of showing my face right now."

"Maybe we can join hands with the Space Trample Mountain and Jikong Wudi." The Mortal King took a deep breath and suggested: "That sect has some invincible generals, and Master, you are untouchable as well. If we combine forces, just one Li Qiye will be nothing. Even if he has someone amazing as his dao protector, we can still kill him!"

The figure pondered for a moment before giving his thoughts: "I

will consider this option and go see Venerable Ninesword. However, if you want to take revenge on Li Qiye, you should train hard right now. I have a few things prepared for situations like this to let you power up in a short time.”

“Yes, I will not let you down, Master.” The Mortal King chose to determinedly persevere. He was willing to experience even harsher training if it meant that he could defeat Li Qiye.

“Amitabha—” When night came, a Buddhist chant echoed across the entire plateau. Everyone was suddenly alarmed and stood up.

As they gazed into the night, they saw a temple emitting an endless Buddhist light. It was the Nihility Temple inside the Lesser Imperial Devil World.

This brilliance shot up boundlessly, seeming as if it wanted to illuminate the entire lesser world. Such a blinding light carried a peerless Buddhist aura; it was what was suppressing the lesser world all along!

At the same time, people found out that the chant from earlier didn’t come from the plateau or Spirit Mountain but rather the Nihility Temple.

Chapter 1062: Bai Jianzhen

“The Lesser Imperial Devil World has opened...” When night came, this news exploded to even the most remote corners across the plateau.

Not far from Spirit Mountain where the moonlight was shining on a sparkling great lake, a huge group was already waiting nearby with their eyes fixated on the water’s surface.

“Splash!” A sound like a carp crossing the dragon gate came about. More bubbles appeared in a very lively and happy scene as if they had their own sentience.

“Splash! Splash! Splash!” These water ripples slowly jumped and formed a huge Buddhist gate with symbols on them. Each symbol seemed to suppress the world inside, preventing the creatures within from getting out.

“The gate to the lesser world is there, let us go.” An ancestor shouted after seeing the stabilization of the portal. He brought his disciples inside and disappeared right away.

Other people quickly followed suit. They had been waiting for this rare opportunity for too long.

“Rumble!” Chariots rampaged through the sky with Venerable Ninesword in the lead.

“Jikong Wudi is coming, we need to hurry!” Many people were startled after seeing this team and pushed past each other in their mad rush into the Buddhist gate.

After Jikong Wudi came, those who hadn’t entered yet made way for him. No one dared to stop them, especially after seeing the venerable sitting on a chariot. Anyone would shiver with apprehension.

After this group went inside, other geniuses like Zhan Shi, Heavenly Emperor Lin, and the Jewel Pillar Mortal King went in as well.

Many people were full of admiration after seeing the Mortal King still in high spirits and ready to fight.

“Win some lose some, the Mortal King is indeed a War God. For cultivators, defeat is not scary at all. The scary thing is not having the courage to face defeat. As long as he never accepts defeat, he will be able to reach the top.” A fan spoke.

Experienced cultivators, especially the older ones, weren’t afraid of losing. It was something that would eventually happen in life, even for Immortal Emperors.

“Hurry! The immortal grasses and treasures in the lesser world are waiting for us.” Another ancestor yelled out and scrambled inside with his juniors.

Even after nightfall, Li Qiye still didn't make his move. On the second day, he told Li Shuangyan's group: "Ladies, get ready, get ready. We should be going to the Lesser Imperial Devil World as well."

"Young Noble, what kind of creations will you give us this time?" Chen Baojiao smiled coquettishly with a spoiled appearance. She was already pretty enough, so this coy gesture contained an unstoppable charm capable of causing souls to sway.

"You guys do not need more creations." Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: "We have plenty of treasures, and as for merit laws, what could be better than your Immortal Physiques?"

Li Qiye was right. After destroying imperial lineages like the Heavenhoof Ravine, they were not lacking treasures at all.

"Then for what reason are you bringing us inside?" Chen Baojiao continued to act cute.

"The spirit medicines and grasses in the Devil World can be said to be the best in the world. They are pure and magical, so I plan to find some suitable ones for you two." Li Qiye answered while glancing at them: "What you two lack right now is experience. This requires time and training, but the addition of some elixirs and potions will be quite effective. At the same time, you two will be able to see one of the mysticisms of this world."

"What item are you going there for this time?" Li Shuangyan's coldness contrasted Chen Baojiao's charm. It had a different

attraction.

“To finish some old wishes as well as to compete against the Nihility Temple.” Li Qiye chuckled without elaborating.

However, before they got on the road, a visitor came early in the morning. It was the famous Bai Jianzhen.

“I want to duel against you!” She coldly uttered the moment she saw Li Qiye.

“Duel?” Li Qiye looked at her. Even though she was still as cold as a sword, there was a clear difference. She had an indescribable natural sensation to her. Only when her battle intent surged would she truly be emotionless. At this second, she had stepped into the dao of the sword.

“The agreement between us is still in effect!” With the sword in her embrace, she became a sword, the sharpest blade in this world.

The agreement she referred to was the three swords duel back from the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Even if I want to, what are you going to use to fight me? I’m not looking down on you, but your defeat is assured.”

“How do you know I will lose without fighting!” She grimaced while a sharp glint flashed. This sword light was able to decapitate

the sky.

“There’s no need to fight, I already know.” Li Qiye smiled while sitting leisurely: “What will you use? Your mad sword or will you use your fate as an offering to the sword? I know all the little tricks from the Sword God Sacred Ground.”

“It’s none of your business!” She uttered slowly: “I will die if I am defeated, but if I win, I only want your Buddhist Sword!”

“Buddhist Sword?” He chuckled: “After reaching this level, you should know that the Buddhist Sword is not about sword techniques or the dao of the sword. It relies on the heart of the sword.” Li Qiye pointed at his heart.

“I require your pointers.” She stood there coldly like a divine sword that had left its scabbard. She was ready to begin the ultimate fight of her life.

“I won’t fight you because it is meaningless to me.” He looked at her and spoke: “I have no use for a dead person. Your dao of the sword and mad sword can’t defeat me. The only thing that you can use to even compete is to sacrifice your life and fate for the sword. Even if I beat you, the only thing left will be your corpse, and I am not a necrophiliac.”

She stood there quietly. It was not that she lacked confidence, but the truth was that her mad sword was no match for him. Just like he said, she only had one real ace capable of defeating him.

“You have understood the essence of the sword dao.” He continued: “However, what you have obtained is only a tiny corner of this essence. To focus on one dao and reach for its limit — I am not saying that this is a flaw since this is a type of cultivation, a way of the grand dao. At the very end, all will return to the beginning. Just like your Immortal Emperor Ye Ti, he still managed to become an emperor in the end.”

Having said that, he gently shook his head: “However, your sacred ground’s sword dao is too extreme. For example, Ye Ti proved his dao by killing. Even though all the different dao can eventually be used to reach the throne, using killing to prove one’s dao, and you with your crazed state, these are slanted paths...”

“... I don’t want to speak about Immortal Emperor Ye Ti with such a negative evaluation. The only thing I can say is that your path will sometimes determine your outcome. Do you know the outcome of Immortal Emperor Ye Ti?” He stared at her and asked.

“What was his outcome?” Her eyes became serious. She had heard a little bit about their patriarch’s legends, but there was no way to verify them.

“If you have the chance in the future, you will find out.” He said insipidly: “The Buddhist Sword and the mad sword, these are both different parts of the sword dao, and you can follow them to the end. As it is now, you want to obtain the Buddhist Sword, but what about afterward? What do you think is after the Buddhist Sword?”

She pondered quietly while looking at Li Qiye and couldn’t come up with an answer right away.

“I can guide you so that you can understand the true meaning of the Buddhist Sword. I can even show you the way after the Buddhist Sword.” He slowly offered: “However, there is no free lunch in this world.”

She eventually asked him with a deep tone: “What do you want?”

He chuckled in response: “Stay and I will give you a home. In the future, you will surely become a Sword God, a real Sword God capable of slaying gods above and annihilating devils below.”

After a while, she answered: “You already have a sword attendant.”

“You’re mistaken.” Li Qiye shook his head and smiled: “You are different from Shuangyan. She is my personal maid, I don’t want you to take care of my daily life. What I want is a general!”

He went on to say while looking at her: “I appreciate your stubborn dedication to the dao of the sword. This stubbornness is the most important prerequisite to reaching the apex of the sword. However, what I like even more is that you are a sword yourself, a sword that I can hold in my hand, sharp and dangerous to the point of being ruthless! Wherever I point shall be severed by you!”

She contemplated for a long time. After all, this was an important choice in her life.

“Follow me and I shall give you more than just the dao of the sword.” He lightly added: “I can give you much more, such as taking you to the places that Immortal Emperor Ye Ti had visited. I can tell you his outcome as well.”

After a long silence, she finally spoke solemnly: “Okay, I agree.” With that, she unhesitatingly swore with her true fate. She was indeed a decisive person.

After an agreement was reached, Li Qiye ordered: “If you have anything to prepare, do so now. We will be heading for the Lesser Imperial Devil World.”

Bai Jianzhen didn’t say anything and quietly left.

“And here I thought that you were going to take her in as a bedwarmer.” Chen Baojiao smirked after Bai Jianzhen left.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “The three swords duel back then was only a joke. I only wanted to tease her a bit. Plus, who would be more suitable to be my bedwarmers than you two?”

“In your dreams.” Chen Baojiao pouted cutely. Even the cold Li Shuangyan had a slight shade of red on her face.

Chapter 1063: Bing Yuxia's Choice

Li Qiye departed for the lesser world with Chen Baojiao and Li Shuangyan. Bai Jianzhen also came along since she stayed true to her deal with Li Qiye.

Li Shuangyan was as cold as ice and Bai Jianzhen was the same when her sword was sheathed. It was a quiet coldness that was different from Li Shuangyan.

The two of them walking together had an entirely different style. It was quite a scenic spectacle.

“I am willing to go with Young Noble.” Another person came as they were on their way. It was Mei Suyao who was wearing a light white dress. Even though it was simple, her charm still left others breathless. At this time, her beauty was different from before. It was otherworldly yet natural. Everything was in accordance with her wishes; this gave her a freedom that was difficult to describe.

Mei Suyao met Li Qiye's gaze in a nonchalant manner, but deep in her pupils, Li Qiye saw something extraordinary.

“The path towards the grand dao is long, but it will surely be colorful.” Li Qiye smiled and nodded his head.

She replied slowly: “Please continue to guide me. Otherwise, I shall be stuck exploring a tiny corner for the rest of my life, like a frog at the bottom of a well.”

Li Qiye only slightly nodded again with a chuckle.

“I will be staying with sisters in the future, please take care of me.” The natural Mei Suyao kept a very humble demeanor.

Chen Baojiao chuckled and stared at her for a bit before shifting her glance towards Li Qiye: “We can relax with Goddess Mei here.”

Li Shuangyan, on the other hand, only nodded slightly as a greeting. She was not talkative no matter who the speaker was. As for Bai Jianzhen, she had no response at all. She was even more quiet and cold than the others, like a piece of metal!

They went on their way to the lesser world. However, the moment they exited the city, Bing Yuxia was there.

She sat on her chariot while still surrounded by beauties. Li Qiye saw her and looked at the sky a bit to smile: “It seems like you aren’t coming with me.”

“Smelly Qiye, you have so many beauties next to you, yet you won’t share a single one with me. Who would want to go together with you? I’m actually afraid that you will try to steal my girls.” She glared at him and laughed.

Of course, Li Qiye was not worried about her because an ancestor from the Icy Feather Palace was accompanying her.

He only smiled and stepped into the sky to directly sit down on her chariot. While being next to her, she really resembled that person.

He sat there comfortably and closed his eyes. Eventually, he looked at Bing Yuxia to say: “You have made up your mind.”

Bing Yuxia looked at him with a strange gleam in her eyes. After a while, she revealed a leisurely smile: “The world is very beautiful. I wish to be free; Immortal Emperors and invincibility are not important, don’t you think?”

“The world is indeed very beautiful. Everyone has their own aspirations.” Li Qiye gently nodded: “Being attached to the mundane world is also an enviable matter.”

Bing Yuxia clapped her palm with a folded fan and laughed: “There are too many jade beauties around, I want to enjoy all the romance that this world has to offer.”

Li Qiye smiled and finally handed her a manual: “This is some of my experience and findings that I wrote last night that relate to the Heaven Cutting Tablet. You should take a look.”

While looking at the manual in his hand, she became quite startled. She didn’t expect this to happen since she had already chosen her path.

“Why?” She murmured in a daze.

Li Qiye gently stroked her hair and said: “Maybe it is a type of fate, or perhaps, you allowed me to see something else.”

She quietly put the manual away and gently nodded: “Thank you...”

These words were softly spoken, but they carried a heavy sentiment.

“The nine worlds are indeed colorful and worthy of someone spending their whole life to enjoy.” Eventually, he patted her shoulder and spoke implicatively before leaving.

At this time, she held her right hand and looked at him again. An indescribable glimmer flashed in her eyes before she eventually spoke: “The entrance to the Icy Feather Palace will always be open for you. I’ll wait for you there!”

“Meeting is fate, but parting is also fate.” Li Qiye smiled and left her chariot.

In the blink of an eye, her chariot disappeared in the horizon. They were going ahead.

On the other hand, Li Qiye and the girls continued forward without being in a rush.

“Fiercest is here!” Someone shouted after Li Qiye came to the large lake. Many eyes were instantly fixated on him.

Everyone quickly made a path since no one dared to get in his way.

“Fiercest, the Dual Blade Beauties, Sword Goddess Bai, and Goddess Mei...” Someone murmured after seeing those behind him.

All of the eyes on him now had many different emotions — awe and admiration were only two of the many. Jealousy was there as well.

However, regardless of their feelings, no one dared to say anything. Today, the Fiercest was someone everyone was dreadful of.

People were finally able to breathe easy after his group entered the Buddhist gate to go to the lesser world.

“Damn! Fiercest is indeed Fiercest. His notoriety is peerless, no wonder why the Dual Blade Beauties, Sword Goddess Bai, and Goddess Mei are all going with him.” Someone couldn’t help but comment afterward.

A famous youth spoke indignantly: “Does he want to take in all the beauties in this world? Does he not care about the feelings of bachelors like us at all?”

“Feelings my ass!” A senior slapped the back of his head and jokingly scolded: “As if those ladies would ever look at you, take a look at yourself in a piss mirror first!”

This junior laughed awkwardly: “Uncle, you can’t pick on me like this, I’m still your nephew...”

“[Fiercest](#) is definitely worthy of his number one title.” Someone emotionally commented: “Not to mention Sword Goddess Bai, who could ever enter Goddess Mei’s eyes? I heard Jikong Wudi has tried to court her before, but she simply had no interest in him. But look at things now, she was taken in by Fiercest right away. This romantic luck is truly too enviable.”

“It makes people crazy with jealousy.” Another person who was afflicted with these sentiments spoke: “But this is how a man should be!”

After entering the Buddhist gate, Li Qiye’s group was instantly teleported to the lesser world. Looking around, one would find majestic mountains and rivers everywhere with billowing waves. This world appeared before everyone, giving a sense of unparalleled uniqueness.

“[One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil, but who actually knows that one thought can also become Emperor!](#)” Li Qiye stated emotionlessly after entering.

“It is definitely a special feeling.” Even the reticent Li Shuangyan

offered her opinion.

Chen Baojiao felt it too and added: “Yes, this is an extraordinary feeling. While standing here, I feel like there are two different forces trying to control us.”

Bai Jianzhen didn’t say anything. She stared at the horizon with a serious gaze that was seemingly capable of piercing through this world. After a while, she closed her eyes and hugged her sword while fortifying her heart.

Li Qiye smilingly said: “Mmm, Jianzhen is doing it well. The two of you should learn from her, there’s no need to be curious.”

The two girls quickly protected their dao hearts as well.

“Where are these forces coming from?” Nevertheless, Chen Baojiao still couldn’t restrain her curiosity completely.

Li Qiye looked at Mei Suyao who was standing quietly to the side with her always-transcendent presence.

Li Qiye told her: “Suyao, tell them.”

Compared to Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao, Mei Suyao was a lot more knowledgeable. After all, she came from a sect with three emperors.

She had no intention of boasting and only stated: “We are standing on the boundary between the Imperial Border and the Devil World. To the left is the Imperial Border while the right is the Devil World. So when we stand in this place, we can feel two different forces around us. If we step into the Devil World, we will feel an evil energy; if we step into the Imperial Border, we will feel an imperial momentum.”

“Devil World and Imperial Border...” Chen Baojiao was quite inquisitive: “Are you saying that there are divisions within the lesser world?”

“Correct, there are different powers here. Moreover, both of these lands have their own masters.” Li Qiye smiled.

“Devils and imperial troops?” Li Shuangyan asked as well.

Li Qiye led the way and ordered: “We’ll get going. Suyao, explain the lesser world to them.”

Mei Suyao nodded slightly and spoke: “Some people call them that, but whether they are imperial troops or devils is not something we can judge. Just like its name, this place is a lesser world. It is quite vast but a lot smaller than the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. This whole place resembles a gigantic Tai Chi symbol — left is imperial and right is devil. Both sides will do what they want and won’t interfere with each other.”

“So this is just like the outside, a world with living and sentient beings.” Chen Baojiao stated.

“It is more like Spirit Mountain.” Bai Jianzhen actually interjected.

Mei Suyao spoke: “Miss Bai is right. There are living beings here, but they are different from us. They have eternal life, or to push it even further, their eternal life is superior to that of the monks on Spirit Mountain.”

“No flesh, no life.” Bai Jianzhen coldly remarked. At this time, her gaze was locked onto a certain position.

Fiercest in chinese is four words — number one + brutal person. In the past, he was only Fierce. The author added “number one” to it later, so now he is Fiercest.

Remember, Di Shi = Buddhist Emperor. Emperor here might be referring to Di Shi, not Immortal Emperor.

Chapter 1064: Lesser Imperial Devil World

At this time, a tree that resembled a bridge grew in front of a cliff. There was a fruit hanging from it that looked just like a lantern.

Below this tree sat an old man meditating with his legs crossed. His hair was as red as blood and his back had two wings growing from it.

The most awe-inspiring aspect of this old man was the evil energy surging from his body. It had reached the level of materializing in the form of silk-like strings. They had a green color, so at first glance, he seemed to have a lot of green hair growing from him. A slight evil light emanated from his eyes, giving the sense that he was a devil that crawled out from hell.

His body had no blood energy and his flesh had dried up. However, he was still alive and very powerful. His situation was very similar to the sacred monks on the eighteen temples of Spirit Mountain. The only difference was that those monks emitted a Buddhist light while this old man exuded an evil energy.

All the girls entered a battle-ready state after seeing this old devil, ready to fight at any time.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “They are not interested in us. Neither the imperial soldiers nor the devil kings care for outsiders. If we don’t provoke them, they won’t bother us at all.

Having said that, he freely walked around the old man. The girls followed right behind him. Just like he said, the old man continued to sit there and didn't bother to care about the passing group.

Chen Baojiao asked after they passed him while looking at the lantern-like fruit growing on the old tree: "Is he protecting that fruit?"

"Yes. Timeworn Redsun Fruit, it's quite rare." Li Qiye gently nodded.

The group moved on and traveled through creeks and hills. As they went further from the border, they felt the evil energy growing more powerful, as if it wanted to haunt their bodies. Luckily, they remained unaffected due to their powerful dao hearts.

"If the evil energy enters our bodies, will we turn into devils?" The cold Li Shuangyan asked after feeling the lingering energy.

Mei Suyao shook her head slightly: "Even though this place is the same as the Buddhist Funeral Plateau, it is different in the sense that even if this energy enters the body, one won't turn into a devil. If one has a wavering dao heart, the energy will only make the inner devil more powerful."

"What is the relationship of this place and the plateau? Is there actually a connection? How come those monks back at the plateau changed so much after being converted? No body, no blood energy,

and able to live forever.” Chen Baojiao curiously asked.

Even the knowledgeable Mei Suyao had trouble with this question. She glanced over at Li Qiye instead.

He smiled in response: “They are both related yet not related. As for the real reason, you don’t need to know right now because you haven’t reached that level.”

The group marched on and saw many devils along the way. In fact, calling these things devils was not suitable, it was more apt to refer to them as dark cultivators.

These dark cultivators all had withered lifespans and were void of blood energy, yet they continued to live on.

The number of dark cultivators increased along the way. One of them was a huge serpent with steel scales. The evil energy on its body pulsed all around it. When it coiled its body, it looked just like a huge mountain. It was protecting a little rose.

Another one was just a skeleton. Blood coagulated to form the muscles of this cultivator. In its eyes were two burning flames. It was squatting down on top of a sacred tree.

One of them was just a slab of mud. This sludge slab continued to flow. When its evil energy surfaced, it would turn into a giant or a mountain. Occasionally, one could see an old vine growing on top of its body.

The dark cultivators here came in all shapes and forms, but the basic principles remained the same — they were devoid of blood energy and lifespan, yet they were still living well.

The girls all stared at these dark cultivators carefully. When they met a few of them in human form, they were especially attentive.

However, even the most well-read among them, Mei Suyao, couldn't tell which era or sect they were from based on their appearance and clothing. They all wore archaic clothing that was beyond identification.

“Even if they have been immortal all this time, they must have had a starting era?” Even the muted Bai Jianzhen commented.

Mei Suyao shook her head slightly: “I have no way of knowing. There are no records, or at least my sect has no writings on this matter.”

She looked at Li Qiye at this point. Maybe he was the only one who could give an answer.

Li Qiye smiled and replied: “A very, very old era. I can only tell you guys that it is before the Buddhist Funeral Plateau came to be. However, it is difficult to say which between the Imperial Border and Devil World is older, this requires more research and

evidence.”

“Even before the plateau!” Li Shuangyan was caught off guard: “Rumor has it that the plateau existed before the Desolate Era. All twelve burial grounds are extremely old to the point that no one can trace back to them.”

“Some things can be, others can’t.” Li Qiye chuckled and didn’t elaborate on the topic.

“Are all the dark cultivators here watching the spirit medicines and trees?” They met many dark cultivators, but these cultivators simply had no interest towards outsiders.

“The Devil World has spirit vegetation while the Imperial Border has royal metals.” Mei Suyao explained: “Dark cultivators need elixirs and grasses while the imperial soldiers require royal steel. I heard they continue to live on just because of these materials. If no one bothers them, they will stand guard over these things forever.”

“Why do they need elixirs if their lifespans and blood energy are already gone?” Chen Baojiao was quite confused on this matter.

Li Qiye smiled: “It is not that they need elixirs. Don’t believe me? You can try to trade a King Medicine to them and see if they want to trade or not.” Having said that, he handed her a King Medicine root.

This action made Bai Jianzhen and Mei Suyao look at him in

bewilderment. They were both from imperial lineages, but their sects considered King Medicines to be very precious all the same. However, Li Qiye was treating this root as if it was just a simple cabbage.

This only made Chen Baojiao even more curious. She grabbed the King Medicine and ran to trade with a dark cultivator. This dark cultivator had a lion head and a human body. He was inside a cave under a cliff to protect a budding blade of a leaf. No matter how one looked at it, this young grass was not comparable to the King Medicine in Chen Baojiao's hand.

Alas, the dark cultivator ignored her request to trade. In the beginning, she was afraid that the dark cultivator wouldn't understand her, so she communicated with her divine intent. Regardless of the place and era, using one's divine intent was the most direct form of communication, anyone could understand it.

Nevertheless, the dark cultivator simply ignored her. He eventually became irritated by her nagging and slammed down his hand. Chen Baojiao retreated in a hurry at this point.

After she left the cave, this cultivator didn't chase after her. He only gave her a lazy glance before closing his eyes to enter deep sleep again.

"Fine then, don't trade. Did you need to be so rude?" Chen Baojiao muttered to herself.

She didn't understand and asked Li Qiye: "Young Noble, what's

the reason for this? They have to know their stuff, right?”

Li Qiye answered with a smile: “I’ll take you guys to go see something and you will understand right away.”

He led them until they eventually climbed a tall peak. In front of them was a ravine with an old vine tree growing at the bottom. Who knows how long this tree had been there for? Its vines were growing all over the ravine.

It emitted a faint brilliance that resembled the moonlight in an incredibly beautiful manner.

“It has matured. Devil Imploration is about to begin.” Li Qiye sat down on the peak and quietly watched over this vine tree ahead.

Mei Suyao and the others sat down with him and patiently waited.

Moments passed by. Eventually, an arachne climbed up from the bottom of the vine. Its upper half was human while the lower half was of a spider.

This arachne was quite ancient. It looked around for a bit before a huge blast resounded. The evil energy in its entire body soared to the sky and instantly turned into a giant cauldron.

“Whoosh! Whoosh!” The vines made a lot of sounds. The entire tree was sucked into the giant cauldron. Next, the evil energy

turned into a flame. After bursts of refinement, the tree was turned into a liquid as green as jade.

“Boom!” The cauldron suddenly sprayed this medicinal liquid out into the sky.

“Bang!” In the blink of an eye, a portal opened in the sky with intersecting runes that were arranged in a mysterious and complex manner. No one could discern them.

The portal instantly devoured all the medicinal essence. Next, an evil energy poured down like a surging river.

The dark cultivator didn't think twice. It opened its mouth to swallow this evil energy. The portal then disappeared and after devouring the evil energy, the evil flame around its body became even stronger than before.

This scene left the girls astonished.

Chapter 1065: Sacrosanct Moontree

The girls didn't expect that dark cultivators weren't protecting the spirit vegetations to eat, but rather to sacrifice them to the heavens.

"This is called Devil Imploration. Others also call it praying to the devil as well." Li Qiye lightly explained: "Using spirit medicines to trade for evil energy allows them to become stronger. The longer they guard the sacrifice, the more precious these medicines will be and the more evil energy they will receive."

Mei Suyao finally turned her gaze away from the sky and asked Li Qiye: "What lies behind that portal?"

Even her Immortal Bone couldn't comprehend that portal earlier. The runes were too mysterious and profound, not to mention the sheer number of them. It was a vast and mystical sea.

"Well..." Li Qiye's eyes slightly peered at the sky: "It is a secret, a secret that no one knows."

Mei Suyao knew that Li Qiye must know at least a little, but he was unwilling to divulge any more.

At this time, Li Qiye looked at Chen Baojiao and smiled: "You should now know why these dark cultivators aren't willing to trade with you. Our spirit medicines are refined with the flames inside a cauldron. Evil energy would only defile them. However, the vegetation here is different. Growing up in this place, evil

energy has no effect on them.”

“I still don’t understand.” Li Shuangyan spoke: “These dark cultivators already have eternal life, why do they want more evil energy? What’s the point of having more?”

“You are mistaken there. In the Devil World, one’s rank is very strict. The more powerful you are, the higher the rank.” Li Qiye gently shook his head.

“What’s the point of becoming stronger? They can’t leave the Devil World anyway. Don’t tell me that after becoming powerful, they would work together to break the seal from Spirit Mountain?” Bai Jianzhen asked with an indifferent tone.

“Incorrect again. They aren’t doing it to break the seal from Spirit Mountain. The suppression placed in the lesser world is for a different reason.” Li Qiye said.

Chen Baojiao inquired: “For what reason do they not leave? Even though the Devil World is big, it is still too tiny compared to the nine worlds.”

Li Qiye chuckled and responded with his own questions: “Have you ever seen a monk from the plateau leave? Or a sacred monk leaving Spirit Mountain?”

“The Buddhist sea is boundless.” Mei Suyao murmured in a daze: “I heard that after entering Spirit Mountain, there is no leaving.

Well, they wouldn't want to leave either. In their eyes, Nalanda and the Buddhist Kingdom are their final destinations. Once they ascend, they will be able to have true eternal life."

"That statement is both right and wrong." Li Qiye explained: "Your words are correct for Spirit Mountain, but not for the Lesser Imperial Devil World. In fact, these are two different issues." He looked at the group and went on: "The monks and dark cultivators as well as the imperial soldiers here have different reasons for not leaving. In fact, dark cultivators and imperial soldiers will leave, or rather, with respect to this conversation, they can choose to leave."

Having said that, he gazed at the horizon and spoke: "Their departure is different from the departure you all think of. If you think that leaving the Lesser Imperial Devil World is departure, then that would be wrong. They are departing to another place."

"Where will they go afterward? I have never heard of dark cultivators and imperial soldiers in the nine worlds." Mei Suyao found her vast education insufficient.

"I don't know." Li Qiye pondered for a bit when this question was brought up. After a long time, he slowly spoke: "The expedition of imperial soldiers and evil slaying of the Devil World, both will have an end, but who knows what this end really is?"

The girls didn't know what Li Qiye was talking about. Only Mei Suyao tilted her head and contemplated his words. Her Eternal River School had three emperors, so she was aware of more secrets.

“Okay, let us move on.” Li Qiye stood up and the group went on their way.

Many cultivators had entered both the Imperial Border and the Devil World. The Devil World had more intruders for a very simple reason — the spirit vegetation here was coveted by cultivators since they were quite precious. On the other hand, the royal metals on the other side weren’t particularly useful.

Therefore, cultivators who came to the Lesser Imperial Devil World would come for the Devil World’s spirit vegetation. At this time, one could see their presence everywhere in the Devil World.

The vegetation protected by dark cultivators seemed to be even more precious, inciting the greed of regular cultivators. This resulted in many skirmishes between the two sides.

The consequences could be easily imagined. Not to mention that these dark cultivators were quite powerful, they were also unkillable. Thus, the losers of these battles were regular cultivators. Many of them were torn apart alive or sucked dry of their blood energy and became dried corpses.

Some strong existences did manage to steal some medicinal materials from these dark cultivators. However, when they met the truly powerful ones, they could only run for their lives. Immortality combined with raw power was quite frightening!

In the end, most cultivators couldn’t beat the dark ones and had

to find grasses without an owner. There was no lack of spirit vegetation in the Devil World. Alas, the more valuable ones all had an owner already.

Along the way, Li Qiye's group also saw many precious plants and flowers. When they passed by a dark valley, there was a golden tree growing in this place. A fruit that resembled a round moon hung on this tree, emitting faint rays.

“Sacrosanct Moontree...” Even Mei Suyao was moved by this golden tree. It only existed in records. Very few people had actually seen it in person.

At this time, many experts could be found standing right outside of the valley, but no one dared to enter. This was because a large group had died already. The entrance of the valley was laden with corpses and quietly flowing blood.

An old man was meditating beneath the golden tree. Evil energy was floating around him, so no one could see his face. A divine sword was lying on top of his knees and could be unsheathed at any time.

“Fiercest is here.” Many people made way for his group.

Some actually hoped for him to do something after seeing his arrival. One person whispered: “If Fiercest attacks together with the ladies, maybe they will be able to obtain it.”

Li Qiye stood at the entrance and shook his head to say: “That is indeed a good item, but a good item is only good if one stays alive to enjoy it. Even if a Godking comes here, they wouldn’t be able to break through.”

Having said that, he turned around and left.

Others were disappointed to see him unwilling to take action. Of course, they didn’t dare to taunt him and quickly left as well after hearing the comment.

“That was a divine tree of the legends.” Even Bai Jianzhen was in awe.

“It is indeed a divine tree.” Li Qiye glanced at her and chuckled: “But that tree is not very useful for you.”

“Can Young Noble actually take it?” Chen Baojiao had to ask. In her eyes, there was nothing that her omnipotent Young Noble couldn’t do.

“Taking it is not difficult.” Li Qiye glanced back at the divine tree and spoke: “But everything is a matter of fate and fortune. Sometimes, one can’t be too greedy.”

Li Qiye didn’t stop here and continued on the road. They saw even more precious plants along the way and even an immortal grass on the same level as the Sacrosanct Moontree. However, Li Qiye didn’t give it too much thought and kept on going.

Eventually, they reached a barren hill. It was desolate, devoid of both people and vegetation. Li Qiye looked around before standing up straight.

Li Qiye smiled and told the girls: “Stand a bit further back, I want to transform.”

The group quickly retreated and maintained a far enough distance. He then opened his mind and stomped on the ground while shouting: “Open!”

“Zzz—” With that, the earth seemed to crack. Runic lines emerged and intertwined to form a grand formation.

At this point, he quickly transformed into someone else. The runic patterns on the ground weaved into his body and became a devil robe while his dao heart turned into a devil heart.

“Boom!” An evil energy engulfed the sky along with demonic plumes of flame. These plumes slowly came together and turned into a pair of gigantic wings on his back.

Once Li Qiye turned into a devil, even powerful existences like the girls trembled a bit inside. They felt a pressure that caused them to have the impulse to kneel down.

Li Qiye stood there like a supreme Devil King capable of controlling the rest of his kin in this world in an unstoppable

manner. Anyone would lose their mind to fear after seeing him.

It was a shocking transformation. No one would be able to connect the dots between this form engulfed in demonic flames and his previous usual self. His eyes were especially terrifying. They drilled into the world and devoured the souls of others.

Even Bai Jianzhen was astounded to see his new form and murmured: “What is that...” She could feel his power. Even though it was not as strong as when he was a Buddha, its strength was still of a dreadful magnitude.

“One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil.” Li Qiye slowly spoke while looking at the rest of the world in disdain: “This is me, the Heaven Relinquish Devil King, the supreme of the Devil World!”

“Is this a title that you have chosen for yourself?” Chen Baojiao curiously gazed at his new form.

Chapter 1066: Heaven Relinquish Devil King

“No...” Li Qiye gently shook his head while carrying a commanding presence. The simplest of gestures from him could cause myriad devils to kneel. He explained: “This is a different existence, I am only borrowing his title.”

“Heaven Relinquish Devil King, abandoned by the heavens...” Li Shuangyan murmured.

“Yes, forsaken by even the high heavens, but so what?!” Li Qiye laughed as his evil flames engulfed the sky. He raised his palm upward and declared: “The high heavens is only a wretch.”

He was domineering enough in his devilish presence. Li Qiye had become Heaven Relinquish with an unspeakable charisma. Even though a Devil King was quite scary, they also had a fatal temptation to their charm.

“Borrowing alone is not enough to become a devil.” Mei Suyao was moved: “If the heart does not have evil, how can one rule the world by becoming a devil?!”

She was referring to the fact that borrowing someone’s form alone shouldn’t be enough to reach this level. If he didn’t have a devil heart, how could the evil flames be devouring the sky right now? How could he reign over the world as a devil?

“This place is the Devil World where one thought can turn one into a devil.” Li Qiye chuckled. In his current form, even his smile

carried a strangely evil yet graceful aura.

“Just like Evil Buddha...” Bai Jianzhen’s expression shifted. Li Qiye had changed into Evil Buddha and now a Devil King. This transformation could be said to be without flaws; it was as if he was the real deal. In fact, this was now reality.

One could pretend to be a monk as well as borrow someone else’s name. However, the power of Buddhism and the evil presence couldn’t be faked.

For example, Heaven Relinquish standing before them was just like his name, where his flames assaulted the sky. It was a substantial manifestation.

“Have you cultivated the devil way before?” Even Li Shuangyan found it astonishing.

Prior to this, Li Qiye had cultivated Buddhism. In just a short amount of time, he became Evil Buddha with an unstoppable dharma.

“One thought can turn you into Buddha, but one thought can turn you into Devil as well.” Li Qiye only chuckled. He naturally wouldn’t reveal the secret in this.

There was a period when he used to stay in this lesser world for a long time. He became an invincible Devil King here, and before he left, he sealed his evil energy deep underground at this location.

This time, he became a devil once more. However, he didn't use his own past name but rather one from a different Devil King. There was a reason for this choice.

"Where is the palanquin?" He ordered as an untouchable Devil King.

Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao had already prepared all the necessary items. They took out a palanquin for him.

Li Qiye sat on the carriage and commanded: "Raise it, let's go. Remember, do not ask or say anything. Everything is up to me."

The group acted as his bearers. Even a goddess like Mei Suyao could only take up this menial duty. However, she didn't hesitate in carrying the palanquin at all. Her expression remained carefree and natural since she didn't care for status.

If anyone were to see this, they would be scared silly. Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao was one thing, but Bai Jianzhen was the current Sword Goddess and Mei Suyao was even nobler. Hailing from the Eternal River School, she had unmatched looks and was praised as the number one beauty.

But at this moment, both of them could only carry Li Qiye's palanquin.

Li Qiye sat on it and closed his eyes to rest, just like a king looking

down on the world. Geniuses and invincible characters could only be his servants. This was true invincibility.

The four girls carried the carriage across rivers and hills into a remote region. Along the way, they met more dark cultivators who were protecting their spirit medicines; they were sleeping for the most part. However, when the palanquin came by, no matter how powerful these cultivators were, they immediately woke up to prostrate on the ground. Even though no words were exchanged, their expressions were full of respect.

The Devil World was a place where ranks mattered. Heaven Relinquish was an exceedingly high-ranked devil, so wherever he went, these dark cultivators would pay him respect.

Eventually, under Li Qiye's guidance, the four girls carried the palanquin into a large river. After separating the current to make way, they instantly went down to the bottom of the river.

Finally, they sank into an extremely deep underwater abyss. They found that there were wisps of light in this region among the currents.

In this place was a crystal palace. However, it was closed and sealed off by a powerful force.

Li Qiye scowled after seeing the closed palace. In the blink of an eye, his devil flames soared and the entire palace trembled.

“Clikkk—” At this second, the palace slowly opened. A devil dragon swam out from within. This dragon was still a flood dragon since it had the unique characteristics of this race. However, it was on the verge of transforming into a true dragon.

It was extremely powerful and frightening and absolutely worse than some of the dark cultivators outside. It was at least at the same level as the old man sitting beneath the Sacrosanct Moontree.

“I didn’t know My Lord was coming, please forgive me.” The dragon lied on the ground and bowed respectfully.

Li Qiye remained emotionless with his terrifying evil aura surging about like the storm. He didn’t bother answering while the four girls carried his palanquin into the crystal palace.

There were countless lights emanating from the innumerable treasures in this place. Divine stones, heavenly weapons, immortal metals... these treasures were scattered randomly on the ground. It seemed that the devil dragon had no interest in these treasures.

Any cultivator would be driven crazy by the sight of this treasury. Li Qiye, on the other hand, didn’t care about these treasures. The girls were afraid of being seen through, so they maintained a calm demeanor. They focused on carrying Li Qiye’s palanquin without batting an eye at the treasures.

After entering the palace, Li Qiye sat on the throne without any hesitation. The devil dragon didn’t dare to show any slight. He stood to the side in a subservient manner. Nevertheless, he still

stole several glances at the girls.

“What? Are you interested in my concubines?” Li Qiye coldly glared at the dragon as he sat proudly on the throne.

The dragon quickly fell to the ground and said: “Please forgive me, My Lord. This little one was only curious for a second.”

The girls blushed a bit after hearing Li Qiye, but they didn’t say anything to maintain the act.

Li Qiye didn’t become angry. He said indifferently: “I came to your place for just one item.”

“May I ask what My Lord desires? Just say the word and this little one will go grab it for you right away.” The dragon responded instantly.

Li Qiye coldly spoke: “In your crystal palace, the only item that can garner my attention is the flower in your Inner Chamber.”

The dragon began to hesitate after hearing the request. It softly spoke: “My Lord, about that, about that...”

Li Qiye waved his sleeve dismissively: “I know you want to use it for your Devil Imploration, so I won’t take it for nothing. Write down your wish. On a different day on the Evil Slaying Platform, your wish shall be on it!”

“Thank you, My Lord.” The dragon no longer hesitated and quickly bowed before going to grab the item.

After a while, the dragon came back and offered a jade box with both hands to Li Qiye. Li Qiye didn't bother looking at it and accepted it right away.

“My Lord, this is my Devil Prayer.” The dragon respectfully gave Li Qiye his written wish as well. It was a divine jade engraved with his prayer.

“In the future on the Evil Slaying Platform, go to that place and your prayer shall be answered.” Li Qiye spoke coldly.

“Thank you for your grace.” The dragon prostrated again with true gratitude.

With a heartless demeanor, Li Qiye commanded: “Raise the palanquin.”

Having said that, he closed his eyes again with an imperious temperament. This was very suitable for his current identity as a Devil King.

The girls didn't dare to snub him in the slightest. They immediately obeyed and carried the palanquin out of the crystal palace.

Once they left the river, Li Qiye casually threw the jade box to Li Shuangyan and said: “Little girl, this nice item is your reward.”

Li Shuangyan was a bit surprised. She calmed down, caught the box, and opened it. A sacred light emerged in an overwhelming yet flawless manner. Anyone who saw it would feel pure inside, as if nothing was holier than this item.

It was a lotus flower that resembled a jade carving. It was flawless — truly perfect.

“What kind of immortal lotus is this?” Even those who didn’t know better could tell that it was extraordinary from just a glance.

“Earthmother Sacred Lotus.” Li Qiye lightly said: “This flower is very useful for you since you cultivate the Void Imperfection Physique. With it, you will be able to unravel the more mystical aspects of the physique.”

“Thank you, Young Noble.” Li Shuangyan thanked him and put away the jade box.

“Young Noble swindled this immortal lotus from that devil dragon.” Chen Baojiao said: “If it finds out, it will definitely go crazy.”

Li Qiye disguising himself as Heaven Relinquish to trick the lotus from the dragon was too clever. He didn’t need to expend any effort and still managed to obtain such a peerless item.

“No, I didn’t lie to him.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “Though I am not the real Heaven Relinquish, I didn’t truly deceive him.”

This answer left the group a bit confused. They didn’t understand him.

“But you are not the real Heaven Relinquish.” Chen Baojiao commented.

“Yes, I’m not him.” Li Qiye smirked: “But the real Heaven Relinquish will help fulfill their prayers.”

Chapter 1067: Wooden Sword Dark Saint

“Young Noble wants to go meet Heaven Relinquish...” Li Shuangyan’s expression changed. After looking at her Young Noble, she knew just how terrifying this Devil King was. If the two met while Li Qiye was still in this disguise, the consequences were easy to imagine.

“No, Heaven Relinquish will come and see me.” Li Qiye smiled: “Legend states that he has been missing for a long time, but I know he is still here in the Devil World!”

“You are trying to bait him out.” Mei Suyao immediately understood Li Qiye’s true purpose.

He chuckled: “That and grabbing some treasures along the way. It would be foolish not to do so since the medicines here are indeed supreme.”

“Young... Young Noble, just what is the Evil Slaying Platform?” Bai Jianzhen spoke. Her “Young Noble” was forced compared to the others, but in the end, she still chose to say it. Since she had decided to stay behind, she had to put aside her arrogance.

Moreover, even the number one beauty, Mei Suyao, was not reserved, so why would she need to be? In terms of background, talents, and creations, Mei Suyao was above her.

“Evil Slaying Platform.” Li Qiye glanced into the distance at eventually murmured: “It is a very interesting location. Don’t

worry, after taking care of a few matters, I'll take you guys there.”

Having said that, he withdrew his gaze and ordered: “Continue, Heaven Relinquish will appear soon.”

The group moved on with the palanquin. The places they went to rarely saw visitors due to their great peril.

Eventually, they came before a vast emptiness. The sky here was shattered in several places. It was easy to see that a supreme war took place here.

After crossing this shattered space, they found a huge mountain with a bamboo forest at the peak. The gentle breeze caused the bamboo to flutter, giving a very pleasant feeling.

Eventually, the girls carried Li Qiye to the summit. The moment they reached it, they felt a frightening sword intent.

There was a middle-aged man sitting there in a meditative pose with his eyes shut tight. In front of him was a wooden sword.

However, the terrifying sword energy did not come from this man or the wooden sword on his knees, it came from a green bamboo branch right in front of him.

It was a tiny bamboo branch only three feet long. There were some leaves on it while the branch itself had a yellow tint. It was quite thick, but judging from the yellow hue amidst its green body,

it was apparent that it had been growing for many years.

This inconspicuous branch emitted a terrifying sword intent. Anyone would tremble after feeling this power that, once unleashed, was capable of slicing a Virtuous Paragon to pieces.

The middle-aged man opened his eyes the moment Li Qiye was brought to the top of the mountain. Bai Jianzhen quivered after seeing the sword glint that flashed in the man's eyes.

She was praised as the Sword Goddess with incomparable achievements on this road. Thus, once she saw the sword light in his eyes, she knew that he was extremely gifted in the dao of the sword.

“Heaven Relinquish Devil King!” The man uttered after seeing Li Qiye on the palanquin. He didn't stand up to greet Li Qiye as he was still very proud.

Li Qiye acted as if he could stand shoulder to shoulder with the high heavens. He slightly glanced at the middle-aged man and spoke: “Wooden Sword Dark Saint, after so many years, your crappy manner still hasn't changed. Cold and arrogant like a pebble in an outhouse, refusing to bow even after seeing me!”

The middle-aged man didn't speak and instead closed his eyes. He was a Dark Saint, so compared to Heaven Relinquish, there was still quite a gap. However, his pride didn't allow him to bow.

“After so many years with no news of you, I thought you must have boarded the Evil Slaying Platform.” The dark saint spoke.

“Soon. The bald donkeys are about to take action, so I have to board the platform soon.” Li Qiye sat imposingly on his throne with a suppressive momentum as the king of all devils.

The man’s eyes slightly shifted after hearing this. He lifted his head to look at Li Qiye. After a while, he slowly said: “You finally want to board the Evil Slaying Platform!”

“Many people have boarded it, so my joining the fray shouldn’t be that surprising.” Li Qiye slowly responded: “I have been quiet for countless years since I didn’t want to tread lightly into that place. However, my preparations are now sufficient, it is time to follow the footsteps of the Devil Lord.”

The dark saint pondered for a long time before asking: “What do you need?”

Li Qiye’s eyes fell on the small bamboo branch and spoke: “I want your Fragmented Bamboo Sword.”

The dark saint’s eyes rolled again as he stared at Li Qiye: “This is a bit unexpected. Just a little thing like this can enter your sight.”

The girls were quite alarmed after hearing the dark saint. They were afraid that he had seen through Li Qiye’s disguise.

However, Li Qiye was unperturbed. He still acted imperiously and coldly glared at the guy: “Since I want to board the Evil Slaying Platform and have taken quite a liking to these little girls, I want to give them something nice to play with.”

“Devils like us do not have emotions.” The dark saint stated coldly.

The girls held their breaths and became quite nervous. They were really afraid of being caught now. It looks like this dark saint was much harder to trick than the devil dragon.

“This is the gap between you and me. Your current state can’t even catch up to me, let alone thinking about catching up to the Devil Lord.” Li Qiye spoke emotionlessly: “You are no different than those bald donkeys! This is the best you can do!”

“You think you can become the Devil Lord?” The dark saint narrowed his gaze a bit.

Li Qiye haughtily replied: “Devil Lord? This is not worth contending over. We have an even better destination, so what’s the point of competing for it against those donkeys?! The Devil Lord is gone, the Imperial Lord is gone, so it is time for me to go as well!”

The dark saint fell into quiet contemplation. Perhaps this was a question that had always weighed on his mind.

“I actually enjoy your bad temper a bit, so I came to say hello.

Whether you want to give it up or not, I shall have your Fragmented Bamboo Sword.” Li Qiye’s eyes became cold after declaring in a tyrannical manner.

The dark saint didn’t say anything in the end. He directly pulled the bamboo branch from the ground and threw it at Li Qiye.

“I don’t want to owe you a favor, so leave behind your wish.” Li Qiye spoke insipidly.

The dark saint hesitated for a moment. Eventually, he carved down his prayers and then turned around to disappear into the horizon.

After confirming that the dark saint was truly gone, the girls finally heaved a sigh of relief.

“That was pretty close, we were almost caught.” Even Li Shuangyan who was usually calm murmured.

Li Qiye smiled and gently shook his head: “Shuang’er, you’re truly underestimating your Young Noble too much. Even if I wasn’t disguising myself as Heaven Relinquish, I can still handle him.”

Back then, he was also a supreme Devil King with the same illustrious fame.

“Who are the Devil Lord and Imperial Lord?” Chen Baojiao

asked: “Are they the masters of the Lesser Imperial Devil World?”

Li Qiye didn’t answer and only smiled. He pointed a finger towards Mei Suyao so that she could answer Chen Baojiao: “Legend states that the Devil Lord is the master of the Devil World and the Imperial Lord is the master of the Imperial Border. However, this is only limited to the legends, no one has actually seen them before. Some even speculate that they do not exist and they are just a baseless rumor.”

“No, the Devil Lord and Imperial Lord do exist.” Li Qiye sat on his palanquin and gently shook his head.

Chen Baojiao was quite inquisitive: “What kind of existences are they? Very unbeatable?”

“Who knows? No one has seen them before.” Li Qiye’s eyes were quite profound at this point while staring at the far distance.

“In addition, the Buddhist Funeral Plateau has a Buddhist Lord as well.” The reticent Bai Jianzhen also joined in: “Same as before, no one has seen the Buddhist Lord either. Just what kind of existences are these three?”

Mei Suyao couldn’t answer this question either. This was an eternal secret that even Immortal Emperors couldn’t figure out.

“There is a difference in opinions on this matter.” Li Qiye withdrew his gaze and elaborated: “There are two distinct beliefs

about the Buddhist Lord. One is the Buddhist Lord that people always talk about, the ruler of the Buddhist Kingdom.”

“What about the other one?” Li Shuangyan’s curiosity was aroused.

Mei Suyao softly answered in Li Qiye’s stead: “The other belief is that there is an even higher existence at the plateau. However, no one has seen this person before, just like the elusive Devil Lord and Imperial Lord of legends.”

“What is all this about? So mysterious.” Chen Baojiao muttered.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “It is not a legend, this person definitely exists. Of course, ordinary people wouldn’t be able to meet this Buddha.” Having said that, Li Qiye handed the Fragmented Bamboo Sword to Bai Jianzhen: “This bamboo branch is the greatest sword, so take it.”

Chapter 1068: A Sword's Sharpness

After accepting the fragmented sword, Bai Jianzhen was dazed for a moment before she spoke: “I already have a sword, it is of the finest rank.”

Bai Jianzhen was not being conceited when saying this; her sword was indeed incredible. Her sacred ground didn't have a lot of treasures, but they did have an abundance of swords. If there was a place with the best swords in the world, then it would certainly be her sacred ground. Otherwise, how could they have produced a Sword God?

“Swords are not about their sharpness or power.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “For example, I know of your Immortal Emperor Ye Ti's sword. It is powerful to the point of being invincible, but such a sword is not necessarily suitable for you.”

Having said that, he looked at her and continued: “A sword has to be unsheathed naturally without any restraints and in accordance with one's desires. Both the Mad Sword and Buddhist Sword lies in your state of mind, your sword heart.”

Bai Jianzhen hugged her sword while quietly taking in Li Qiye's advice with great attentiveness.

He lightly said: “The most important thing is that in the future war, both true treasures and life weapons will not necessarily be the most suitable, but the Fragmented Bamboo Sword in your hand right now is definitely the best one for you.”

She didn't say much and put away the bamboo sword before bowing to Li Qiye. She finally learned of Li Qiye's generosity today and understood why the other girls still chose to follow him despite cultivating Immortal Physiques.

With her peerless dao of the sword, a single glimpse was enough for her to tell that the bamboo blade was extremely precious. It was comparable to even nine heavenly accumulation destiny stones or maybe even more valuable. Otherwise, a heaven-defying existence like the dark saint wouldn't be guarding it in this place.

However, Li Qiye gave something so valuable to her this easily while she had only just joined him and had yet to make any notable contributions. How could people not follow a lord that was so generous to those under him?

Li Qiye let the girls carry his palanquin again. Along the way, they met a few regular cultivators and experts. Their eyes revealed their astonishment after seeing the female bearers.

Needless to say about Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao, they had Immortal Physiques and great mastery of the sword and saber. Meanwhile, Bai Jianzhen was the contemporary Sword Goddess and Mei Suyao was the number one beauty from a sect with three emperors. They were dazzling stars no matter the location.

But today, they were carrying a palanquin for someone. It was truly unbelievable. Even a Godking was not qualified to enjoy such a privilege.

The even more shocking part was that the person sitting on the palanquin was not Fiercest Li Qiye but a Devil King full of evil aura.

“Where is Li Qiye?” A stunned spectator murmured at this sight.

“Haha, Li Qiye must have provoked the great Devil King and got annihilated while the girls were captured.” A youth sneered gloatingly.

“Fool, how can you become a sect master with this kind of vision?” His senior slapped him and coldly said: “That person is Li Qiye.”

Many experts from the previous generation noticed the girls’ natural demeanors and understood that the person on the carriage was Li Qiye.

“What is he doing? First he disguised himself as a Buddhist Lord, and now he is playing as a Devil King?” A Virtuous Paragon saw the Li Qiye shrouded in evil energy and became quite puzzled.

Very quickly, their question was answered. Wherever Li Qiye went, the dark cultivators would prostrate on the ground. Even if they didn’t come out, their reverence was obvious.

“He is pretending to be a Devil King.” An old paragon understood right away: “What is the best identity to take to travel freely at the

Devil World? Naturally, it is a Devil King.”

This was a source of inspiration to many people, especially the powerful older generation. They immediately changed their appearance and let their disciples carry their palanquins to pretend to be Devil Kings.

After the transformation, they went to fool the dark cultivators, trying to trick them out of their spirit medicines. However, not one was successful.

“The White Bell Ancestor wanted to copy Li Qiye. He turned into a Devil King and tried to fool a dark cultivator protecting a Myriad Era Vine. Alas, he was immediately killed on the spot.”

“Not just the White Bell Ancestor. An eternal existence copied Li Qiye too and wanted to catch an Immortal River Clam, but the devil guarding that location sucked away all of his blood energy.”

“Indeed... The Cloud Saint Child also pretended to be one. He hadn’t done anything yet, he only walked by a sleeping dark cultivator, but the thing woke up and chopped him to death.” Someone laughed while recalling the event.

In a short day, those who tried to imitate Li Qiye all died miserably. Their deception was without reward, unless death was considered a sweet release.

“Why is it that Li Qiye can pretend to be a Devil King and be treated so well by the dark cultivators? They’re even kneeling on the ground respectfully! But when we do it, the only fate that awaits us is death, what kind of joke is this?!” A great power’s disciple exclaimed bitterly after a senior from his sect failed and died.

“Because he has a devil heart.” An eternal existence saw through the mystery and murmured: “One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil. At this time, he is a devil, there’s no need for pretension. He’s even a Devil King at that.” He went on: “Just like back at the plateau, he was not playing as Buddha, he was one! Thus, he was able to control the power in that place.”

“This brat is too devilish and heaven-defying.” Another perceptive ancestor spoke with emotions: “Many people trained for thousands and thousands of years just to begin the process of converting to a Buddhist heart, but he immediately changed into one right away. Buddha and Devil at his whim for his heart has both... just what kind of terrifying dao heart is this?”

Many people knew that the conversion process was not completed overnight. The popular phrase was supposed to be only a legend, but now, Li Qiye was able to carry it out to their dismay.

Of course, outsiders didn’t know that in the distant past, Li Qiye spent countless years to become a devil. This process and pain were beyond imagination.

While Li Qiye was infiltrating the Devil World as the Heaven Relinquish Devil King, there were also a few notable others in the lesser world.

The most eye-catching one was Jikong Wudi. Under the protection of Venerable Ninesword, he entered a palace and managed to steal an ancient imperial cauldron at the Imperial Border.

“Jikong Wudi is quite a badass.” Many people lamented while talking about this: “He entered so swiftly and made his way into a palace then forcefully snatched a cauldron? Truly a great vanguard.”

Such actions, however, caused more people to become vigilant. An ancestor murmured: “The kingdom of the Imperial Border has many powerful existences. Jikong Wudi wasn’t the only one who contributed. His army had great merits in this assault as well.”

“Hmm, an old cauldron shouldn’t warrant such a grand maneuver from him. Perhaps there is something else going on behind the scenes.” A different paragon spoke.

A junior curiously asked: “Something else?”

The senior angrily glared at the kid and knocked on his head: “Use your damned brain instead of just swinging your fists around all day! Just what kind of existence is Space Trample Mountain? Jikong Wudi doesn’t lack treasures, so why did he suddenly attack a palace? Why the need to show off his might? He, or perhaps

Venerable Ninesword, simply wants to show others that their sect is strong enough to fight just about anyone!”

“Yes.” A different senior nodded: “Recently, Fiercest’s momentum has soared since Jikong Wudi’s group all lost to him. Right now, even Goddess Mei and Sword Goddess Bai are siding with him. This is enough to show that no one in the younger generation can oppose him.”

“Li Qiye’s might is making the other geniuses insecure.” The paragon continued: “I’m afraid all the young ones right now are worried that one day, Li Qiye would suddenly go crazy and make mincemeat out of them all. Right now, Jikong Wudi’s attack on the palace is the same as the Space Trample Mountain giving everyone a warning — no matter how powerful you are, you cannot touch Jikong Wudi since their mountain has the strength to fight anyone!”

Besides Jikong Wudi, other geniuses also took actions that attracted a lot of attention. However, they were more subdued compared to attacking a palace.

For example, Zhan Shi had been staying at the Imperial Border the entire time and observed all the battles that were going on.

“What is Zhan Shi trying to do? He’s not looking for treasures or medicines.” People became curious since Zhan Shi was using all of his energy to observe fights.

“He wants to build an invincible legion on top of becoming an

Immortal Emperor.” A sect master personally went to check on Zhan Shi and said: “He has a powerful legion that consists of eight members. Moreover, all of them are the same age as him. I heard this team has challenged Jikong Wudi before and came out with their bodies intact.”

A different person who was maintaining a low profile was Heavenly Emperor Lin. He entered the Devil World and stole an immortal grass from a dark cultivator. By the time they reacted, Lin had already long escaped.

Many people felt sorry for him: “I feel that Lin Tiandi has more potential than anyone else. What a shame that he is a vagrant cultivator.”

Chapter 1069: Blazing Devil

All along, people were optimistic about Heavenly Emperor Lin. In fact, compared to the imperious Jikong Wudi, Lin was much more amiable. Moreover, he came from humble origins, so there was a sense of closeness felt by many people.

However, his background was also his biggest flaw compared to Jikong Wudi's group.

“Sigh, if Heavenly Emperor Lin had the same background as Jikong Wudi's group, he wouldn't need to flee just because of an immortal grass. Look at Jikong Wudi, he directly attacked a palace and took a cauldron away. This is the power of an imperial lineage.” Someone commented with emotion.

Everyone knew that in the competition for the Heaven's Will, outside of one's own strength, their backgrounds mattered a lot; it was a direct influence on their chance of success.

Compared to Zhan Shi and Heavenly Emperor Lin who were relatively inconspicuous, there was another person who commanded the limelight — the Jewel Pillar Mortal King.

Recently, he had been fighting against the imperial troops around here. He would jump into the fray time and time again, gaining many victories.

At the same time, he was chased around by the great army here while stricken with grave injuries. No matter what, he became

fiercer the more he fought with a world-sweeping momentum.

“What is the Mortal King doing? Imperial troops only care about digging metals; they are too lazy to deal with us.” Someone noticed his actions and stated: “He isn’t seizing treasures or metals, so what’s the point of struggling against the [imperial](#) troops?”

“He is just training.” A paragon watched everything and explained: “He is polishing his flaws, most importantly, his speed. If his speed could increase, then he would be much more frightening; nothing would be capable of stopping him.”

Someone murmured: “Does he want to take revenge against Li Qiye?”

Everyone knew about his beating from Li Qiye at the terrace a few days ago. Li Qiye himself said that the Mortal King was too slow.

In fact, it was no secret. The Hell Suppressing Physique had infinite weight which resulted in its flaw of being slow. Many people who cultivated this physique all tried to find a way to make up for this shortcoming.

“That’s for sure.” Someone who knew the Mortal King well spoke: “He definitely cannot swallow this anger after losing three times to Li Qiye, but the last time was the worst. Moreover, the sacred school had been wanting to bring Chen Baojiao back to marry the Mortal King, so this is both a feud between the sects as well as a personal matter. The Mortal King will have to obtain

vengeance. One of them will have to die!”

“Li Qiye is too heaven-defying though.” Even the people from the previous generation could only say this about the situation. They knew that the Mortal King had nothing going for him against Li Qiye.

Contrary to the Mortal King’s peers, Bing Yuxia was the most leisurely. She didn’t seem to be treasure hunting at all with her large female entourage. They took many breaks during their scenic stroll. Gathering medicines and plants was only part of their relaxed process.

Of course, no one wanted to provoke her. It was a big relief to others that she wasn’t causing trouble herself.

Li Qiye led the girls to a very remote and barren land. It was a volcanic region painted in a crimson shade. One could see lava gushing all over the place.

He ordered the girls to take him next to a huge volcanic crater. The hot magma rising and flowing here could melt all things.

They descended as far into the crater as possible. Before them was a molten sea of magma with nothing else in sight.

The Devil King sat on his palanquin and coldly scowled. His flames surged to the sky with an aura capable of tearing apart this molten sea.

“Blazing Devil, do I need to go down myself?” He uttered coldly.

“Splash!” The magma whirled and revealed a long stairway that reached into the depths.

The girls raised the palanquin and followed the staircase. At the end of the pathway, they found that below the molten sea was a huge palace.

“My Lord...” A dark cultivator was kneeling in this palace. He was made from the condensation of magma and had a fiery body.

Li Qiye coldly looked down at the prostrating devil and scornfully spoke: “What now, Blazing? You think I am a fake?”

“I wouldn’t dare, My Lord.” Blazing Devil quickly bowed again.

“You don’t dare? If you didn’t, then I shouldn’t have needed to speak.” With that, his devil flame instantly erupted like a Devil King awakening from his slumber, capable of tearing this underworld apart.

“My Lord, please calm down. This lowly one was wrong, please punish me!” Blazing Devil’s body grew limp from fear. His forehead touched the ground and he didn’t dare to move at all.

Li Qiye glared at him and slightly waved his sleeve: “Rise, I don’t

blame you. Recently, some ignorant fools have indeed been posing as me.”

At this time, how could Blazing dare to doubt Li Qiye? For dark cultivators like them, other things could be disguised, but not the devil heart. This was the most fundamental essence of their very being. In the Devil World, very few people had a devil heart of this level, but Heaven Relinquish was one of them!

After Blazing stood up, the imperious Li Qiye glanced over this palace and spoke emotionlessly: “You have picked up quite a treasure. This palace wasn’t yours back then.”

Blazing smiled dryly and replied: “My Lord, after the old Devil King went to the Evil Slaying Platform, this place lost its master, so this lowly one became bold and decided to stay here. If My Lord likes it, this lowly one will hand it over to you right away.”

“I didn’t come today for your broken palace. If I wanted it, I would have taken it long ago, it wouldn’t have been your turn to stay here.” Li Qiye said conceitedly.

“Yes, yes. My Lord is the one who holds the key to the Dark Maxim Palace, a little palace like this, of course, can’t get into your sight.” Blazing hastily replied.

Li Qiye batted his eyes and coldly asked: “You were born underground, correct?”

“Yes.” Blazing answered right away: “That was a story from long ago. This lowly one is one of the few dark cultivators born down here.”

Li Qiye took out an item then threw it to him before speaking dismissively: “Have you seen this thing before?”

The item was the thing Mei Suyao took from Veda's Vajra and was finally put together successfully by the Mortal Monarch.

Mei Suyao was not surprised to see the complete form of this item. Since Li Qiye wanted it, he must have known of its effects.

Blazing carefully looked at it. After a while, he murmured: “I’m afraid this lowly one has never seen this thing before.”

“Look closer, there should be a similar type of runes underground like the ones on there.” Li Qiye coldly spoke.

Blazing looked again. After pondering for a long time, he was jolted and exclaimed: “Yes, I think there was a place like this.”

“Tell me the exact location.” Li Qiye commanded.

Blazing mused it over before answering: “This lowly one dares not deceive My Lord. It was too long ago, so I am not sure. I think that place should have runes like this, but I am not one hundred percent certain.”

“Draw a map. As long as you remember the terrain, it should be simple.” He ordered once more.

Blazing naturally didn't dare to snub Li Qiye. He held a calligraphy pen and began to draw. After each stroke, he tilted his head in contemplation and made many modifications since he didn't dare to make the slightest mistake.

After drawing for some time, he finally finished it and handed it to Li Qiye to let him take a look. Li Qiye checked it meticulously and gently nodded: “This should be right.”

Keep in mind that Li Qiye had stayed in the Lesser Imperial Devil World for a long period in the past, so he understood it quite well. However, he wasn't completely certain of the location he was searching for. After narrowing the range with Blazing's drawing, he finally knew where it was.

After putting the drawing of the terrain away, he coldly glared at Blazing: “If I remember correctly, this inner earth gave birth to a Fire God's Calmheart.”

“That, that, heart of the fire god...” Blazing felt quite awkward once Li Qiye brought up this topic.

Li Qiye coldly stared at him: “I have calculated with my fingers. Since the last sacrifice, the heart here has reached maturity.”

“Yes, that’s true...” Blazing coughed nervously.

Li Qiye waved his sleeve gently and commanded: “Go fetch it.”

Blazing didn’t know what to do, so he only stood there while hesitating.

“You have been protecting it through the long years, so I won’t mistreat you. I, Heaven Relinquish, never owe anyone a favor.” Li Qiye imperiously declared: “I will grant you a devil wish!”

“My Lord wants to climb the Evil Slaying Platform!” Blazing startingly murmured after hearing this.

“That’s right.” Li Qiye chillingly confirmed without batting an eye.

Blazing stood there in a daze. After a while, he spoke: “Ever since the God-Tyrant Devil King went up there, no other kings have done so. If My Lord is going this time, who will be the future holder of the key to the Dark Maxim Palace?”

“You don’t need to know that. Just leave behind a devil wish.” Li Qiye’s eyes turned cold.

Blazing didn’t dare to make Li Qiye unhappy. He immediately took out the Fire God’s Calmheart. He knew that his refusal was useless. Who could actually stop Heaven Relinquish if he wanted to seize it by force?

Remember, the word “imperial” in this world is not related to Immortal Emperors. Maybe I should have used royal for it instead...

Chapter 1070: Fire God's Calmheart

A moment later, Blazing Devil carried a box back and respectfully held it before Li Qiye.

Li Qiye didn't glance at it before he took it and said: "Where is your devil wish?"

Blazing quickly carved it down and gave it to Li Qiye. Li Qiye casually took it and then he got up, wanting to leave.

"My Lord." At this time, Blazing couldn't help but open his mouth to say something.

Li Qiye glared at him and said: "Say it, don't waste my time."

Blazing took a deep breath and bowed towards Li Qiye: "This lowly one wants to ask My Lord, what is waiting for us in the future of this world?"

Li Qiye indifferently stared at Blazing in response: "What do you think? Or rather, what kind of world do you wish for?"

"I, I don't know." Blazing hesitated for a moment to come up with an answer: "A world where we are free."

"It is not difficult to find out. Just personally climb the Evil Slaying Platform, right?" Li Qiye spoke without emotion: "If you

want to reach the best step, then take it slow.”

Blazing turned silent. In the Devil World, anyone could climb the Evil Slaying Platform. However, there were different levels of steps. No one knew what would happen after going up there.

Li Qiye ignored the guy and went back on his palanquin. The girls immediately carried him away.

After they left, Chen Baojiao smiled cutely: “Young Noble, this is killing two birds with one stone. You found out what you wanted to know and obtained a treasure as well.”

“Just part of the process, this treasure is actually incidental. I want Heaven Relinquish to come find me.” Li Qiye revealed a faint smile.

“If the Heaven Relinquish Devil King finds out, I’m afraid he will go all out against you.” Li Shuangyan commented.

Just looking at the Wooden Sword Dark Saint was enough to know how powerful he was. An existence like him was definitely at the Godking level. However, he was actually afraid of Heaven Relinquish. From this, one can extrapolate how frightening this person must be.

Li Qiye calmly sat there and leisurely replied: “He won’t.”

With that, he handed the box containing the Fire God’s

Calmheart to Chen Baojiao: “Use this item well, it will be quite beneficial to you.”

Chen Baojiao opened it to take a look. It surprised her quite a bit because it contained a beating heart.

“Do I have to eat this thing?” She was quite creeped out by the thought of doing so.

“This is not a heart.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “This is a Fire God’s Calmheart. Although it is called a ‘heart’, it was formed from the fusion of the extreme flames underground. It’s powerful but not violent, hence the word ‘calm’. It is gentle like jade yet brimming with endless explosive power. It is very suitable for your Tyrannical Spring Physique.”

After hearing his explanation, Chen Baojiao carefully checked it again and found that it was not truly a heart. The rhythm was not a heartbeat but rather the pulsing of a divine fire. It seemed to contain an endless fiery power that could explode and destroy an entire world.

“Imperial soldiers embark on an expedition while dark cultivators climb the Evil Slaying Platform.” At this point, Mei Suyao who had been quiet added: “Just what kind of worlds are they going to? Is it outside of the nine worlds?”

Mei Suyao knew more than the other girls. Her Eternal River School had several records about the Lesser Imperial Devil World that other lineages were not privy to.

After hearing Blazing Devil earlier, all kinds of feelings rose in her heart. The records back then uncontrollably popped up in her mind, but she had no answer, so she had to ask Li Qiye.

Li Qiye's eyes became serious and full of longing. He answered: "Who knows about what is outside the nine worlds."

"Is it the legendary tenth world?" She asked softly because she knew quite a few things from Li Qiye. He had shown her secrets unknown to others across the eons. Even her school knew very little about them due to their scarce records.

"The tenth world?" Li Qiye gently shook his head: "This is not that simple. Perhaps no one knows where they are going to, outside of the imperial soldiers and dark cultivators who have actually embarked on this journey to a, maybe, different world."

Li Shuangyan and the others listened carefully, especially Bai Jianzhen. She tried her best to understand the secrets within using this rare opportunity from listening.

"Only when one goes to that world would they be able to know what it is." He ended with a profound glimmer in his eyes.

The lively Chen Baojiao asked: "Even though I don't know any of that, why is it that dark cultivators have to go on the platform and imperial soldiers have to go on their expedition?"

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile: "Why is it that cultivators have to compete for the Heaven's Will? Why do so many people break their heads from fighting just to vie to become an Immortal Emperor? You can think of it as our will or an external temptation. In short, this is their aspiration. Just like us who embark on the road to the throne, we tread forward knowing that there might not be a way back, knowing that we might become nothing but heaps of dried bones paving the path for another."

The girls turned quiet after hearing this. For millions of years, too many people had tried to become an emperor, but only one could succeed each generation.

"Let's move on. Does Young Noble need to find a treasure or spirit medicine for Miss Mei as well?" Chen Baojiao didn't wish to dwell on this heavy topic and smiled coquettishly.

Compared to her time back at the Jewel Pillar Sacred School, the current Chen Baojiao had become very lively. She was already enchanting enough, but her youthful fire made people's heart sway even more as they became lost in insanity from her beauty.

"I'm already satisfied with learning so much by following Young Noble." Mei Suyao smiled. She was as pretty as always, especially in her simple yet transcendent state that was so close to the origin.

"Suyao does not lack treasures." He smiled: "If she wants treasures, she actually does not even need to come here."

Mei Suyao smiled back. It was true that she followed Li Qiye and

carried his palanquin not for treasures, but because Li Qiye had given her something that was more precious than any artifact.

“Okay, we have traveled for quite a while so we should stop and take a bath.” Li Qiye stretched and smiled.

“Nice try.” Chen Baojiao coquettishly quipped as her face became red for some reason.

A huge forest could be found in the southern region of the Devil World. It was lush with green vegetation of a single type. These plants resembled an old tree with leaves and thick branches. The most noticeable aspect was that there were crimson fruits growing from these trees. Each of them was only the size of a thumb. They were translucent and red like carnelian gemstones.

The even more shocking part was that these gem-like fruits exuded a fragrance similar to the intoxicating scent of fine wine. Even strong-willed cultivators couldn't help but swallow their saliva after smelling them.

Monkeys were hanging around these trees and fruits. They were around the size of cats. They had golden fur, but when they opened their eyes, an evil energy would surge, as if it could devour the soul of just about anyone.

Many cultivators stood outside of the forest, but no one dared to enter. They could only drool and watch.

The reason was very simple, those monkeys weren't actually monkeys but rather dark cultivators. The moment anyone entered, they would instantly be attacked by the horde.

Someone looked at the red fruits on the trees and murmured: "It would be so nice if those dark monkeys weren't guarding this forest."

A Virtuous Paragon from a great power gulped as well: "Right. According to our sect's writings, these are Dark Wine Fruits, really good stuff that can ferment into immortal wines. This wine can calm the mind and remove evil. It really is incredible."

The cultivators standing outside all wanted to go pick these fruits, but their lack of courage prevented them from doing so. Of course, the numerous corpses under the trees were a deterrence as well.

Prior to this, many cultivators went inside, but they were besieged by the monkeys. Even a Virtuous Paragon would be ripped into pieces in the blink of an eye against a large group.

Thus, they were relegated to mere spectators. At this moment, they saw a young man enter the forest. He was very young and extremely handsome. His eyes were his most outstanding aspect. They looked just like precious gems, profound and moving as though they could speak. Anyone would instantly be attracted to his eyes.

A cultivator from the Grand Middle Territory shouted: "It's Shen

Menghui from the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom!”

“Just like the rumors, he truly has unparalleled potential. Unfortunately, he was born in the wrong era, or rather too late. If he was born ten years earlier, I think he would be able to stand shoulder to shoulder with Jikong Wudi’s group.” An older cultivator commented while watching this young man enter the forest.

Chapter 1071: Shen Menghui

“Shen Menghui is going in.” Many people held their breaths while watching this young man enter the thick forest.

However, a strange scene unraveled. After he went inside, his gaze swept through the nearest dark monkeys. The monkeys continued to hang on the trees in a sleeping state.

“How can this be?” People found this astonishing since the monkeys closest to him didn’t attack.

“One thought for slumber.” A paragon from the middle territory murmured: “He is truly the descendant of the Divine Ancestor. After being personally taught by him, Shen Menghui can instantly bring these dark monkeys into a state of dreaming where they can’t wake up.

“So heaven-defying! These dark monkeys are so violent, but he can hypnotize this many at once. Maybe he really is qualified to compete for the Heaven’s Will against Jikong Wudi’s group. If only time waited for people...” A youth commented in awe.

Shen Menghui was the current main descendant of the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom. Back then, their heavenly prince was killed by Li Qiye at the dao academy, so they had to choose another successor.

In the end, the young Shen Menghui actually won the spot. He was able to show off his skills among his many senior brothers and

sisters. Outside of being the descendant of the Divine Ancestor, it was also because of his exceedingly high talents that were even greater than the deceased heavenly prince.

Thus, even though he was only eighteen years old right now, he already had extremely incredible achievements. Some speculated that within ten years, he would be able to catch up to the rest of the supreme geniuses.

In fact, many in the middle region held him in great esteem despite his late debut. Both his fame and cultivation were much weaker than Jikong Wudi's group, but since he was taken in as a disciple by the Divine Ancestor, he had an unparalleled advantage compared to the others.

The Divine Ancestor was rumored to be the most powerful existence in the ancient kingdom. He was an untouchable Godking. No one had seen him over the long years, so people didn't know just how strong he currently was.

For someone who didn't come out for many generations to still decide to take Shen Menghui in as a disciple showed just how great his talents were.

Shen Menghui carefully picked the Dark Wine Fruits. Despite putting the nearby monkeys to sleep, he didn't dare to act carelessly lest he wake some of them and get trapped in their siege.

While people were watching him pick these fruits, someone else shouted: "Fiercest is here!"

People turned their heads. Sure enough, a palanquin was being carried closer. They saw Li Qiye sitting on it and didn't dare to share their thoughts.

Li Qiye posed there like a supreme Devil King with an evil flame capable of shattering the sky. Each of his gestures could destroy gods and devils. Even his gaze affected the temperament of this world.

People quickly retreated like a tide since they didn't dare to be close to him. Those with weaker cultivations felt their legs trembling and even had the urge to kneel.

Even though he was in his Devil King form, everyone knew that it was Li Qiye sitting up there just like how he used to be Evil Buddha a while ago.

“In our generation, only Fiercest would enjoy such great treatment.” Even an eternal existence was impressed by Li Qiye's style on top of the palanquin.

Of course, envy was in the air. Jealousy ran even more rampant among the younger generation. The Sword Goddess and extremely pretty beauties were acting as palanquin bearers. Just how domineering was this behavior? Such romantic luck drove others red-eyed insane from jealousy. Only Fiercest had the ability to act like this in this day and age.

Li Qiye was in repose and let the girls carry him into the forest.

All the dark monkeys jumped down and kneeled on the ground the moment he entered. It was a grand scene. At this time, the horde of monkeys could only prostrate to worship the supreme Devil King.

This sudden change made Shen Menghui jump from shock because even the monkeys that were mesmerized by him woke up right away and joined the ceremony. He didn't dare to linger and decisively left the forest to avoid being surrounded by the monkeys.

He stood outside of the forest and watched Li Qiye's back as Li Qiye was carried into the forest, a scowl on his face. His eyes turned cold while gritting his teeth and clenching his fists. Nevertheless, he refrained from doing anything.

Even though he had never seen Li Qiye before, in his mind, the guy had always been his enemy and the enemy of his kingdom!

For every disciple in the Azure Mysterious Kingdom, Li Qiye was their eternal foe. It was a feud beyond reconciliation.

He had killed too many of their kin and even the previous main descendant. The most frustrating part was that he even stole their imperial life weapon, the Imperial Violet Hammer. Getting a defining weapon stolen was a huge humiliation for any imperial lineage. Vengeance must be obtained for their kingdom.

“Buzz!” Not long after Li Qiye entered the forest, a mirror suddenly emerged in the sky. A holy light poured down on Li Qiye's location.

This development left the girls with serious expressions. They were ready to attack at a moment's notice. However, nothing else happened after the holy light fell down.

“Fools.” Li Qiye batted his eyes and murmured: “Thinking that I’m a fake Devil King, so they want to disperse my evil aura with that holy light.”

So it turned out that someone among the crowd secretly used a treasure to illuminate Li Qiye with a holy light. Everyone here knew that Li Qiye was a fake, so someone wanted to ruin his disguise. Once the dark monkeys discovered that Li Qiye was not a Devil King, he would be torn into pieces by their endless numbers.

It could be said that whoever tried to do this was truly cruel. He wanted to push Li Qiye to his death. However, this holy light was essentially ineffective. Outsiders didn't know that Li Qiye was capable of pretending to be Heaven Relinquish due to his devil heart, not just because of his engulfing evil aura.

At this time, the girls carried the palanquin back. Li Qiye slowly turned around with a sweeping glare.

“Shit, which idiot was it?” Many people were quivering in fear and quickly retreated after seeing Li Qiye turning back.

Some people even raised both hands and cried out: “Young Noble Li, it wasn't me!”

The crowd was pale with fear. Who didn't know about Fiercest's notoriety? This was someone who would massacre a whole race after an unfriendly exchange. The Blood-devil Tribe being slaughtered by him was the best and most recent example.

“Who did it? Come out now, don't make Young Noble Li take action himself.” Even the expressions of those from the previous generation paled.

Who could stop Fiercest once he began to rampage? Even a God-Monarch was child's play to him, let alone them.

Shen Menghui was shocked at this moment and looked around as well. People were walking backward to maintain a safe distance. Some even raised both of their hands to show their innocence.

No one dared to escape, however. Once they ran, they would instantly become suspect and there would be no chance for absolution. It wasn't a big deal to be killed by Li Qiye, but if this Fiercest fella decided to bring his anger to their sect as well and start a massacre, then they would be the eternal sinner of their sect.

“I am a reasonable person, come out now and admit your mistake. It is not too late.” Li Qiye spoke softly while sitting on his palanquin.

The crowd kept staring at each other, but no one dared to speak up. Eventually, people started yelling: “Whoever did it just come

out, don't bring everyone else down with you."

But who would come out at this moment? It was clear as day to everyone that it would be a suicidal move.

"It seems like I have to wash my hands with blood to remind some people about what I can do." Li Qiye's eyes turned cold and he immediately stood straight up.

In the blink of an eye, his terrifying evil flames surged and turned into black wings. They spread, seemingly capable of blotting out the world. At this moment he was a supreme Devil King with complete control over life and death!

"Young Noble Li, it definitely wasn't us! It must be some insidious wretches around here!" Countless people were scared out of their minds. It's not like they hadn't seen Li Qiye's ruthless means before. The cowardly and weak were frightened enough to kneel on the ground. They couldn't handle the terrifying pressure of the evil energy.

The crowd was silently cursing all the ancestors of whoever tried to scheme against Li Qiye just now. This was simply dragging them down as well! They were nothing but fishes in a barrel if Li Qiye decided to unleash his wrath! The pale crowd didn't want to die here, but they didn't dare to run either!

Li Qiye glanced at the group and slowly spoke: "Suyao."

Mei Suyao acknowledged the command and her figure flashed. “Bang!” Next, someone was thrown to the ground.

“Pop!” Her palm flipped and easily took out a treasure mirror from the person’s fate palace before throwing it down on the ground.

The paled suspect was lying on the ground, petrified.

After seeing the person’s clothes, someone immediately commented: “A disciple from the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom.” In just a second, people glanced over at Shen Menghui.

Chapter 1072: Azure Mysterious Eight Ancestors

Due to her innate Immortal Bone, such a method couldn't deceive her eyes, so she was able to instantly catch the hidden perpetrator.

The crowd heaved a sigh of relief after seeing the person being caught. It would have been miserable if Li Qiye took it out on them.

They didn't want to say anything after seeing the perpetrator from the ancient kingdom. Earlier, the group was secretly cursing the perpetrator and wanted nothing more than to kick him to the front. But now, they really didn't want to offend the ancient kingdom. It was still a sect with two emperors. Moreover, their descendant, Shen Menghui, was right here.

The captured disciple was pale and horrified. Li Qiye was a mortal enemy of his kingdom. As its disciple, he naturally had the responsibility to eliminate Li Qiye. Thus, after Li Qiye entered the forest, he wanted to reveal Li Qiye's fake identity as a Devil King so that he would fall prey to the dark monkeys. This would have been a great contribution. Alas, he didn't expect that his method was useless. Li Qiye remained unaffected while Mei Suyao caught him.

Shen Menghui was startled as well. This was adding a formidable enemy to the kingdom.

“An imperial lineage having to resort to this type of scheme...” Li

Qiye was too lazy to care and commanded: “Since you dared to move against me, learn the taste of death. Slay him.”

After hearing this, the crowd could finally breathe easy. They no longer needed to be the scapegoat.

In the face of death, this disciple didn't care for anything else and yelled: “First Brother, save me...!”

Shen Menghui's expression darkened. He quickly walked to the front and shouted: “Wait!”

As the ancient kingdom's descendant, he couldn't stand and watch as a disciple from his kingdom was publicly executed. Moreover, this disciple had asked him for help. If he didn't do anything now and just watched the execution, how could he maintain his place in this world? How could other disciples trust and respect him?

“What, you want to save him?” Li Qiye averted his gaze and spoke dismissively.

Shen Menghui took a deep breath and bowed towards Li Qiye: “Sir, our disciple was ignorant and has offended you, please forgive him.”

He knew full well that Li Qiye was a sworn enemy of their sect, but at this point, he had to acquiesce. There was a great saying — as long as the verdant hills remain, there is no lack of firewood. He

just needed to endure this anger and bow to the enemy.

“Forgive him? Is it so simple?” Li Qiye spoke dismissively while sitting up high.

Shen Menghui took a deep breath and replied: “Our kingdom is willing to compensate for the disrespect. Just say the words and we will try our best.”

“I am someone who does not show mercy to those who want to kill me.” Li Qiye smiled: “However, since you are showing such sincerity, I will be a nice guy just once. Bring Immortal Emperor Qing Xuan’s true treasure here and I shall spare him.”

Shen Menghui’s expression soured after hearing this. This was blatant extortion! An emperor’s true treasure was a priceless item, the defining treasure of their Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom.

Not to mention a common disciple, maybe even a descendant like him was not worth a true treasure.

“[Sir, this is unreasonable extortion.](#)” Shen Menghui deepened his tone.

“Unreasonable?” Li Qiye smiled: “In my eyes, imperial true treasures are no different from scrap metal, but your disciple wished death upon me. Is my life only worth one true treasure? I am willing to forgive him only because you are young yet still possess some sensibility.”

At this time, no one dared to interject or utter a single comment. This disciple from the ancient kingdom almost made everyone here die. It was already nice of them not to teach him a lesson, let alone speak on his behalf.

Li Qiye waved his sleeve and coldly declared: “Kill him.”

Shen Menghui was startled. If Li Qiye actually killed a member of his sect right now at this key moment, he would appear to be incompetent.

“Sir, everyone should take a step back and enjoy the high sky and vast sea. We are willing to offer a Virtuous Paragon’s treasure for his life. As long as Sir is willing to forgive him, everything will be fine.” Shen Menghui spoke with a sour expression: “Sir, you do not need to create another powerful enemy for yourself. The grand dao is long, having one more friend is not as good as having one less enemy.”

Li Qiye stared at him and smirked: “Are you saying that being enemies with your ancient kingdom is me courting death?”

Li Qiye laughed and glanced at him casually to say: “Earlier, I thought you were a smart prodigy. But now, I don’t know what to say to you except for one thing: the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom is nothing in my eyes!”

Such words were full of disdain for the ancient kingdom. However, the present was completely different from the past; who

would dare to mock Fiercest Li Qiye nowadays?

Shen Menghui's expression turned ugly at Li Qiye's response. How could he, the kingdom's successor, quell this anger rising from inside?

"Sir, our kingdom is a lineage with two emperors, not just anyone can knead it or take a bite." His cold expression was accompanied by a tough attitude.

"A lineage with two emperors is nothing to be proud of." Mei Suyao slowly interjected. Her demeanor was natural without any arrogance. She simply used the most ordinary tone to state the truth.

Alas, she was still transcendent and extraordinary, like a fairy lost in the mortal world. Her words were as pleasant as immortal hymns, but her plain response left people breathless. Who could act arrogant after hearing Mei Suyao say this? Regardless of their own noble upbringing and background, they were not worth mentioning compared to Mei Suyao's own.

Not to mention that she was from the Eternal River School, a sect with three emperors, she herself was enough to carry herself with pride across the land. In the eyes of many, the low-profile Mei Suyao was even more powerful than Jikong Wudi!

They naturally felt that she was qualified to make such a statement. Moreover, her words were without embellishment or underlying intents.

Shen Menghui was tongue-tied by her claim. He felt his face burning like he'd been slapped.

“Kill.” Li Qiye lowered his glare and commanded: “Kill anyone who tries to save him as well.”

Shen Menghui's expression took a turn for the worse. He was currently riding a tiger and had to follow through with saving the disciple. However, not to mention Li Qiye, he wasn't even a match for Mei Suyao standing in front of him. The wiser choice, alas, would leave him with a stained reputation.

“Who dares to kill my kingdom's disciple!” At this second, eight figures descended from the sky. A terrifying aura swept through the world, causing people to shudder uncontrollably.

The eight old men immediately stood in front of Shen Menghui. They were quite aged and didn't have much time left, but the auras exuding from their bodies were still quite formidable.

Someone blurted out: “Azure Mysterious nine ancestors, no, eight ancestors.”

The crowd quickly created a gap between themselves and these old men because they knew a battle was about to begin.

“Ancestors...” Shen Menghui was ecstatic to see the eight ancestors and became relieved.

The ancient kingdom had a group referred to as the Nine Ancestors. These were nine extremely powerful beings. Of course, it didn't include the most powerful one, the Divine Ancestor.

However, there were only eight left in this group because back at the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground, the eighth ancestor died to Li Qiye's hands.

It was precisely for this reason that the two sides had an irreconcilable feud.

"You are Li Qiye..." One of the eight ancestors coldly glared at Li Qiye who was sitting haughtily on his palanquin.

"And?" Li Qiye gave him a look.

Another ancestor threatened: "Junior, it is not too late to let go of our disciple. Otherwise, you shall suffer the consequences."

The ancestors naturally wanted to kill Li Qiye. However, they weren't completely confident.

Li Qiye didn't want to waste his breath with these ancestors and commanded: "Too much nonsense, kill him."

The eight ancestors weren't happy with this response. They were famous characters that were treated with respect no matter where

they went, but right now, even though they were personally here, Li Qiye didn't give them any consideration at all. It was simply a slap to their faces.

“Goddess Mei, you must think twice.” Another of the eight ancestors stepped up and raised his voice.

Suddenly, the atmosphere was tense to the extreme. The crowd moved even further away from the inevitable battlefield. Once they were at a safe distance, their apprehension turned into an eagerness to watch the fight that caught the breath in their throats.

The idiom is talking big like a lion, meaning starting with an exceedingly unreasonable demand; it also describes a greedy person.

Chapter 1073: Lacerate

Mei Suyao smiled elegantly after hearing this ancestor. This faint smile exuded an incomparable beauty that swayed the minds of others. It was not without reason that people called her the prettiest girl in the Mortal Emperor World.

“Think twice?” She gently shook her head: “Fellow Ancestors should be the ones to reconsider. If you want to fight, this junior will take you on.”

One person against eight ancestors — just how confident was Mei Suyao? Moreover, she spoke with such an insipid tone. This made many people quiver. They now understood that she was more powerful than they imagined, perhaps even more powerful than Jikong Wudi.

The eight ancestors from the ancient kingdom were rattled. Mei Suyao, a junior, wanted to fight the eight of them alone? This was truly not putting them in her sight at all.

One of the ancestors laughed out loud from acrimony and coldly uttered: “Very well, the Eternal River descendant is indeed incredible. It seems like this old man will have to check out your school’s supreme techniques.”

Mei Suyao was not afraid. She calmly stood there like an elegant fairy: “If Elders want to fight, I am ready.”

Such a nonchalant demeanor revealed her confidence and power.

“Suyao.” At this time, Li Qiye who had been sitting loftily on his palanquin waved for her. She didn’t say anything and retreated to his side.

Such a scene left countless people envious and jealous. The number one beauty in the Mortal Emperor World was listening to each of his commands in such an obedient manner — this romantic luck was simply a lifelong pursuit for many people.

In their eyes, a life having a beauty like that would be a life without regrets.

Li Qiye raised his brows with disdain and dismissively said: “Good, since your Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom is acting so bullish, nothing can be better. I like slapping others who exaggerate themselves with no bounds the best.”

With that, he gently waved his sleeve and ordered: “Children, tear them to pieces.”

“Screech—” The dark monkeys kneeling on the ground instantly pounced at the eight ancestors. Their torrential numbers became a devastating onslaught.

“Kill them!” The eight ancestors were aghast and screamed as they attacked in unison. With a strike that carried enough power to move mountains and flip seas, split the sky and boil the ocean, they swept away the majority of the dark monkeys.

“Screech—” In just a moment, the screams of the monkeys echoed everywhere as the horde frantically tried to kill the ancestors.

The eight were immediately surrounded by the ocean of monkeys. Only monkeys could be found around them. Even their screeching howls were enough to kill a common expert.

What was even more frightening was that the dark monkeys that came out from the depths became increasingly powerful. In the back, Monkey Monarchs and even Monkey Kings were rushing forward.

One dark monkey was most likely not that powerful, but an endless number of them was truly frightening. Even a paragon could be easily torn to pieces. Plus, killing a dark cultivator at the Devil World was an extremely difficult matter.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The eight worked together to attack again, but due to the continuous onslaught from the monkeys, especially after the Monkey Kings joined the fray, they were overwhelmed and forced to retreat.

What’s more was that after they split a group of monkeys apart, these monkeys would regenerate after a split second and continue to kill.

The ancestors were injured after a while. Some had scratched arms while others were bitten on the chest. One had his shoulder

pierced completely.

These powerful ancestors couldn't stop the continuous onslaught and began to falter.

The crowd was trembling even though they had evacuated to a safe distance. Moreover, more monkeys jumped from the thick forest to join this battle, as if they were endless in numbers.

“Open!” This battle was too drawn out for their liking. The eight ancestors grew furious and worked together to use an imperial weapon, unleashing its power completely.

“Boom!” The weapon flew to the sky and swept away a large group of monkeys, causing their howls to ring throughout this world.

“Imperial weapons are truly invincible...” Someone murmured after seeing the successful attack.

However, it was too difficult to kill creatures like dark monkeys at the Devil World. Even the sweeping imperial weapon failed to do so.

“Squeak—” The sharp cries of the monkeys echoed again. In an instant, another wave of attacks surfaced to tear the ancestors apart.

“Rumble!” Under the crazed attacks from these monkeys, the

ancestors had to shift from offense to defense. They couldn't unleash an endless amount of imperial power since it required a huge amount of blood energy.

Once the weapon shifted to defense mode, the monkeys couldn't break through the weapon despite the relentless barrage. This was the strength of an imperial weapon. It was not so simple to penetrate once it was readied.

At this time, Mei Suyao took one step forward with a righteous grand dao. The stars began to move with the sun and moon. The reincarnation cycle of life and death was accompanied by the six paths. In this grand dao, a new generation was born with a single thought, as if billions of creatures and Yin and Yang were merely part of the entire system. The Beginning and end existed at her whim.

Alaya Heavenly Fragrant Dao — this was the grand dao that Mei Suyao cultivated. She had reached a level of profundity that made even Li Qiye nod approvingly.

“Buzz!” She closed her fingers and myriad existences began to change. The stars were moved in the sky along with the other celestials. With a simple gesture, all defensive lines were no more. The imperial weapon seemed to be flipped over and the eight ancestors lost control.

“Boom!” The weapon was shot into the sky as if a giant threw away their imperial weapon.

“Ah!” Screams immediately rang out with blood splattering everywhere. Without their imperial weapon, the eight ancestors simply couldn’t stop the waves of monkeys. They were eventually unable to hold on any longer and finally, the first ancestor fell.

“Ah!” More screams came about shortly afterward. All eight fell as their flesh was mangled and blood flowed, true to Li Qiye’s command from earlier.

The crowd trembled after seeing this scene. They knew Li Qiye was pretending to be a Devil King, but no one thought that he would be able to order the dark cultivators in this realm.

Keep in mind the sheer number of dark cultivators here. Some of them were even comparable to Godkings. Moreover, Godkings had no way of killing these beings!

If Li Qiye could order them, then who would be able to stop his terrifying wishes? It would truly be meet god, slay god; meet devil, slay devil.

An old paragon shivered and commented: “One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil. Why is he so heaven-defying? At the Buddhist Funeral Plateau, he was able to control its power. And now, at the Devil World, he can order the dark cultivators. It looks like he can rampage wherever he goes.”

Mei Suyao was another cause for astonishment. She immediately flipped over an imperial weapon with her first move. To do so required an overwhelming amount of force.

“She is definitely much stronger than Jikong Wudi.” Someone else whimpered.

Alas, even a genius as strong as her had decided to follow Li Qiye. This made many people here feel a cold chill. Remember that she came from a lineage with three emperors. Gaining her favor matter was much easier said than done, yet Li Qiye managed to recruit her.

From this, one could imagine just how powerful and terrifying he truly was.

After tearing the eight ancestors apart, Li Qiye waved his sleeve and ordered: “Okay, all of you can return.”

The dark monkeys receded back into the thick forest like a tide. They crawled up the trees as if nothing had happened.

People held their breaths while watching this scene. Silence was commonplace with some in the crowd losing control of their legs from fear with blanched expressions.

Paragons from the previous generation were astounded as well. They would rather oppose imperial geniuses like Jikong Wudi instead of Li Qiye.

He looked at the blood flowing on the ground and insipidly stated: “How disappointing, I actually thought that the Azure

Mysterious Ancient Kingdom would have some more powerful characters show up. After half a day, only these eight geezers actually came to play.”

“Shen Menghui escaped.” Chen Baojiao spoke.

Back during the fight between the ancestors and the monkeys, Shen Menghui noticed that the situation wasn’t favorable, so he escaped without a care for anything else.

“Let him. I actually want to see if there are any more powerful existences here and if they would dare to protect my enemy.” Li Qiye revealed a nonchalant smile.

Chapter 1074: Dark Maxim Palace

In the depths of the Devil World was a mountain that stood tall. It was not particularly towering or large, but it still gave the feeling that it was suppressing the heavens. Even gods and devils would retreat before its grandeur.

There was a palace at the summit. It was completely black and made from unknown rocks, giving it a very mysterious feel.

There were no luxurious decorations or immortal lights that soared into the sky. It could even be said that the palace was rather coarse and unadorned. The black pebbles acting as the foundation for the palace weren't polished, making it seem that they were found and built on-site.

However, such a seemingly simple palace gave off a suffocating pressure. Anyone who gazed at its presence on top of the mountain would feel this oppression.

The gate to this palace was forever locked, so no knew who was staying inside.

Dark Maxim Palace! This was the most mysterious place in the Devil World. The majority of the dark cultivators here didn't dare to come close to it.

Legend states that this palace used to be the location where the master of the Devil World gave orders to all of its inhabitants. Later on, it was also the gathering place of Devil Kings. However,

newcomers hadn't seen the opening of the palace yet. No one knew the situation or what was inside.

There were many cultivators at the base of this mountain right now. They wanted to try climbing to the top.

There were rumors that the Dark Maxim Palace contained the Devil World's ultimate treasures and weapons. These weapons were even above Immortal Emperor True Treasures.

A tale claimed that as long as one could open the palace, they would be able to obtain the spoils inside.

Since the opening of the Lesser Imperial Devil World, a large group of people had come and tried, but they couldn't even climb to the top. Those who were able to still couldn't open the palace. There was no lack of God-Monarchs among them either.

At this time, the spectators were quite excited at the base of the mountain because the current climber was Jikong Wudi. They wanted to see if he would be able to open the Dark Maxim Palace or not.

Outside of the many experts, even Heavenly Emperor Lin, Zhan Shi, and the Jewel Pillar Mortal King were here.

Before Jikong Wudi, they had climbed to the top but failed to open the palace. However, this was not a shameful matter to them because there were no records of anyone having succeeded before.

“Thump! Clank! Thump!” Different sounds rang from the summit. Jikong Wudi activated different types of peerless methods to try and tap on the gate of the palace. However, regardless of his knocking, the palace remained closed.

Eventually, Jikong Wudi also gave up and descended from the mountain. He accepted his inability to open this palace.

No one mocked his failure due to the history of the inaccessible palace. It was not at all surprising for Jikong Wudi to fail.

“The real masters have all tried. I’m afraid this palace cannot be opened by anyone.” Someone murmured.

“Maybe one person can.” His friend added: “Fiercest might be able to. He is an unfathomable person, even climbing the Prime Peak back at the Godwar Mountain. Maybe he will create another miracle and open the Dark Maxim Palace.”

The mentioning of his title alone caused many people’s expressions to change.

Another quietly spoke: “I heard Fiercest has turned into a Devil King. I wonder if he will come here or not.”

When the title Fiercest was brought up, many people here turned quite unhappy. The first to show a visible shift in demeanor was the Mortal King. His enmity towards Li Qiye was quite immense.

Jikong Wudi's expression turned cold as well.

Zhan Shi and Heavenly Emperor Lin, on the other hand, were fine with it. Zhan Shi's expression remained aloof while Lin was as nonchalant and comfortable as ever.

“Even Fiercest will not be able to open the Dark Maxim Palace.” The Mortal King coldly uttered with an oppressive momentum that soared to the sky. Anyone would be wary of him at this moment.

His battle intent was surging as he entered a peak state like a War God ready to enter a life or death match. It was a very suffocating aura.

Perhaps he was not the strongest among the supreme geniuses, but he was definitely the type who would never accept defeat. His overflowing self-confidence prevailed regardless of victory or defeat.

The speakers here immediately closed their mouths the moment the Mortal King spoke. The more timid ones didn't dare to add their own opinion.

Of course, there were also those who were dissatisfied with his bullish attitude. An expert quietly muttered: “If you want to act cool, then go find Fiercest and then do so.”

“What did you say?” The Mortal King gave a chilling glare with a

soul deterring force. Even an expert would obediently shut up under this pressure.

The king snorted and was determined to have vengeance. Recently, he had been fighting against the imperial troops nonstop. He used blood to train himself and was confident that he had surpassed his weakness. Thus, he was quite eager to challenge Li Qiye again.

Being thrice defeated by Li Qiye had been extremely humiliating to him. He could never breathe easy until he finally killed Li Qiye.

“Brother Jewel Pillar, Brother Jikong, save me!” While the mountain was quiet, someone quickly ran over and shouted from the distance.

This person instantly reached the area and noticed that everyone was here. He acted as if he had just seen his saviors and let out a sigh of relief.

The escapee shouted: “Brother Jewel Pillar, lend me a hand.”

“Brother Menghui...” The Mortal King was surprised to see this person. Even Jikong Wudi nodded his head in greeting.

The three had a good relationship; the king and Shen Menghui were especially close.

After all, Shen Menghui came from the ancient kingdom that had

two emperors. Anyone would be happy to befriend him. Moreover, his master was the most powerful ancestor, the Divine Ancestor. This was a mythical Godking. Furthermore, the Mortal King's school was far weaker than the ancient kingdom. In the future, he would require its assistance in many areas.

Earlier, the Mortal King was very uncomfortable, to the point of being annoyed when someone brought up Fiercest. But now, after seeing Shen Menghui running here with such a ragged appearance, his eyes lit up. It was time for him to release this anger on a punching bag, whoever they might be.

“Who hurt you, Brother Menghui?” The Mortal King spoke oppressively and raised his voice: “Don’t you worry. No matter who did it, we will seek justice for you.”

In his eyes, it didn’t matter who hurt Shen Menghui. He was itching for a fight against an expert to sharpen himself, to use their blood to polish his will to fight. He needed this sensation. The stronger the enemy, the more exciting it was.

“Me.” A languid answer came about. A palanquin was being carried into everyone’s sight.

At this time, Mei Suyao’s group was bringing the palanquin to the base of the mountain. Li Qiye sat on the palanquin and looked down on all existences as a supreme Devil King!

“Fiercest...” Someone shouted. Li Qiye’s transformation into a Devil King was not a secret at this moment.

“Is that really Fiercest?” Others took a meticulous look at him and couldn’t see how this Devil King ahead was related to Li Qiye at all. This devil was full of tyrannical evil energy.

However, true experts understood that Li Qiye was using the same principle as when he transformed into Buddha. This was the embodiment of the famous phrase in this area.

The crowd begrudgingly stared at the girls that were carrying his palanquin. Jikong Wudi’s eyes became quite profound. Who knew what he was thinking at this moment.

There had been rumors of him trying to court Mei Suyao but being met with rejection. Another rumor stated that the Space Trample Mountain had gone to the Eternal River School to propose a marriage, but the school refused as well.

Jikong Wudi himself did not talk about this matter, but some insiders knew that he was indeed interested in Mei Suyao.

Even the unmoved Zhan Shi and the relaxed Heavenly Emperor Lin put on dignified expressions.

Putting the Dual Blade Beauties aside, just Mei Suyao alone was more powerful than them. Bai Jianzhen was once on the same level as them as well. But now, both of the girls were willing to carry Li Qiye’s palanquin. This had an extraordinary significance.

Despite losing to Li Qiye before, both Zhan Shi's and Lin's hearts sank again. They once again realized that they had been underestimating Li Qiye.

Chapter 1075: Saber Against Immortal Physique

At this time, the Mortal King was ruthlessly glaring at Li Qiye. His expression could even be described as unsightly. In his eyes, the perfect phrase to describe this situation was ‘the road was always narrow for enemies’.

Earlier, his words were full of bravado, but now, his heart was a bit shaken after seeing Li Qiye. Even though he had techniques to deal with Li Qiye, he was not completely confident.

And it wasn’t just him, Jikong Wudi, Heavenly Emperor Lin, and Zhan Shi were uncertain as well.

From beginning to end, they hadn’t seen Li Qiye’s true power. No one knew what realm he was in or what kind of merit laws he cultivated.

They couldn’t formulate a strategy due to the lack of knowledge about his openings and flaws.

Li Qiye glanced at the group from the palanquin and slowly said: “Very good, today is truly a nice day. Everyone is here already, what great timing.”

In just a second, everyone was holding their breaths. Some quietly left since they knew that wherever Fiercest went, a bloodbath would soon follow. They naturally didn’t want to be

caught up in the mess.

Jikong Wudi's group, on the other hand, didn't want to leave. If they left the moment they saw Li Qiye, they would become laughingstocks. Others would think that they were afraid of Li Qiye. How could they compete against him for the Heaven's Will in the future if that were to happen?

Li Qiye cheerfully smiled at the group and spoke in an insipid tone: "I heard some people want to step in for the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom."

Zhan Shi and Heavenly Emperor Lin were still relaxed, but the Mortal King had gone too far. He already spoke tough words; it was the same as water that had been thrown out. If he acted timidly at this moment, it would be a great blow to his prestige.

"Brother Li, it is better to get rid of enmity than adding to it." Jikong Wudi spoke as a mediator: "Brother Menghui was at fault, so he will apologize to you. Everyone can just take a step back and bask in the immensity of the heaven and earth. What do you think, Brother Li?"

"Apologize?" Li Qiye smiled: "Unfortunately, all pretenses have been shed so what's the point of apologizing? If saying sorry was good enough, then why do cultivators still fight and kill?" Li Qiye looked at Jikong Wudi and emotionlessly declared: "I'll let this go if you hand Shen Menghui over. Otherwise, I won't wait till the Heaven's Will competition, I'll just kill all of you right now!"

Such contemptuous words left Jikong Wudi astounded. In the contemporary times, who would dare to speak to him like this?!

“Li, don’t think you are invincible!” The Mortal King finally lost his cool and shouted: “I know you are very powerful. Fine, I’ll fight you right now! If I lose, then I will have nothing else to say...”

“There’s no need for my Young Noble to fight against someone like you.” A cold voice resounded as the Mortal King finished speaking. Chen Baojiao came out with a challenge: “I’ll take you on!”

Her challenge was not an impulsive decision. Prior to this, the sacred school had been spreading a rumor saying that she was its disciple and a perfect match for the Mortal King. She had long wanted to settle this score, so after meeting the Mortal King here today, how could she restrain herself given her fiery temperament?

Li Qiye only chuckled and didn’t say anything. He let her do as she pleased with an obvious doting demeanor.

“I want to challenge Li...” The Mortal King spoke coldly.

She quickly interrupted him and uttered: “You are not worthy. Let’s go!”

The Mortal King was visually exasperated by this development and provocation. Anger immediately sprang up inside him.

In the past, the Chen Clan did not have a high position in the Jewel Pillar Sacred School. Now, he — as the sect master — was being gravely disrespected by Chen Baojiao. How could he ever stand this?

“Fine, I also want to see what kind of laws you have learned at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect in the past few years.” He snorted and a divine saber appeared in his hand.

“Enough to slay you!” Her Tyrannical Immortal Saber left its scabbard.

“Clank!” The blade’s resonance filled the sky. She attacked right away with a slash that split apart the void. An eternal scar had already formed, even before she finished her move.

River Crossing First Slash — this was an attack from her eight sabers technique. The tyrannical saber instantly made it dozens of times stronger.

However, the river was not the victim of this move, it was the stars in the sky; even gods and devils had no place to hide.

The Mortal King was startled. He shouted and his own saber emitted a brilliant light. His attack resembled the rising of a thousand suns that emitted enough heat to scorch everything.

His technique was quite on point. An all-incinerating flame

capable of rendering all creatures to ashes ignited on the blade.

“Soulburning Saber.” Li Qiye glanced at the saber technique and said dismissively: “The Jewel Pillar Sacred School doesn’t have a technique like this.”

“Clank!” A clash resounded in the sky. Even though the king’s saber was quite incredible, it was far weaker than Chen Baojiao’s own. He was not a match for her in regard to the dao of the saber. Otherwise, Li Qiye wouldn’t have chosen her as a saber maid.

One slash came down and multiple suns exploded. Amidst the hymns of the blades, the king’s saber was split in two. Even though his blade had a great origin, it couldn’t compare to the Tyrannical Immortal Saber.

“Boom! Boom!” The Mortal King quickly retreated right when his saber broke. He summoned various treasures including a pagoda, a heavenly seal, an immortal rope, and treasure mountains... All of these items were activated by his powerful blood energy and immediately went straight for Chen Baojiao.

Only his powerful and plentiful blood energy would be able to support so many treasures at once.

Chen Baojiao didn’t try to dodge this furious attack. She snorted and swung her blade down across the sky with the momentum of a surging river about to break through a dam.

Hatred Aqua Second Slash — the next move of the eight sabers technique. All of the king's attacking treasures were annihilated. After several explosions, they were ripped asunder by her blade.

Such a domineering and fierce style made everyone take deep breaths. They had forgotten that she was a charming and beautiful girl.

“Thump!” Right when she was cutting the treasures into pieces, the Mortal King attacked by heavily slamming his hands down like a divine bludgeon.

Light exuded from his body with the emergence of his inner physique. It resembled a supreme deity that suppressed innumerable devils in hell in a frightful manner. He finally activated his Hell Suppressing Godly Physique and used his hands as a weapon. He ferociously struck Chen Baojiao's blade.

“Bang!” Due to the immeasurable weight of the physique, Chen Baojiao went flying even though his direct hit couldn't shatter her blade. Although she landed on her feet, the force resulted in many cracks on the ground.

“So what if you have an Immortal Physique?!” In high spirits, she soared to the sky again.

“Clank!” She slashed down once more. In the blink of an eye, this attack pierced through myriad realms, causing stars to fall and Yin and Yang to split.

The ground was torn asunder by this attack along with the sky. The slash carried the power of an endless army.

[Void Circle Third Slash](#) — short for hating all the “flaws” in this world! This third technique was an extremely powerful and direct attack. With the help of the Tyrannical Immortal Saber, it could slash through all things!

The Mortal King’s expression sank. He let out a roar and his figure quaked. Layers of defenses emerged around his body. A divine mirror appeared in front of his chest to protect him.

“Clank!” The slash descended and the defensive layers were cut down like tofu. Eventually, even the Godking-level mirror that protected his chest was shattered by this attack as well.

The momentum of this saber slash was too strong. Despite having endless weight, the king was still sent flying from the force of the slash. He heavily slammed into the ground, creating a large pit while spurting blood. Without the mirror protecting him, even his tough body would have been chopped open!

“Tyrannical Immortal Saber and Heaven Traversing Eight Blades.” Li Qiye nodded gently and said: “This is a crowning technique and a supreme saber. To be able to exert such power... she isn’t letting their prestige down.”

The saber was the invincible weapon of the Tyrannical Lion Monarch while the eight blades technique belonged to the Martial Ancestor. People thought this technique was created by the Martial

Ancestor, but in reality, this wasn't the case.

Both the saber and the technique had the same heaven-defying origin. Even the lion monarch and Martial Ancestor didn't really know where they came from.

The crowd was astounded by this scene. Many people knew about Chen Baojiao's half completion Immortal Physique. However, she hadn't even used it yet but was already able to send the king, who was using his physique, flying. This was too scary.

Of course, they didn't know that she had gained some ground with her saber technique as well as mastery over her saber. Even without the Tyrannical Spring Physique, she was still very formidable.

“Very good, strong enough!” The Mortal King thought that he could compete against Chen Baojiao's Immortal Physique. However, he was already losing before he even saw it — this completely infuriated him.

Parsing it literally, you would get “Third Slash No Circle, meaning Hate Earth No Circle”. It is an abrupt naming scheme and explanation, so this is my own interpretation. Circle here must not be talking about a literal circle but rather perfection. The naming scheme of the 2nd and 3rd slashes so far have hatred in them. It is a cool word to have for a name.

Chapter 1076: The Unstoppable Chen Baojiao

The spectators turned silent after seeing the furious king. They all knew that he had been training hard at the Imperial Border. They thought he would be able to challenge Li Qiye, but he couldn't even defeat Li Qiye's saber maid. How could he challenge Li Qiye then?

Jikong Wudi and the other geniuses were slightly trembling too. The more astonishing part was that from start to finish, Chen Baojiao didn't even use her Immortal Physique.

There had been rumors that the Dual Blade Beauties were both at half completion with their physiques. Some had even seen it with their own eyes. However, the Mortal King was already at a disadvantage before Chen Baojiao showed it off. Once she activated her physique, she would be even more frightening.

“Clank! Clank!” A burst of metallic sounds appeared. A thick and heavy armor covered the king's body.

This happened in an instant. The armor seemed to be made from immortal steel and emitted a golden sheen, making him look even more sacred, especially when he activated his Immortal Physique. In this moment, he looked like an unbreakable man of iron.

“Good armor.” Even Li Qiye had to praise after seeing it: “Nowadays, not too many people can craft armor specifically for the Hell Suppressing Physique.”

Even Jikong Wudi's group had solemn expressions after seeing the armor. They knew their stuff, so after seeing the incredible divine metal, it was clear that even a Godking-level weapon wouldn't be able to break it. As for imperial weapons, one blow alone wouldn't be sufficient.

This type of armor in conjunction with the king's Immortal Physique could definitely double his combat prowess.

"Eat this!" The furious king lunged into the sky and took his speed to the limit. He then descended like a blazing meteor.

Although speed was the weak point of the Hell Suppressing Physique, this was only something Li Qiye or other geniuses like Jikong Wudi would say. For other experts, the Mortal King was still very fast; they couldn't even catch glimpses of him.

"Rumble!" With his meteoric attack, the entire world shook and rumbled. If he were to slam onto the ground, it would definitely lead to a disaster.

Many people immediately retreated even further away from the battlefield in shock after seeing this. The half completion Hell Suppressing Physique had an unfathomable weight. This weight combined with that celestial momentum would have an inconceivable impact.

In the face of such a ferocious strike, Chen Baojiao made no attempt to dodge.

“Clank!” The tyrannical saber lit up and unleashed an unstoppable slash with an aura that soared to the sky. It was an incredibly decisive and fierce slash; she was like an unstoppable overlord with the crushing desire to fight until death.

Overlord Fourth Slash — this attack heralded the arrival of a tyrant that had the power to flip over mountains and shatter the world. This slash had an indescribable might. Nothing else could claim to be tyrannical in the face of this attack.

“Boom!” The saber glint flashed for countless miles after the sonorous blast resounded. When it struck the Mortal King’s armor, fiery sparks flew like a volcanic eruption. It illuminated the area in a majestic manner.

The saber was sharp indeed. It left a deep cut on the armor. However, her overbearing blade still couldn’t overcome his Hell Suppressing Physique. The saber energy began to disintegrate and dim after the direct blow.

“Boom!” Due to the suppression of the physique, Chen Baojiao fell from the sky. Meanwhile, the physique continued to suppress the tyrannical saber. Chen Baojiao didn’t evade and fiercely met the offense directly.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” Chen Baojiao was pushed back through several peaks.

“Thump!” Eventually, her blood energy soared. With one foot

stomping on the ground, she barely stopped the attack from the Immortal Physique while her saber was still stuck in the king's chest.

“Activate!” After her shout, the area in front of her lit up with the emergence of her inner physique. At this second, her Tyrannical Spring Physique erupted.

Her blood energy frantically increased. The power of the grand dao and the worldly energy in the Lesser Imperial Devil World seemed to be pulled in by her as she became the center of a terrifying storm.

An inexhaustible power poured into the storm's center. She became a Storm Goddess who could, with this power alone, tear apart this world.

“Clank!” This frightening storm forming behind her allowed her to unleash a mighty force. The vortex of energy was fueling her.

“Bang!” She reversed the tide from defense to offense. The spring physique allowed her battle prowess to multiply endlessly. The tyrannical saber began to force the king back continuously. It was his turn to smash through several peaks.

“Clank!” The sound of metal cracking came about. The blade finally cut through the king's armor.

“Pluff!” The saber energy instantly pierced his body as his blood

stained the armor. The Mortal King staggered several steps back as his blood kept on gushing out like a spring.

The crowd gasped at this scene. Just a bit more and her saber would have taken the king's life. His armor was his one saving grace.

“Zzz—” With a secret technique, the wound on his chest instantly closed, but his face was still pale.

Her saber had wounded him. Even though his secret technique cured the wound, it expended a huge amount of blood energy.

“You are forcing me to use my killing move!” The Mortal King roared. This development angered him to the point of insanity.

“Buzz!” Before he finished his cry, he had already summoned two treasures with billowing imperial auras.

One was a pagoda while the other consisted of two flying shuttles. The two shuttles floated around his shoulder and instantly spewed out an imperial vortex to increase his speed.

At the same time, the pagoda above his head poured down a primordial energy. This energy entered his inner physique and immediately brought about a crackling sound. Even the earth couldn't handle his new weight.

“Imperial weapons...” Many people murmured after seeing his

two new weapons.

This was not his first time showing off an imperial weapon. He had used them in the past. Moreover, it was two at the same time right now! What was even more puzzling was that everyone knew that the Jewel Pillar Sacred School didn't have imperial weapons. However, he was using two at this moment. Where did he get these two from?

“Alacrity Shuttle and Primordial Pagoda!” Li Qiye narrowed his eyes while revealing their names.

After summoning these treasures, the Mortal King's battle intent surged, making him look like a War God riding into battle.

The Alacrity Shuttle was a Life Treasure capable of increasing the Mortal King's speed dozens of times. The Primordial Pagoda, on the other hand, could increase his weight several times.

This amplification of both speed and weight resulted in an increased battle prowess up to a hundredfold over.

“Buzz!” In the blink of an eye, the Mortal King started his offense with a speed as fast as lightning and a weight absolutely capable of shattering the void. This allowed him to instantly warp through space, leaving behind a terrifying black hole.

Chen Baojiao readied herself with a battle cry. Her speed also reached its limit as she slashed straight down at him.

Heaven Traversing Fifth Slash — the next variation of her saber technique. In an instant, only this slash existed in this world. It sealed the firmament as well as the earth. Myriad laws moldered and the dao prostrated before it.

At the same time, her spring physique funneled the worldly energy from the grand dao. This torrential power empowered her, allowing the saber energy of this slash to reach the extreme. The whole world was enveloped by its aura.

“Bang!” Even the spring physique and the powerful saber technique couldn’t stop the attack from the Mortal King.

Chen Baojiao was blown away while spraying out a mouthful of blood. At this split second, Li Qiye rush forward at an unbelievable speed and caught her. The Mortal King didn’t stop there. Right when Li Qiye grabbed Chen Baojiao, he continued his onslaught with an unparalleled speed using his greatest weapon — the Hell Suppressing Physique.

This slam embodied both extreme speed and great destructive power. Even a God-Monarch would be blown away from this attack with their blood jetting.

Imagine a dart in the form of a sewing shuttle. They’re a type of hidden weapon like shurikens or flying daggers and don’t have to look like a shuttle completely. In this particular scenario, I would imagine that they’re weaving out imperial energy, creating a vortex to increase his speed.

Chapter 1077: Stagnation Domain

Though this blow from the Mortal King carried extreme speed and extreme weight, Li Qiye didn't care about it enough to even give it a glimpse.

“Buzz!” Li Qiye spread his palm. Under his five fingers, a world of darkness emerged and instantly swallowed the attacking king.

Heaven Devouring Evil Fist — one of the Myriad Dao Fists, an attack capable of devouring everything.

Li Qiye simply didn't care for the king and instantly carried Chen Baojiao back. He checked her veins and let out a sigh of relief. Fortunately, there was nothing significant to worry about.

“Boom!” The Mortal King broke through the void and rushed back from the world of darkness.

“Fight me again!” He laughed like a madman as his battle intent erupted. He was bursting with absolute confidence. It didn't matter whether he was facing Li Qiye or Jikong Wudi or Mei Suyao, he believed that he could defeat all of them.

Both Jikong Wudi and Heavenly Emperor Lin turned solemn after seeing the king's current state.

With the Alacrity Shuttle and Primordial Pagoda boosting him, he had indeed become much more powerful. His Hell Suppressing

Physique was able to exert an unprecedented battle prowess.

“The younger generation is quite frightening.” Even a God-Monarch was quite wary of his newfound speed.

“You think I’m afraid of you!” Chen Baojiao’s pride was swelling; she struggled to get up for another round.

Li Qiye stopped her and gently shook his head: “Rest for now, leave it to me.”

She wasn’t convinced by the last exchange, but Li Qiye smiled: “Your grand dao is still not mature, so there’s no need to force a fight. Winning and losing is part of being a warrior. Let me go, you can watch me kill him with one move.”

She finally turned silent and quietly went back while Li Shuangyan came to take care of her.

In fact, she was not afraid of fighting the Mortal King again because she had created her own grand dao. She still had an ace up her sleeve.

She cultivated the Tyrannical Spring Physique. This made her cultivation speed during the later stages much faster. She had surpassed Li Shuangyan’s group and obtained her own grand dao. Partly due to the treasure art that she received from the World Tree, she had succeeded in creating her own personal grand dao. This grand dao was given the name [Terra Treasure Art](#).

“Li Qiye, come and fight me!” Defeating Chen Baojiao left the king brimming with confidence. He wanted nothing more than to fight, so he challenged Li Qiye.

Li Qiye went forward and lazily stretched his back to say: “So you are confident in defeating me.”

The Mortal King was looking down on the rest of the world with his sweeping momentum and imposingly spoke: “Whether I can or not, just give it a try and find out.”

Despite his complacent demeanor, many people had to admit that his current form was quite frightening due to his superb speed and weight. Even Jikong Wudi, let alone the other geniuses, might not be able to defeat him.

“I have to say that the person behind you is truly smart, using the Alacrity Shuttle to nullify your shortcomings and the Primordial Pagoda to augment your strength.” Li Qiye glanced at him and smilingly shook his head: “Alas, these are just petty tricks, unworthy of mentioning in front of me.”

After being defeated three times on top of being held in disdain, the Mortal King couldn't accept this. Li Qiye's attitude towards him was too humiliating.

He loudly shouted at Li Qiye: “Li, come then, I'm going to grind you into mincemeat today!”

“Mincemeat?” Li Qiye glanced at him and lazily pointed a finger at him: “Just one move with my finger is enough to grind you into mincemeat.”

The king’s expression turned red and ugly. Such words were too contemptuous. He came prepared this time despite his previous defeats. After continuous training, he had reached a state of oneness with his two imperial weapons. He was confident in easily crushing Jikong Wudi.

But now, Li Qiye claimed that he could win with just one finger attack. It would be strange if the king didn’t go crazy from this blatant mockery.

“This is Fiercest, so bold and crazy.” People felt that Li Qiye was crazily arrogant, but no one refuted his well-deserved right to act in this manner.

“Little animal, I’m going to tear you to shreds!” The king let go of all posturing and forgot to maintain an image befitting a sect master. He screamed as his blood energy rose like a rainbow that crossed the sky.

“Boom!” He utilized both imperial weapons to their limit. Imperial auras surged, especially the vortex from the shuttle. It allowed the Mortal King to reach a speed that could crush time and space.

“Poof!” A series of his shadows were left behind by him, the

sound of his passage not ringing out until after he pierced through the void. His speed had surpassed all things, even the fabric of time and space itself. It left behind an everlasting scar in the sky that should only be possible to create with weapons, yet his body was able to do so. It was quite a fearsome spectacle to behold.

Zhan Shi's group was astounded to see this attack. It could be praised as an ultimate attack due to its might.

“Humm—” However, this attack didn't destroy the sky like how everyone imagined. Li Qiye also didn't counter with a world-ending attack, contrary to the crowd's expectations.

In the blink of an eye, a light lit up where Li Qiye was standing. When the Mortal King was ten meters away from Li Qiye, everyone could see him clearly.

In this instant, the king's passage was delayed indefinitely. He became slower and slower until he reached a snail's pace.

His attack was even faster than lightning, no one could see him before. However, after this one split second, it was strangely slowed down. This scene was quite bizarre.

In one moment, infinite speed; the next second, indefinite delay. Extreme swiftness and extreme stagnation within just a single thought. The contrast between the two astounded everyone.

This was the Stagnation Domain, an absolute territory created by

the Soaring Immortal and Hell Suppressing Physiques. Inside this domain, weight was boundless and accompanied by an immeasurable time-slowness property!

“Crack!” Once the king entered this domain, it wasn’t only his speed that was hindered, his armor was crushed at the same time.

“Bam!” Next, he could no longer stand straight and promptly knelt on the ground. It seemed that the world’s heaviest object was crushing down on him like a planet looming over his shoulder.

Keep in mind that the king cultivated the Hell Suppressing Physique. He himself had boundless weight, yet it seemed so insignificant before the immensity of the Stagnation Domain.

Li Qiye reached out and gently pointed with his finger. Afterward, one could hear the sound of bones breaking. The kneeling king’s bones shattered one by one. He couldn’t withstand this terrifying force.

“Buzz!” The Alacrity Shuttle and Primordial Pagoda under his control were suddenly recalled by someone. They instantly tore through space and used their powerful imperial auras to escape out of sight.

“No...” The king cried out in despair. Without imperial weapons, he was in an even worse position. Before he could finish his desperate howl, his entire body shattered. With more cracking noises, his whole being was completely crushed.

The king was no more. There was only a pool of smashed flesh and quietly flowing blood on the ground.

The spectators were creeped out by this outcome. The king's battle prowess was as clear as day. Even God-Monarchs had to be somewhat wary of him, but all that was left of him was a pile of mincemeat.

The Stagnation Domain was completely horrifying. It wasn't simply the combination of the two Immortal Physiques. This was the culmination of the two physiques finding symmetry to form an absolute domain.

This domain was the endless exertion of the physiques' power. This meant that the raw power of the two physiques was amplified by several dozen times or even a hundred times inside this space.

Two Immortal Physiques appearing at the same time was horrible enough, but once symmetry was reached, the essence of their power became augmented a hundredfold, resulting in this frightening creation.

People could only quiver in fear. From start to finish, Li Qiye didn't actually use a technique. He simply lifted his finger and just like that, the king was crushed into a meaty paste.

In fact, Li Qiye didn't even need to lift a finger while inside the Stagnation Domain.

Remember the Storm God praised as a God-Monarch? She could only stand there and accept the beating once inside the Stagnation Domain he casually released.

Li Qiye looked at the sky and said indifferently: “It seems like he is still quite smart.”

The person hiding in the darkness was the king’s dao protector. Alas, he didn’t try to save the king and only recalled the imperial weapons instead. This was because he already knew the outcome and didn’t want the imperial weapons to fall into Li Qiye’s hands.

After seeing this scene, all the other geniuses had grim expressions. They wanted to see a fight between the king and Li Qiye in order to observe Li Qiye’s flaws and possible merit laws.

However, Li Qiye didn’t reveal a single technique in this battle, rendering them unable to find any of his weaknesses.

I was going to leave out Treasure here because it is a bit redundant, but “Treasure” here is Bao — part of her name, so I figured I would leave it. Terra Art alone sounds boring too, it is a bit cooler in Chinese.

Chapter 1078: Threat

The bystanders stared at the pool of blood on the ground in silence. They wondered what law or technique Li Qiye just used right now. The strangest part was that no one was able to understand the Mortal King's death.

For many, a powerful opponent was not particularly frightening. No matter how strong they might be, there would always be a chance to surpass them by exploiting their flaws and openings.

The scariest thing was not knowing why an opponent was so strong, a lack of knowledge regarding his arts.

“A hero of a generation, only to become a pile of bones on the imperial path.” An older paragon lamented.

All had to admit that the Mortal King was a great genius. With the sacred school's capabilities, the Mortal King was still able to reach this height and stand shoulder to shoulder with Jikong Wudi's group. This was indeed a praiseworthy feat.

Many thought that he had great potential with his relentless determination. This was his most precious and best characteristic. But in the end, he still miserably died while vying for the throne.

Some also felt that the king was too complacent this time. If he took a step back, perhaps he would have had another chance to raise his head once more.

“The imperial path has always been merciless like this.” An experienced spectator commented with emotion: “The success of just one general is built upon thousands of corpses. Everyone knows about the glory of an Immortal Emperor, but who would remember the countless supreme geniuses that fell in the process?”

A lot of people became silent. As for the younger generation, some felt like retreating after seeing this scene. Even a powerful and resolute person like the Mortal King had fallen on this path — this left a shadow in their hearts. Some suddenly realized that although becoming an Immortal Emperor was a tempting endeavor full of glory, too many had died trying, and they didn’t wish to add to the count.

Li Qiye turned towards Shen Menghui and insipidly asked: “Who else can protect you now?”

Shen Menghui was ashen. The Mortal King died a tragic death and was definitely not a match for Li Qiye. Although his talents and accomplishments were quite high, he was too far off from the Mortal King.

He had to look towards Jikong Wudi for help. On the field right now, his relationship with Zhan Shi and Heavenly Emperor Lin was only that of acquaintances, but Jikong Wudi was his friend.

Jikong Wudi began to contemplate quietly in the face of this situation. He didn’t know of Li Qiye’s weakness or even how he had attacked. Everything was unknown. Without complete

confidence, he would not rashly attack Li Qiye.

This was not a spar or a learning experience. Someone as fierce as Li Qiye would fight to the death, especially given the feud between them!

Thus, without absolute certainty and an absolute advantage, he wouldn't rush into a fight with Li Qiye. Losing his own life for an outsider was not worth it at all.

Seeing Jikong Wudi's indifference, Shen Menghui became desperate for he knew that he couldn't count on him.

In fact, no one would blame Jikong Wudi for not taking action. Everyone could see that going against Li Qiye right now was courting death! Moreover, Shen Menghui was only an outsider. Who would be willing to risk their life for an outsider?

In the end, Shen Menghui shouted: "I'll take you down with me!" His most powerful art erupted as he lunged for Li Qiye.

Li Qiye stood there motionlessly. A black light surfaced as Shen Menghui entered the Stagnation Domain. One could hear a poof; he was instantly crushed into a bloody mist. His end was even more pitiful than the Mortal King's. No one was surprised to see this after the Mortal King's death.

Li Qiye glanced over at Jikong Wudi's group of three and revealed a faint smile to say: "I'm actually waiting for you all to

come, how long will I have to wait?”

The crowd held their breaths and watched Jikong Wudi, Zhan Shi, and Heavenly Emperor Lin. They understood that a fight between these four was unavoidable.

If this group wanted to become the Immortal Emperor, then they must challenge Li Qiye. If they couldn't even defeat Li Qiye, wanting to become the Immortal Emperor would only be empty talk.

Jikong Wudi stood there silently with a cold presence. With an aptitude of three saint attributes, he had always been confident and arrogant. However, he had to pick inaction with no choice but to avoid Li Qiye's sharp momentum.

On the other side, Lin and Zhan Shi looked at each other real quick. Eventually, Lin smiled and slowly spoke: “I do want to see Brother Li's supreme arts. However, with my current strength, I'm afraid I would be overreaching and not knowing my own limits. If Brother Li doesn't mind, Brother Zhan and I will join hands and try your supreme arts at a later date.”

The crowd became excited after hearing this. Without a doubt, he and Zhan Shi had reached a tacit understanding of working together to challenge Li Qiye's divine might.

Perhaps in their eyes, working together gave them their best chance to defeat him. This was because Zhan Shi was rock-solid as an expert in defense. Meanwhile, Lin was swift and extremely

gifted at offense. The two of them together would create a miracle.

Li Qiye glimpsed at the two of them and couldn't help but smile leisurely: "Very good, I'll be waiting."

Lin cupped his hands in response: "Thank you, Brother Li. Wait until Brother Shi and I are mentally prepared, we will issue the challenge then."

Li Qiye only smiled and didn't say anything else to Lin while boarding his carriage. He ordered the girls: "Let us go."

The girls lifted up the palanquin and immediately disappeared into the horizon.

The crowd watched him leave. After Li Qiye's departure, someone murmured: "I really am looking forward to that day. Two heroes fighting against Fiercest together, that battle will certainly be brilliant."

Lin and Zhan Shi didn't say anything else and left together. The only thing in their minds right now was to come up with a joint plan to emphasize their strong points to the extreme. They needed time to mesh together. Only through good teamwork would they have a chance of defeating Li Qiye. Otherwise, just attacking together was simply hopeless.

Jikong Wudi didn't say anything; he left with a cold expression. In his eyes, Li Qiye was a thorn that had to be removed or else he

would forever be restless.

Li Qiye and the girls went back to the thick forest and entered its depths. At this place was a huge cave with a pond inside.

The pond was filled with a liquid the color of amber. This liquid emitted the fragrance of wine, making others salivate as if it was an immortal brew.

Li Qiye stepped inside the pond and comfortably soaked in it. He couldn't help but take a deep breath due to the comfort before turning to the girls and smiling: "All of you, come in. This will greatly benefit everyone."

Chen Baojiao glanced at the nectar in the pond and asked: "What is it?"

While soaking in the pond, Li Qiye replied: "You can call it Devil Wine. When soaking in it, let your dao heart out and it will wash away the evil energy within."

"But we don't have any evil energy there." Chen Baojiao faintly chuckled.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: "The evil energy I'm referring to is not the energy found in the Devil World. To put it more accurately, it is the evil thoughts looming in your mind. Every cultivator will always have anger from defeat or pride from success... All of these negative emotions will accumulate in your

dao heart.”

“No one can claim to have a truly pure and innocent dao heart. After all, we live for so long that no one can maintain their innocence. Thus, everyone will have this ‘evil energy’ inside them.” Li Qiye explained: “At the same time, this Devil Wine can cleanse your dao heart. Even though it cannot cleanse all the negative emotions, it can make your dao heart even purer, resulting in great benefits.”

An inner demon was something all cultivators had to face. For some people, once their cultivation reached a certain extent, they would have to suffer the backlash from this inner demon. This was especially true for those who made an oath with their true fate. Once they violated this oath, they would easily be attacked by this inner demon. Once bitten, the majority would be killed.

“Pure and innocent like the heart of a newborn child, does such a thing really not exist in the world of cultivators?” Mei Suyao slowly asked.

“In the strictest sense, we really don’t have such a thing.” Li Qiye slowly spoke: “But to be more lenient, perhaps there have been some across the ages, not many though.”

Having said that, Li Qiye entered a daze while recalling the past. If an innocent heart really existed in this world, then Magu would be counted as one of the few.

After a while, his mind returned. He patted the nectar in the

pond and smiled: “Okay, everyone, come in.”

Chen Baojiao and Li Shuangyan were fine with it. They only slightly blushed and entered the pond to soak in the nectar.

Mei Suyao’s flawless face also had a faint pink shade, but she still coolly entered the pond. Bai Jianzhen hesitated for a moment. In the end, she still stepped inside with a cold demeanor.

Once the nectar soaked their clothing, it revealed all of their charming curves and valleys. In an instant, spring was blooming in this cave with all of its allurements.

This scene would absolutely let people’s blood boil and cause their hearts to beat rapidly.

Chapter 1079: Heaven Relinquish Devil King

Li Qiye viewed these beautiful curves under the water. In terms of figures, Chen Baojiao had the best and Bai Jianzhen was next.

Bai Jianzhen had a loose sword robe. When she was wet, her figure finally became noticeable. It was very close to Chen Baojiao's. Towering plump breast and round buttocks with a pair of slender legs below her thin and soft waist... It was indeed sexy.

Needless to say for Chen Baojiao, she was a natural temptress. Her figure absolutely caused one's blood to boil. In this aspect, maybe no one was her match. Erotic charm — these words were on full display from her body.

“What are you looking at...” Chen Baojiao coquettishly quipped after seeing Li Qiye's eyes leering over them.

Li Qiye only chuckled leisurely: “Beautiful things are meant to be appreciated, so how can I not look?”

Such words left the girls cutely pouting while glaring at him.

He laughed before lying flat down in the nectar: “Relax your dao heart like melting snow. Let go of your troubles and anger.”

The girls immersed themselves inside and followed his directions by letting the nectar cleanse their dao hearts.

Li Qiye closed his eyes and did the same. For someone like Li Qiye, even an immortal elixir wouldn't be able to cleanse his dao heart completely. However, when this nectar flowed by, everything became incredibly ethereal and distant as if he was lying on a white cloud. The gentle breeze and blue sky took him far from the mundane world, as if everything had become unimportant.

He was deep in sleep since he wanted a slumber without scheming, killing, and responsibilities. Unaffected by karma and effects, this was the sleep he desired.

After some time, someone gently rubbed his temples in a gentle and natural way. He opened his eyes and found that it was Mei Suyao before closing them again. She was gentle and meticulous. As the prettiest beauty, she had no hint of weakness, yet her feminine virtues were on full display.

Time seemed to flow slower as the world became quiet. Everyone was immersed in this peace and nothing else mattered.

Eventually, Li Qiye suddenly opened his eyes and immediately stood up while muttering: "He's here."

"Who?" Bai Jianzhen instantly turned vigilant.

"Heaven Relinquish Devil King." Li Qiye exited the pond and said: "Come, we shall meet him."

The group all got up and at this moment, all of their exquisite and sexy bodies were in full view for Li Qiye. He couldn't help but take a careful look several times, causing them to feel very shy.

They left the thick forest and eventually climbed on top of a peak. There was an old temple at the summit. It initially had several dark cultivators guarding the perimeter. However, upon his arrival and issuing a commanding gesture with his sleeve, the cultivators immediately left.

Li Qiye waved his sleeve and told the girls: "You guys wait outside, I will wait for him."

The girls left the old temple while Li Qiye closed his eyes and quietly sat inside, waiting for the devil king's arrival.

After a good while, his eyes abruptly opened. At this time, a cloud of smoky evil energy gathered inside and quickly turned into a devil king with an engulfing flame that looked exactly like Li Qiye.

If any dark cultivator were to see the two devil kings that looked exactly the same, they would jump from shock.

"I heard someone was pretending to be me." Heaven Relinquish stared at Li Qiye. His devil eyes were extremely frightening. His intense glare could devour the soul. Even those with strong dao hearts would be scared out of their minds under his gaze.

Li Qiye stood still and only smiled. He slowly turned back to his

true form and leisurely sat there: “My Heaven Relinquish, it seems like you have buried yourself quite deep, to only awaken after such a long time.”

Heaven Relinquish continued staring at Li Qiye without taking any action as if he wanted to see through the person.

“That’s a good devil heart...” He finally uttered: “An actual outsider having a devil heart! Who would believe this? No wonder why you could fool the others.”

The devil heart in the lesser world was not about one’s brutality or their kill count. The devil heart was a kind of obsession, a willful thought.

One thought to become Buddha, another to become Devil. This was the magical aspect of the devil world and the Buddhist Funeral Plateau!

Li Qiye only chuckled and sat there comfortably, allowing Heaven Relinquish to stare as long as he wanted.

“I have heard of a legend before.” Heaven Relinquish eventually spoke: “There was once a person who left the lesser world after accomplishing two things: becoming an imperial monarch at the Imperial Border and a devil king at the Devil World! Finally, he left this place and became a miracle, a legend.”

“It is an old matter, old enough to be forgotten.” Li Qiye leisurely

replied.

Heaven Relinquish continued: “There is a question in my mind. The lesser world has been sealed, outsiders shouldn’t be able to become a soldier or devil. How can a living being become both an imperial monarch and a devil king then leave so easily?”

Li Qiye smilingly replied: “All of this doesn’t matter. You don’t wish to enter the nine worlds, so is there a need for you to know?”

Heaven Relinquish stared at Li Qiye for a while before finally asking: “For what purpose did you lead me out?”

Li Qiye stared back and said: “Don’t you want to climb the Evil Slaying Platform? After God Tyrant, no other devil kings have gone there.”

Heaven Relinquish was quiet, but he didn’t refute this claim.

Li Qiye smiled: “Just like you said, I have stayed in the lesser world for a long time. I understand both the Imperial Border and the Devil World very well. If you tell me that you don’t want to go there, it is definitely a lie.”

“Understand them?” Heaven Relinquish asked: “If you know so much about the lesser world, how much do you know about the other worlds?”

Regarding this question, Li Qiye had to ponder a bit before slowly

answering: “The Devil World’s Evil Slaying Platform and the Imperial Border’s Expedition Path are both journeys with no return. Once embarked on, there should be no regrets. It is a courageous trek forward until the very end. That is all I can say.”

Heaven Relinquish’s glance slightly shifted: “It seems like I have been underestimating you. You really do know a thing or two about the other side!”

“I don’t know for sure.” Li Qiye shook his head.

“A different world, not a part of the nine worlds and not the legendary tenth world! Just what is that place?” Heaven Relinquish stared at Li Qiye, wishing for the answer.

“I can’t answer you.” Li Qiye refused: “If you want to know, you can board the Evil Slaying Platform. If you are fortunate enough, perhaps an answer will show itself.”

Heaven Relinquish was clearly affected by this response. The evil energy in his eyes turned into a bright glimmer.

Li Qiye smiled: “Heaven Relinquish, I know you are very powerful and I’m very aware that it is extremely difficult to kill a devil king inside the Devil World, but do not forget, I was able to become both an imperial monarch and a devil king, so I do not fear anyone in this place! Even if the buddhist lord and imperial lord returned, I still wouldn’t fear them!”

After a while, the glimmer disappeared from Heaven Relinquish's eyes as he slowly sat down.

Li Qiye sat there and spoke: "The two lords entering the platform and path did it for a reason, don't you think?"

Heaven Relinquish did not wish to dwell on this matter. He intended to board the platform, but in his mind, the time was not ripe.

"What do you want?" He looked up and asked: "You didn't lead me out here just to tell me these things, right?"

"I want the key to the Dark Maxim Palace." Li Qiye said with a smile.

"Don't have it." The devil king rebuffed his request right away.

Li Qiye had to laugh: "Heaven Relinquish, you can't trick me. I know the key is in your possession. In the Devil World, no one besides you can have it."

"So what if I do have it?" Heaven Relinquish coldly uttered: "If you want to seize it, I'll take you on any time."

"I don't plan on fighting." Li Qiye smiled: "I am only here to discuss it with you and will give it back after I'm done with it. Of course, I will not take advantage of you, we can make a deal."

“A deal?” With a cold expression, the devil king responded: “Dark cultivators do not have desires, what is there to make a deal about?”

“That’s not what I’ve heard. That’s right, you guys do not need treasures or manuals, but dark cultivators still have desires!” Li Qiye chuckled.

Here, he stared at the devil king to say: “Perhaps, you are not like those dark cultivators with a devil prayer, but you do have some things you want, such as boarding the Evil Slaying Platform!”

“So what?” Heaven Relinquish kept his cool with his response.

Li Qiye continued: “I know you have always been preparing for the day when you set foot on this platform. In your eyes, the time is still not right. Maybe you are missing an item. If you have it, it would be time to set off.”

Chapter 1080: Deal

Heaven Relinquish glanced at him right away and slowly stated: “So, you are saying that you have something that can help me.”

Li Qiye smiled: “I actually do have something.”

With that, he took out an item and tossed it over to the devil king. The king caught and carefully looked at it and found himself astounded despite his great status.

He eventually lifted his head to look at Li Qiye: “Where did you get this thing!”

“Does that matter?” Li Qiye answered: “It is more important that the thing has a great effect for you.”

This was the item given to him by Immortal Emperor Chen Xue in exchange for the life of his daughter, the Storm God.

He stared at the king and said: “With that, you can think about boarding the Evil Slaying Platform.”

The king pondered for a bit while holding the item before flatly saying: “All dark cultivators wish to go there. Moreover, all of them can do so as well.”

“I know they can.” Li Qiye said: “However, after being here for so

long, I have come to understand something else as well. Why is it that capable dark cultivators do not go up there so easily? Why is it that they only go there once their evil energy is strong enough?”

Li Qiye looked at the king and asked: “For what reason is someone as powerful as you still refusing to go up there for all this time?”

The devil king sat there emotionlessly and didn’t want to elaborate.

Li Qiye continued with amusement: “Even if you don’t say it, I still know a thing or two. In the past, weak dark cultivators still climbed the platform. However, a few things happened afterward that made people come to understand something. From then on, the majority of dark cultivators would not try to go up there without reaching a certain level.”

“For example, you. You are strong enough, but you are still not confident. This lack of absolute confidence might be indicative of your wavering will towards reaching the other side.” Li Qiye faintly smirked.

The devil king responded chillingly: “No dark cultivator has ever changed their mind about wanting to reach the other side. You are an exception because you do not belong to the Devil World!”

“I do not deny that I am not someone from this world. In the past, I was only able to become an imperial monarch and devil king due to knowing a few secrets. I schemed and planned in secrecy to

reach those positions.” Li Qiye said dismissively: “I won’t deny that I am also quite suspicious about the mysteries behind both the platform and pathway — there’s nothing wrong with this.”

“If I truly trusted in it, I would have done so long ago.” His eyes turned serious after speaking.

“Haha, no trust? Who do you not trust?” The devil king asked: “The Devil Lord or the Buddhist Lord?”

“To be honest, I don’t have a strong opinion on the two lords, it is not that I don’t trust them.” Li Qiye’s tone became serious as his eyes narrowed: “Perhaps they themselves do not completely understand what was behind these paths.”

Heaven Relinquish spoke indifferently: “For both dark cultivators and imperial soldiers, I’m sure there will be a home for them. Definitely.”

He turned quiet after saying this. After millions of long years, so many have entered the Evil Slaying Platform. However, there had never been any news of returning. This was their fate. The world on the other side had a fatal grasp on all cultivators.

“Everlasting life and immortality — these are what everyone has pursued for many eras.” Li Qiye gently sighed: “So many great men have been vying for them, but how many have been successful?”

“Then what is it that you are after?” Heaven Relinquish asked

with a solemn gaze.

“Fighting to the very end!” Li Qiye awe-inspiringly spoke: “In fact, these are the two greatest pursuits from one generation to the next — immortality and fighting to the end! People have been doing so since immemorable eras, the Legendary Era, and even now!”

With a solemn demeanor, Li Qiye went on: “Perhaps they are both the same question. Only by fighting till the end would one be able to obtain immortality!”

The devil king did not answer for this topic was beyond his understanding. Even though he knew a few things after listening to the devil lord, they were very ancient matters of the old ages.

“Certain things are widely discussed while others are done so in secrecy. Many things sound quite distant, but they are very closely related, it is just that people aren’t aware of this. This is due to everyone not being able to see outside of this limitation, they do not know what exists above the firmament.” He sighed at this point before looking at the devil king: “For example, dark cultivators, what is it that you are pursuing? To go to the other world? For what reason?”

“No reason, it’s just fate.” The king answered coldly.

Li Qiye laughed and said: “Oh my Heaven Relinquish, if other dark cultivators said this, I wouldn’t be surprised because they are ignorant, they can’t compare to you. However, as a devil king who

has seen the Devil Lord before, your answer just now is incredibly untrue to your own thoughts.”

The devil king asked: “Then what do you think dark cultivators like us are pursuing?”

“To be exact, we are talking about you, not dark cultivators because they don’t know what they will face. They only follow an old tradition of entering the platform in order to reach the other side, a different world.” Li Qiye responded.

“But you are not the same.” Li Qiye stared intensely at the king: “You know things that they do not, this is why you have been patient until now instead of boarding the platform right away, because of the uncertainty in your mind. Perhaps you know the result of failure!”

“Is that so?” The devil king didn’t deny or confirm this claim.

Li Qiye flatly said: “Dark cultivators, imperial soldiers, or even sacred monks, maybe they all have the same end. Dark cultivators like you do not have emotions like us mortals. No flesh and blood, or to be frank, all of you are dead, the living dead!”

“Not to mention the fact that you all can’t leave the lesser world and how you will face destruction after leaving just like those monks at the plateau, hypothetically speaking, even if you dark cultivators could leave the lesser world, would you?” Li Qiye asked.

The devil king answered: “Dark cultivators have their own wishes, this world naturally has its own fate as well.”

Li Qiye laughed: “Heaven Relinquish, you should be saying these words to other people. My ability to become a devil king and reaching this level should be indicative of my own logic. Let us be frank with each other. This will be good for the both of us. Perhaps I will give you some incredible warnings and you will be able to give me some ideas.”

“Really now?” The devil king maintained his aloof stance.

“We won’t talk about why the inhabitants of this world are able to live forever without flesh and blood because this is no secret to me.” Li Qiye said: “Let us talk about your instinct, the most primal instinct in your heart. Perhaps other dark cultivators aren’t aware of this, they don’t know why the other side attracts them so or just what it is that is driving them to a different world.”

“However, Heaven Relinquish, you know a little about this.” Li Qiye stared at the king: “Your kind does not belong to the nine worlds because you do not have life; you cannot share the same emotions as mortals! Because of this, you need a world with happiness and sorrow, anger and joy — emotions that belong to you. To be even more specific, you do not need immortality. What you want is to be a living being, not a puppet...”

“... Perhaps in that other world, there are no cultivators or imperial soldiers, only living beings with emotions. Of course, I am not ruling out immortality either. This is simply a paradise, a paradise that has been chased after by countless people in history!”

Li Qiye slowly went on: “Perhaps after entering the platform to reach a new world, everyone will find salvation. So in a sense, this is a resurrection, a rebirth!”

“This is your true instinct, and precisely because of this urge, all of you are tempted to climb up the Evil Slaying Platform to reach this different world.” Li Qiye finished with a dignified expression.

“I don’t know anything about this instinct.” Heaven Relinquish gently shook his head: “For me and the other dark cultivators, this is only our long-cherished wish and the fate of this world.”

“Haha, Heaven Relinquish, you are telling me about wishes and fate?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh: “You can deceive others about many things, but not me. I know very well how this world was formed, so in my eyes, there are no wishes or fate.”

Li Qiye glared at him and said: “I am aware that this is a plan, an extremely grand plan that has been in the making for countless eras and has continued on quietly.”

Chapter 1081: Devil World's Secret

After his monologue, Li Qiye stopped for a bit before eventually sighing softly: “Even the Buddhist Funeral Plateau has persisted from one generation to another, this is all because of a single pursuit.”

“Since you think you know everything, what do you think the plateau’s plan is?” Heaven Relinquish finally took the initiative.

“Heaven Relinquish, there’s no need to test me.” Li Qiye shook his head: “I know full well what the plateau wants to do, or rather, what Di Shi wants to do. How about we make another deal? Tell me what the Devil Lord told you back then and I will tell you the secret of the plateau.”

“Hmph.” Heaven Relinquish snorted: “It looks like you don’t only want the key to the Dark Maxim Palace, you led me out to find out more about the Devil Lord as well.”

“Frankly, I don’t have much interest in your Devil Lord since I know all the things that I want to already.” Li Qiye said dismissively: “I only want to know what he told you back then.”

With that, he peered at the king: “If I am not mistaken, before the Devil Lord left back then, he summoned you and told you certain things that the other Devil Kings didn’t hear! This is what I want to know!”

After hearing this, the king’s gaze immediately turned fierce with

evil energy rampaging about him in a frightening manner; all of his attention was focused on Li Qiye.

Li Qiye was unperturbed; he leisurely sat there: “There’s no need to look at me like that, you know full well that you can’t do anything. Plus, this wasn’t considered a secret either. The other Devil Kings knew, just not about what the Devil Lord told you.”

It looked like the devil king didn’t wish to entertain this conversation since he sat there emotionlessly.

Li Qiye took his time speaking: “For millions of years after the Devil Lord went to that world, many dark cultivators and devil kings climbed up the platform and left the Devil World. However, you have been doing nothing and staying in the Devil World’s underground, enduring from one generation to another!”

“To tell the truth, I am not looking down on you when I say this. I have analyzed all the devil kings here, you are not the most exceptional or powerful among them. However, one thing is for certain, you are definitely the most patient one! Because of this, the Devil Lord picked you. And sure enough, you have been waiting all this time until you are completely sure before climbing the platform!”

This was also met with nothing but a cold stare from the devil king.

Li Qiye looked him straight in the eyes and spoke: “Tell me the Devil Lord’s words and I will tell you the secret of the plateau.”

The devil king looked at Li Qiye for a bit before shaking his head: “Not interested. Also, I won’t let you borrow the Dark Maxim Key.”

With that, he threw Li Qiye’s item back to him.

“My Heaven Relinquish.” Li Qiye smiled: “You really are patient. However, let me remind you, you yourself can wait, but the opportunity won’t wait for you.”

“What do you mean by that?” There was a tinge of surprise in the devil king’s expression.

Li Qiye sat there leisurely and replied: “Heaven Relinquish, you think that you can’t die so there is more than ample time. You feel that you can wait until everyone goes up to the platform and it doesn’t matter if you take your time. However, I can tell you something right now, you only have one or two generations at best.”

“Such fear-mongering.” The devil king coldly spoke: “The Devil World is indestructible and eternal. This has been the case for millions of years.”

“Really now? Do you think the Buddhist Funeral Plateau will wait for countless generations? Will Di Shi wait for this long?” Li Qiye laughed.

“So what if they can’t wait?” The king retorted: “If the plateau could destroy the Lesser Imperial Devil World, they would have done so long ago. It doesn’t matter if the seal has been imposed on this world, this world will continue on forever.”

“Heaven Relinquish, you still don’t understand.” Li Qiye coldly said: “The plateau and Di Shi will not destroy you and the lesser world.”

“But...” His eyes turned cold at this point while glaring at the king: “But Di Shi will fight to the end! The Buddhist Funeral Plateau will accomplish its mission! Ever since its inception, it has always been waiting for that day!”

The devil king’s expression changed after hearing this.

Li Qiye went on: “Like our conversation earlier, ever since the immemorial era until the Legendary or even now, great men have been searching for the answer to two questions — immortality and the final battle! Since I have told you this today, it should show my sincerity!”

“The buddhist plateau will take action within three generations. At that time, the Devil World and the Imperial Border — this entire lesser world will only be a chess piece tied to their war chariot!” Li Qiye stated slowly.

The Devil King’s expression turned cold. He knew what was going to happen after hearing this.

“Thus, both dark cultivators and imperial soldiers only have two options. They will either have to enter the path or platform earlier or be tied to the plateau’s war machine and become Di Shi’s cannon fodder!”

He continued on: “You are a devil king so you should be able to sense just how powerful the Buddhist Funeral Plateau has become. Think about it carefully or calculate with your fingers, just how much longer will your so-called immortality last?”

Heaven Relinquish started to contemplate at this moment. Perhaps Li Qiye was right. They really didn’t have much time left.

After a while, the devil king looked at Li Qiye and coldly asked: “What do you want to take from the Dark Maxim Palace?”

“This doesn’t concern you.” Li Qiye flatly responded: “You just need to lend me the key.”

“You should know that there is an entry limit. Moreover, you can only take one item.” The king replied.

“I know that after thorough investigations. If I came unprepared, I wouldn’t have asked you for the key.” Li Qiye said.

The Devil King stared at him for a while and formulated another question: “Do you think you will be successful? I don’t think so.”

At this point, he could faintly guess what Li Qiye wanted.

Li Qiye smiled and nonchalantly stated: “I will. Since I was able to become a Devil King and an imperial monarch, I am destined for success in this regard.”

In the end, the king slowly took out a black key after a long silence: “You can open the Dark Maxim Palace. The key will remain inside and it will naturally come back into my hands.”

Li Qiye threw the other item back at the devil king and smiled: “You finally thought it through. This is a good thing. A few items will have no use if left back at the palace because you all will never be able to gather the other things.”

The devil king snorted and put away Li Qiye’s item.

“Wait, I still have a little toy.” Li Qiye smiled and took out the devil prayers from the Wooden Sword Dark Saint and others: “Bring these things along after you climb up there. These are some matters you will have to take care of before leaving this world.”

The king scowled and accepted these wishes. Since this deal was settled, these prayers were only trivial matters, so he was too lazy to bargain with Li Qiye any further.

Li Qiye stood up and said: “What a pity. I still want to know what the Devil Lord told you, but if you don’t want to tell me, I won’t force you.”

“If you really want to know, you can go ask the Devil Lord yourself.” Heaven Relinquish stated insipidly.

“If that day comes, I will.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “But at that time, whatever he told you will no longer be important because I would know all the secrets already.”

The devil king snorted again, seemingly have lost interest in this matter.

Li Qiye turned around and was about to leave the temple.

“What is your pursuit, your goal?” As he had just stepped out of the door, Heaven Relinquish’s voice came from behind.

Li Qiye stopped and turned around to meet the king’s gaze. The king continued: “You came from the nine worlds with the ability to become a devil king and imperial monarch, allowing you to have immortality! Then what is your pursuit? Treasures? Or is it just to find out the secrets?”

“No.” Li Qiye shook his head and solemnly answered: “I want to kill to the very end. My pursuit is very simple, all I want is an answer!”

With that, he left the ancient temple.

Heaven Relinquish watched his back and after a long while, he finally murmured: “Immortality and final battle... for what

reason? What is waiting for us on the other side? Your Majesty, I hope you have arrived safely.” Once the words came out, the devil king also disappeared as if he was never here at all.

“Young Noble, are you alright?” The girls outside saw him coming out and quickly came to welcome him after heaving sighs of relief.

He had been in there for quite a long time so they became worried that a fight broke out. Of course, due to their confidence in him, they stood outside and waited without breaking in.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “What can even happen? It was just a small matter so Heaven Relinquish wouldn’t fight me over it. Plus, even if we fought, he wouldn’t have any advantage either.”

Chapter 1082: Entering The Dark Maxim Palace

“Okay, put away the palanquin since I don’t need to pretend to be Heaven Relinquish anymore.” Li Qiye ordered: “We’ll head for the Dark Maxim Palace.”

Even Mei Suyao had to ask: “We can actually go in?”

Li Qiye looked at the girls and smiled: “With the four of you, we have the perfect number to enter. If we had more, I’m afraid not everyone would be able to enter.”

The group headed for the palace. At this time, he used his true form instead of disguising himself as Heaven Relinquish.

At the base of the mountain where the palace was situated, even though Zhan Shi’s group had left earlier, there were still cultivators here. Many of the late arrivals all tried to see if they could open it. However, regardless of their power and talents, all were unable to open the palace just like before.

“Li Qiye is here!” Someone quickly noticed him even before he made it to the base and shouted.

At this moment, the notorious moniker Fiercest was completely unmatched. His brilliance had overshadowed all the other supreme geniuses.

Thus, no matter where he went, he would be the center of attention, a source of dread.

A person in the distance saw Li Qiye's group and murmured: "Fiercest is here, don't tell me he came for the Dark Maxim Palace?"

"No one has been able to do it, can Fiercest do it?" Someone had to ask this question.

An expert from the Barren Earth commented: "Hard to say, Fiercest is too devilish. Just think about it, the Prime Peak of the Godwar Mountain was unbelievable too. No one was capable of climbing it, not even Heavenly Emperor Lin's group, but Fiercest made it to the summit."

"Haha, I think that Fiercest can do it and create another miracle. If Fiercest can't, then no one else can. Nowadays, who can actually compare with Fiercest?" Another commenter added.

In a short period of time, Li Qiye's fame as Fiercest had spread far and wide. He had supporters and even many fans. This was especially true for the younger cultivators. Fiercest had defeated all the other supreme geniuses and had even recruited the prettiest beauty, Mei Suyao. He was powerful enough and also had ample romantic luck. With all of this, how could the young cultivators not worship him?

The people here quickly made way for Li Qiye's group once they reached the base of the mountain. No one dared to stand in his

way.

They eagerly watched and didn't dare to make a sound. He had an unparalleled authority among the younger generation.

He glanced at the palace at the peak and flatly said before leading the way: "Come, we'll go up there."

The girls followed right behind him.

It wasn't easy to climb up this mountain because the palace was once the location where the Devil Lord issued orders to the rest of the Devil World. This area was under the duress of a seal so one needed to be quite powerful if they wanted to scale to the top.

But of course, for Li Qiye and the rest of the girls, it was not a problem.

The crowd held their breaths and stared intensely at Li Qiye. It could even be said that their hearts were hanging on a thread. Some probably didn't wish to see Li Qiye succeed. However, many wanted to see a miracle as well.

For millions of years, no one had been able to open the palace. If someone could do so right now, then it would definitely be a miracle. To be able to watch such a miracle was a kind of honor for the spectators present.

The entrance to the Dark Maxim Palace was very ordinary and

simple. There were no superfluous decorations since the two doors were painted black and were made from unknown metal. They seemed to be quite heavy. Moreover, there was no keyhole, so it didn't seem like they could be opened with a key.

Li Qiye smiled while looking at the two doors that joined together at the entrance and murmured: "Dark Maxim Palace, one can only imagine its grandeur when the Devil Lord was still here."

"There are records about the great prosperity once found at the Dark Maxim Palace and Emperors Citadel. I wonder if they are accurate or not." Mei Suyao added.

Li Qiye gently nodded his head: "They are accurate. The palace and citadel back then were just like Nalanda of today, or to be more exact, the current Buddhist Kingdom."

Just from hearing this, the girls could imagine it already. In the present, Nalanda was in control of the entire Buddhist Funeral Plateau, the home of countless monks.

Li Qiye lifted his palm. One could hear a clicking sound. The moment the key flew out from his hand, the palace's gate actually revealed a keyhole. Another click came about. The key inserted itself and unlocked the gate.

"Clank—" The heavy gate of the palace slowly opened and the path inside appeared beneath the group's feet.

“Follow me.” Li Qiye took the key and began to walk into the inner palace.

In the blink of an eye, the group disappeared. Another loud clanking sound could be heard as the palace closed its heavy gate.

Everyone at the base of the mountain was shocked by this scene. Even though some of them were mentally prepared, they were still astounded all the same.

“It really opened...” His believers were still astonished by this miracle.

Many took deep breaths and murmured: “Fiercest is far too heaven-defying. He actually opened the Dark Maxim Palace.”

Of course, others didn’t know about the deal between Heaven Relinquish and Li Qiye. The item that Li Qiye gave to the devil king was extremely unfathomable as well.

Just by the fact that Immortal Emperor Chen Xue used it to redeem the Storm God’s life was enough to show its worth. In fact, Li Qiye had wanted to keep it for his own use, but in the end, he still made the choice. He didn’t only want simple treasures for he needed an answer!

“Entering the Dark Maxim Palace... doesn’t this mean he can pick any treasure that belonged to the legendary master of the Devil World?” Some started to salivate after Li Qiye’s group disappeared

inside the palace.

“Strongest of the younger generation, the future candidate to become the Immortal Emperor, able to create miracles and have countless treasures. If it was me, I would be willing to follow Fiercest as well. What a shame that Fiercest wouldn’t care for me.” A beautiful female cultivator lamented.

This news quickly traveled across the lesser world. It caused a huge uproar and shock.

Someone else emotionally said: “No one else can be Immortal Emperor but Fiercest. No one is his opponent, he can even create one miracle after another. Opening the Dark Maxim Palace and climbing the Prime Peak, both of these are his feats alone. They are no less than any Immortal Emperor in their youth. Actually, I think they are even more amazing.”

Jikong Wudi was astonished after hearing this. Even Venerable Ninesword couldn’t stay calm: “This person will definitely be trouble if we don’t eliminate him.”

Jikong Wudi spoke with ferocity in his eyes: “Not just trouble! If Li Qiye is left alive, I will have no chance of becoming the Immortal Emperor. I feel confident against anyone else in the competition for the throne, but I can’t see through Li Qiye!”

“It is best if we eliminate him early.” The venerable slowly spoke with a serious expression: “Once his wings propel him to become an Emperor Candidate, I’m afraid it will be very difficult to get rid

of him. At that step, countless Godkings in the nine worlds will join his banner! When that happens, he wouldn't even need to do anything to destroy his enemies."

"Ancestor, are you confident in killing him?" Jikong Wudi spoke gravely.

At this time, he felt that the longer Li Qiye stayed alive, the more unfavorable it was for him. In his eyes, his chance of becoming emperor was drifting further and further away as Li Qiye became increasingly powerful.

"Hmm..." The venerable contemplated for a bit: "From my observations, that iron man truly has left already so I don't know if he has any other dao protectors behind him."

"We have to invite the prime general to come out." Jikong Wudi concluded: "The prime general will definitely be able to end Li Qiye even if Godkings are protecting him."

The prime general was the strongest general under Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. According to the legends, he wasn't too far off from the emperor himself.

"It isn't that simple." Venerable Ninesword smiled wryly: "No one can invite him, or at least, I can't. Unless the Space Trample Mountain is facing extinction, he won't come out for anyone."

"Should we give it a try?" Jikong Wudi pondered for a bit before

asking: “Ancestor, you and I can attack together while Li Qiye is unprepared.”

“There’s no rush, we are waiting for some people.” The venerable spoke deeply.

Jikong Wudi asked: “Ancestor has some reinforcements?”

The old man smiled and said: “They’ll be here soon. Li Qiye killed the eight ancestors from the ancient kingdom as well as the Divine Ancestor’s disciple, Shen Menghui. The ancient kingdom will definitely not let this go. Plus, he also killed the Soaring Immortal Emissary, so the soaring sect naturally will do something as well.”

“I calculated and the Azure Mysterious ancestors, as well as the Soaring Immortal Sect’s Chief Ambassador, should be here soon. I have sent them a message already; if they come to the Lesser Imperial Devil World, we will talk.” Venerable Ninesword explained.

After hearing this, Jikong Wudi was relieved. With sufficient forces, they would definitely be able to eradicate Li Qiye.

Chapter 1083: Heavenly Emperor Lin's Background

Jikong Wudi told the venerable: “No matter what happens or what we have to pay, we have to eliminate Li Qiye.”

This decision had been cemented in his mind. He would pay any price to destroy Li Qiye.

The war for the throne had always been merciless. Even though many of these past competitions were between Emperor Candidates and people said that only those who dared to face their most powerful enemies and overcome them would become emperor, this was not always the case. In fact, for millions of years, there had always been conspiracies and schemes beneath the surface of these wars. Behind these candidates were an abundance of followers and mighty dao protectors.

A lot of brilliant geniuses died pitifully to schemes, ambushes, and assassinations. Only by surviving this cruel war would one become the Immortal Emperor.

More often than not, these despicable means were looked down upon. However, Jikong Wudi couldn't care less about it at this point. In his eyes, after he becomes the Immortal Emperor, the public would stop caring about it later on! Who would actually dare to bring it up at that point?

“Li Qiye... I really can't see through you, just how powerful are you, really?” After hearing this news, Lin commented while

hellishly training with Zhan Shi.

“Very, beyond our imagination.” Zhan Shi spoke.

Zhan Shi had entered the Heavenly Dao Academy before. Back then, he was a student of the Sacred Era Hall. Although he was not friends with Li Qiye then, he knew full well of his deeds.

Lin movingly spoke: “I think my senior brother will meet a powerful opponent in this generation. If he isn’t careful, I’m afraid he will have to run after suffering defeat.”

“It seems like Brother Lin is very open-minded.” Zhan Shi told Lin.

“We are having a heart-to-heart talk, there’s no need to hide anything.” Lin said: “Brother Zhan, you know my background. Just like you said, I don’t mind letting everything go even at this point, it’s not worth mentioning at all.”

Zhan Shi looked at the young man and spoke: “Brother Lin is willing to give up the battle for the Heaven’s Will just like that? Immortal Emperor is something everyone will want as long as they have some ambition in them.”

“The truth is that I have never thought about competing for the Heaven’s Will or becoming the emperor. This opportunity is not being prepared for me, it is meant for my senior brother.” Lin smilingly said.

“I am not someone who underestimates myself and I see that you are the same way.” Zhan Shi said: “No matter how powerful your senior brother might be, in my opinion, Brother Lin still has a chance to compete.”

“No, there is a big gap between us.” Lin gently shook his head: “At the very least, right now, I have no way of surpassing him.”

Zhan Shi disagreed by shaking his head: “I don’t think so. More often than not, the dao heart is more important than talents when it comes to becoming an emperor. Of course, talents are indispensable, but the dao heart is even more crucial. Without a firm dao heart, even the most brilliant talents would only be for show. For ages now, countless great geniuses with weak dao hearts couldn’t handle defeat and eventually succumbed to their own inner demon.”

“Only by courageously treading forward without caring for trials and hardship would one be able to become the emperor.” Zhan Shi’s eyes turned profound as his determination became even more resolute.

He looked at Lin and said: “In terms of talents, skills, and dao heart, Brother Lin does not lack any of these. You meet the conditions and have the qualifications to compete for the Heaven’s Will.”

“The sect chose my senior brother, not me.” Lin shook his head: “I will not be the one standing in my sect and my senior brother’s

way.”

Zhan Shi did not agree: “In my opinion, Brother Lin is not a person who is overly adherent to old ideas, so why do you have such thoughts? Your fate should be up to you alone!”

“I am already very satisfied.” Lin smiled: “Everything I have today was given to me by my sect. If it values my senior brother, I will let him pass and hope that he will not let us down by becoming the emperor.”

Zhan Shi went on: “If you no longer want to become the emperor, why do you still want to fight Li Qiye? You should quit this game, this path paved with cruelty.”

“This is my attempt to lend the sect a hand by exploring Li Qiye’s true worth so that my senior brother can have a better chance.” Lin smiled: “Plus, running without fighting isn’t my style! I want to have a real battle against Li Qiye, not losing after one or two moves! I can’t accept such a defeat!”

“I can’t accept it either.” Zhan Shi didn’t wish to dwell on this matter and smiled back: “Who can accept losing to Li Qiye right away without even knowing what happened! No matter what, we have to see what he is really about! Even if we lose, we have to understand the process at the very least!”

“That’s right, let us work together and give him a good fight.” Lin laughed out loud in a gallant manner.

Zhan Shi laughed loudly as well: “If we can defeat Li Qiye, then let the two of us compete for the Heaven’s Will in the future!”

“If such a day will come, then I shall compete as well.” Lin accepted happily the idea. These words were erring on the playful side.

“If that day comes, Brother Lin, remember that I won’t take it easy on you.” Zhan Shi solemnly said with a firm glare.

Lin laughed heartily in response: “Don’t worry, Brother Zhan, I won’t show mercy either. We will fight until the sky collapses!”

Despite his heroic demeanor, Lin gently sighed inside. He knew that that day wouldn’t come. It didn’t matter whether they could defeat Li Qiye or not, he would concede to his senior brother in the future. The sect had given his senior brother everything, so he couldn’t cause trouble for them by standing in his brother’s way.

After all, his senior brother was the chosen one. He couldn’t act so ungrateful towards the sect!

Li Qiye and the girls entered the Dark Maxim Palace and continued along the road. Many palaces appeared in their sight.

From the outside, the Dark Maxim Palace seemed to be just one palace, but this was not the case. It was a heavenly grotto with

many different palaces inside.

Li Shuangyan and the others felt a suppressive aura. It seemed to be emanating from the palace itself and a different location at the same time.

Eventually, the group came before a huge palace. After entering, the colorful glimmers of treasures were reflected everywhere.

Many different items were displayed inside, ranging from divine metals to immortal steel. Weapons and holy artifacts of all kinds were placed along the palace walls. The shelves collected rare boxes as well.

Outsiders would be driven insane by seeing this. This many treasures could plunge the world into a bloodbath from greed.

Fortunately, Li Shuangyan and the girls were experienced. She and Chen Baojiao had been following Li Qiye, so they were no strangers to treasures. Needless to say about Mei Suyao, she came from the Eternal River School, a lineage with three emperors. It was a place that never lacked treasures.

Bai Jianzhen's Sword God Sacred Ground was also an imperial lineage, so they had plenty of treasures as well.

"Pick your favorite." Li Qiye smiled: "Remember, each person can only take one item out of the palace, no more."

After hearing Li Qiye, the girls didn't rush for the treasures. They only carefully looked over everything on display.

“This is the Devil Lord's collection. Although the best ones have been taken away by him, there are still many incredible items in here. It is up to you guys to pick the most suitable treasure for yourselves.”

The girls took their time. At this point, their harvest depended on their own luck.

After giving the hint, Li Qiye left for another big palace.

There was nothing else besides a huge painting hanging in the main hall of this palace. It was neither a drawing of a devil king engulfed in evil energy nor the Devil Lord of legends. It was a painting of a monk, or rather, a Buddha.

The Buddhist aura coming from this painting was far-reaching and had a great rhythm. Regardless of how many years had passed, it still emitted a faint Buddhist light. One couldn't see this Buddha's face since he was turning his back on all existences while walking to a very, very distant destination.

While looking at the painting, one would think that this Buddha was slowly disappearing before their eyes towards the horizon. But time and time again, he didn't disappear completely as if his journey was especially long and arduous. It was a never-ending trek across millions of years.

“Was this not drawn?” While Li Qiye was quietly admiring this painting, a gentle voice came about.

It was Mei Suyao. She had already picked a treasure for herself. She stood next to Li Qiye and looked at the painting as well. With a natural immortal bone, she had a unique perspective both when picking her treasure as well as looking at this painting.

“Right, it wasn’t painted.” Li Qiye smiled and nodded his head.

“A Buddha has imprinted himself in this place.” Her immortal bone could see through the origin. After a careful look, she was startled: “He left his will in this place, is this his attempt of suppressing the Devil World?”

“You can put it that way, but it is not to the point of suppressing. To be more exact, he is trying to stabilize the Lesser Imperial Devil World.” Li Qiye explained while looking at the painting.

“Is this the legendary master of the Buddhist Kingdom?” Mei Suyao had to ask.

Chapter 1084: Insect Pipe And Mechanical World Vessel

Li Qiye gently shook his head while looking at the Buddha in the painting: “No, it is not the Buddhist Lord of the kingdom. It wouldn’t be this easy for him to stabilize the lesser world.”

“Then it is the mythical Di Shi!” Mei Suyao was shocked. Di Shi was a being limited to legends. For millions of years, no one had heard of his sighting. Some rumors back in the ancient ages even stated that Di Shi was no longer in this world.

Others also thought that Di Shi didn’t exist and that he was only a character created by the Buddhist Funeral Plateau as a myth.

Li Qiye only smiled and didn’t say anything else. He left this palace for another one with Mei Suyao right behind him.

The next palace was very ancient. There was no scintillating light or immortal aura. It was quite strange due to the fanciful and obscured runes all over the walls.

They were of an archaic age. Even someone as well-read as Mei Suyao had never seen them before, arousing her curiosity. She opened her heavenly gaze while her forehead lit up; she intended to use her immortal bone to see through the mysticisms of the runes.

However, it wasn’t long before she felt the earth spinning and

had to stagger several steps back.

“Is this the supreme origin of an era?” She was startled. Her immortal bone could communicate with gods and understand the entire world. It could even easily comprehend Heaven’s Will Secret Laws.

However, when she tried to analyze the runes on the walls, she felt as if she had fallen into a boundless world, as if the runes were connected to three thousand different worlds. It was a complexity beyond imagination.

“The three thousand worlds are also inside.” Li Qiye chuckled and didn’t look at the runes for his eyes were fixated on a stone table in the palace.

At this time, Mei Suyao finally noticed that there was nothing else in this place besides this stone table and an object that resembled a bronze truncheon on top of it.

However, this moderate-sized item was not a truncheon. It was assembled from many exquisite little pieces, giving it a rod-like appearance but also an arm. No one could tell what it was exactly.

Li Qiye reached out and this bronze item fell into his hand. Mei Suyao took a careful look at this unbelievably complex and well-crafted item.

The world had many things that were created from universal

laws interlaced together. Some laws were as small as a strand of hair. However, each piece of this item ahead was around that size. The more impressive part was that it was all made out of metal.

Such an item consisted of countless parts. This was a heavenly level of craftsmanship beyond the scope of current understanding.

With a pull from Li Qiye, these little parts on the bronze object suddenly moved while the main body lit up. It was shaking as if it had its own life. At the same time, the runes on the walls resonated with brilliance as if they were waking up.

“Buzzz—” As the pieces on the object rotated faster and faster, they actually sucked in all the runes on the walls. In the blink of an eye, all the runes departed from the walls and went inside the bronze object.

After this absorption process, the object seemed to have taken on a different color and became even more complex and mystical in an unfathomable manner.

Mei Suyao was astonished as well. She thought the runes on the walls were painted on, but that didn’t seem to be the case right now. Someone had used an unbelievable method to pull the runes out of the bronze rod.

“The Devil Lord is indeed amazing.” Li Qiye looked at the rod and stated in a matter-of-fact tone: “To be able to remove the runes so perfectly, it is quite heaven-defying.”

Mei Suyao noticed some clues and asked: “Does Vedas Vajra’s item and this thing have the same origin?”

“Yes.” Li Qiye nodded slightly: “They do have the same origin. Unfortunately, the Devil Lord couldn’t have both items at the same time or else he would have realized something.”

“What is it?” She was full of curiosity. There weren’t many treasures that could attract Li Qiye’s attention. He didn’t even care for Immortal Emperor True Treasures, yet he seemed to be especially attentive towards these two things. It showed that they must have had an incredible origin, even more extraordinary than imperial true treasures.

Li Qiye smiled: “These things probably don’t have names. Very few know of their existence, let alone their names. However, after translating the runes, the language of their era, they indeed have a name.” Li Qiye looked at the bronze stick in his hand and said: “This is the Insect Pipe. As for the one you obtained from the Vajra, it also has a name — [Mechanical World Vessel](#).”

“Insect Pipe, Mechanical World Vessel.” Mei Suyao quietly repeated. From just the names alone, she couldn’t understand their uses.

Nevertheless, she was very knowledgeable. She looked at Li Qiye and spoke: “Legend states that the progenitor of the Heaven’s Secret Valley with the title Mortal Monarch also has a body put together by assembling countless exquisite pieces...”

“Your Eternal River School really does know many things.” Li Qiye laughed and didn’t say anything else. He put away the Insect Pipe and left.

Li Qiye and Mei Suyao went back to the treasury. He smiled after seeing the group: “Are you all done with picking your treasures?”

“We’re done.” Chen Baojiao had just chosen something she liked.

There were too many treasures here for them. Picking a favorite out of them all truly left them a bit dizzy.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Good. If everyone is done, then it’s time for us to leave.”

The girls had no objections and followed him out of the Dark Maxim Palace.

Under the mountain, countless cultivators were holding their breaths while gazing at the closed palace to wait for Li Qiye’s group to come out.

“Clank—clank—clank—” Eventually, the heavy gate was opened and the five of them came out in a line.

“What treasures did they get I wonder?” Many people were attentive to the group’s expressions in order to pick up clues.

However, they were disappointed because the group was very calm. There was no excitement typical of a successful treasure hunt. Perhaps for them, obtaining treasures wasn't that exciting. Despite the crowd's curiosity, no one dared approach them to ask what treasures they obtained from the palace.

The mass made a pathway for Li Qiye once more as they watched the group disappear into the horizon.

“I'll give it a shot too.” After seeing the successful opening, some cultivators refused to give up and climbed to the summit again.

Of course, without the key from Heaven Relinquish, they couldn't open it no matter how heaven-defying they might be regardless of their attempts.

Not long after their departure from the palace, everyone heard some news from an unknown source: “A dark cultivator wants to climb the Evil Slaying Platform.”

“This is a good timing.” After hearing this, Li Qiye chuckled and told the girls: “I have planned to bring everyone up to the platform already, so now that a dark cultivator is going there, nothing could be better. We can go see the mystical properties of the platform.”

The girls turned quite happy since Li Qiye had brought up the platform many times. They had a difficult time imagining the platform and the climbing process.

The Evil Slaying Platform was located in the deepest region of the Devil World. It was shrouded in an evil energy. At that place, there was no sky or sight of the sun as if it led to an unknown world.

When Li Qiye arrived, there was already a sea of people right outside the platform. Although they didn't dare to go closer, the entire platform was still surrounded from the distance.

This simple and ancient platform was made from ink colored rocks placed together. It seemed to be one with the ground beneath it.

There was a huge lever-style guillotine at the top. It was completely black like an evil blade from hell, capable of decapitating all gods and devils.

In front of the platform was a precipice where only a vast expanse could be found in front of it. One couldn't see the end of this void, making it seem as if successfully crossing it would lead to another world.

The guillotine emitted a faint light that exuded a quiver-inducing murderous intent. Because of this, no one dared to approach the platform.

No matter how strong one might be, they would feel this murderous aura from the blade once they got close. Although it was not particularly ferocious, it would instill a primal fear as if it was already dangling next to their neck.

The original word for Pipe here is difficult. It has too many

meanings and I don't know which one is right without more context – to take care (of) to control to manage to be in charge of to look after to run to care about tube pipe woodwind classifier for tube-shaped objects particle similar to 把 in 管...叫 constructions writing brush (coll.) to towards.

Chapter 1085: Evil Slaying Platform

“Fiercest is here.” Someone shouted once Li Qiye arrived, attracting countless gazes.

Li Qiye was standing on top of a distant hill and gazed at the platform with the rest of the girls.

He was in quiet contemplation after seeing the profound light being emitted from the guillotine. He was once a devil king back then during his long stay in this world.

Outside of searching for certain things, there was one question that beckoned his focus. It was whether dark cultivators could go to a new world after coming to the Evil Slaying Platform.

“What are the requirements for a dark cultivator to go up there?” Chen Baojiao inquired.

Li Qiye shook his head gently: “Nothing. Any dark cultivator can do so. However, their strength does influence the result.”

“In what way?” She asked once more.

He glanced at the blade and answered: “Wait a bit for when a dark cultivator goes up there, you will understand right away.”

Even Bai Jianzhen, who treated her words like gold, had to ask:

“Is there really another world?”

The girls had heard Li Qiye and the dark cultivators talk about another world, but they didn't know the specifics.

“I don't know.” Li Qiye answered: “Maybe, maybe not. It is hard to say. Plus, each person has a different opinion about this other world.”

Eventually, a dark cultivator climbed up the Evil Slaying Platform before the huge crowd. He had a human form that exuded a terrifying evil aura. Even God-Monarchs would be wary of such an existence.

He gazed across the vast expanse beyond the precipice in silence while standing on top of the platform.

The spectating cultivators were stirred. To be able to watch a dark cultivator on the platform was truly a rare event.

Eventually, this dark cultivator made up his mind. He stood before the guillotine that faced the precipice and slowly closed his eyes before placing his neck on top of the frame.

Some cultivators felt their hearts hanging up high after seeing this dark cultivator situated right beneath the blade. They nervously tightened their fists.

“Crank!” The extremely sharp blade fell down. It immediately

decapitated the dark cultivator like cutting tofu. His head rolled down from the platform.

“Bang!” In the blink of an eye, a great amount of dark energy rushed out from his severed neck.

This vast energy rushed for the vast expanse beyond the precipice like a tidal wave. This particular dark cultivator was extremely powerful, thus this energy was as majestic as a sea. It tore apart the void and traveled with an unstoppable momentum.

This process continued on with the energy gushing out of his neck for a long time. Eventually, all the energy was gone and the scene became calm again.

At this time, people found that the energy formed a bridge from the precipice to the depths of the expanse.

“Clack!” At this moment, the unbelievable happened. The head that rolled on the ground suddenly cracked and a tiny person walked out from inside.

This tiny person looked exactly like the dark cultivator from earlier. However, he didn’t have a physical body as he was only an accumulation of dark energy.

Li Shuangyan asked: “Is that his true fate?”

“No, it is a devil soul, completely different from our true fate.” Li

Qiye shook his head gently.

Everyone held their breaths while watching the tiny person walking out of the skull in astonishment.

The tiny person quickly walked towards the bridge made out of evil energy that stretched into the vast expanse.

At this split second, another shadow suddenly lunged forward. It was a cultivator whose withered blood energy clearly told his old age.

This old man rushed to the long bridge in an attempt to follow the devil soul into the other world.

“Ahh...” However, when he stepped onto the bridge, his feet didn’t make contact as one would expect. The bridge did not accept his body, so he instantly fell into the abyss below.

Cultivators could fly, but not in this vast expanse. Once one fell, it was a fate of death without a grave.

People gasped with shocked expressions after seeing this scene. Perhaps a few of them had the same idea as him and wanted to follow the dark cultivator into the other world. However, it looked like this train of thought didn’t lead to a destination.

The tiny person disappeared into the vast expanse after walking along the bridge. After some time, this energy bridge disappeared

as well.

“Just what is it over there?” Someone murmured.

In fact, all were curious and wanted to know about the other side. Many stood there and gazed at it for a very long time. It was still nothing but void without any changes.

Eventually, the crowd slowly dispersed because they understood no answer would come out of this.

“Is he at the other world now?” Chen Baojiao spoke with concern for the dark cultivator.

“Who knows, this is a trip with no answer.” Li Qiye sighed: “Because after entering the platform, there is no turning back. No one has heard of a dark cultivator being able to return either.”

Chen Baojiao became absent-minded and murmured: “Leaving to never be heard from again.”

Going to the platform was similar to going missing. This was a journey with no return. No one knew if it was a successful trip or not. The people on this side would never find out.

“Dark cultivators already have eternal life, why must they go to that other world?” Li Shuangyan was skeptical: “They should know that it is a road of no return.”

“They know full well about the journey they are embarking on.” Li Qiye glanced at the vast expanse: “As they have said before, this is their will and their fate! No matter how much time it takes, one day, they will step onto this path. This is something all dark cultivators will have to face.”

“The dark cultivators’ Evil Slaying Platform and the imperial soldiers’ Expedition Path.” Mei Suyao joined in: “These are unanswered mysteries across the ages. No one knows what lies beyond these paths.”

“Outside of dark cultivators, can others not go to the other side? Have Immortal Emperors tried it?” Li Shuangyan curiously asked.

Mei Suyao slightly opened her mouth, wanting to answer, but she stopped herself since she didn’t know how to put it.

Li Qiye glanced at her and said: “It’s fine to say it. After becoming an emperor, Immortal Emperor [Nu Zhan](#) had tried it before. He started from the platform and tried to forcefully reach the other side through the expanse.”

“Immortal Emperor Nu Zhan.” The girls were shocked to hear this. All of them looked at Mei Suyao while Chen Baojiao exclaimed: “Legend states that he had a grand completion Furious Immortal Tyrannical Physique!”

An Immortal Emperor was already invincible enough, but one with a grand completion Immortal Physique was even more

incredible. Immortal Emperor Nu Zhan was the second emperor from the Eternal River School. He was even more powerful and frightening compared to their progenitor, Immortal Emperor Xiu Shui.

“That’s right.” Mei Suyao gently sighed and admitted: “My sect has records of this. After becoming an emperor, he had tried this before.”

“What was the result?” The quiet Bai Jianzhen was drawn in as well: “Is there really another world?”

“I don’t know the exact details because there are several different theories. The records themselves aren’t very clear. As juniors, we have no way of researching for verification.” Mei Suyao spoke softly.

“An Immortal Emperor failing is not really a shameful thing. It is just that the Eternal River elders don’t want to talk about it. Otherwise, people will be disappointed thinking that an Immortal Emperor is not unstoppable. A layer of shadows has been cast over their might from this event.” Li Qiye said dismissively.

“Immortal Emperor Nu Zhan failed as well?” The girls were horrified by this. In everyone’s opinion, Immortal Emperors were unstoppable! Not to mention one with a grand completion Immortal Physique!

“That’s a possibility.” Mei Suyao spoke unwillingly: “After Forefather Nu Zhan came back, he never brought up this matter

with anyone. However, the elders from the sect speculated from his words that he couldn't do it, so they don't wish to talk about it either."

The others could understand why the Eternal River School was hesitant about this matter. An Immortal Emperor should be a symbol of invincibility. If even they have failed, it would besmirch their lifelong prestige.

Nu Zhan = Furious War.

Chapter 1086: Imperial Border

While the girls were surprised, Bai Jianzhen was in such awe that she blurted: “Immortal Emperor Nu Zhan, he had a grand completion Immortal Physique too...”

The nine worlds have a particular belief. When a grand completion Immortal Physique user was at their peak, they could assail Immortal Emperors. Immortal Emperor Nu Zhan was not only at the top already, he ended up becoming an emperor as well!

Just think about it, his power must have been unfathomable.

“Are there existences in this world that are even more powerful than Immortal Emperors?” Li Shuangyan murmured in a daze.

Li Qiye slightly shook his head and answered: “In the nine worlds, there might not be something stronger than an Immortal Emperor. In a one-on-one fight, Immortal Emperors have always been invincible. The fact that Immortal Emperor Nu Zhan couldn’t get to the other side doesn’t necessarily mean that he wasn’t strong enough.”

“Then for what reason did he fail?” Chen Baojiao quickly asked. Anyone would be curious about a secret like this.

Even Mei Suyao looked over at Li Qiye. Even though she was the main successor of the Eternal River School, not even its ancestors knew this matter very well, let alone its disciples. Immortal Emperor Nu Zhan rarely talked about this matter. At best, he only

left behind a few words. The majority was all speculated by the future generations.

Mei Suyao realized that Li Qiye knew a lot more, even things that weren't privy to her ancestors.

Li Shuangyan looked at her Young Noble and couldn't help but ask: "What is the reason for the emperor's failure in crossing to the other side?"

In her mind, there was nothing that her Young Noble didn't know or couldn't do. If he didn't know, then others definitely wouldn't know.

"Because there were too many uncertainties on the other side." Li Qiye didn't want to talk about this matter. Back then, Immortal Emperor Nu Zhan had specifically asked him about this before, but he wasn't willing to disclose its secrets unless he was capable of solving this mystery.

"Okay, let's go to the Imperial Border. I'll take you guys to have a look at a certain place, it will definitely defy your common sense." Li Qiye smiled.

Having heard this, the girls became happy and excited even. They came with their Young Noble for the experience and to broaden their horizons.

Even the otherworldly Mei Suyao felt quite happy. She didn't

come with Li Qiye for treasures or merit laws. She wanted to see a world unreachable and unviewable by others.

Li Qiye and the girls began to head for the Imperial Border at an extremely fast speed.

The Imperial Border was the other half of the Lesser Imperial Devil World. The Imperial Border and the Devil World each took half of the entire land.

No one knew why this lesser world was divided into two regions like this. What was even stranger was that imperial soldiers and dark cultivators existed together in this place, but they never mingled.

A boundary separated the two worlds. Even when the two different existences were close to each other right beside the boundary, it was a distance between heaven and earth.

The Imperial Border gave a completely different feeling than the Devil World. The Devil World was indeed majestic with great sceneries, but it was engulfed in dark energy. This, in turn, resulted in an oppressive atmosphere.

The Imperial Border was different. Anyone who stepped inside would instantly feel a sense of heroism and ambition.

Regardless of whether one was a big shot or a minor character, once inside the Imperial Border, they would instantly feel a free

and unrestrained momentum amidst this vast world.

“Imperial momentum...” Mei Suyao couldn’t help but murmur after sensing this atmosphere and feeling an ambition rising in her heart.

The imperial momentum was the foundation of the Imperial Border. It was the same as the evil energy in the Devil World and the Buddhist affinity in the plateau.

Because of this atmosphere or maybe the border itself, everyone would think that this scenic area was magnificent. Each peak and river gave off a royal and righteous aura.

The Devil World had dark cultivators and the Imperial Border had imperial “weapons”. “Weapon” here was not referring to an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure or something of that sort but rather the [troops of the border](#)!

Both dark cultivators and imperial soldiers had a few similarities. The first was that soldiers didn’t have blood energy and had eternal life as well. The second was that they didn’t care for outsiders either.

However, dark cultivators were easier to provoke because at the Imperial Border, messing with one imperial soldier was the same as messing with an entire nation. Any powerful cultivator would still be trampled to bits under a great army.

“Kill!” The screams of war resounded on a plain. Two armies launched a great attack on each other. In the blink of an eye, the armies collided and an earth-shattering battle ensued.

This was a war between two empires of the border, causing the world to tremble.

In the face of such a battle, powerful cultivators didn't dare to come close. The powerful imperial momentum and fierce bloodthirst made them turn pale.

The majority of imperial soldiers wore armor. They didn't have blood energy but rather a powerful imperial momentum instead. Even a little footman would have quite a powerful momentum.

As for the generals, they were much more extraordinary. Their momentum was as powerful as a god's.

“Rumble!” The two armies raged on in this ruthless battle. However, imperial soldiers couldn't die. A very strange scene appeared. After imperial soldiers defeated their enemies, they would instantly absorb their imperial momentum. At that point, the losing victim's momentum level would reach an all-time low.

After doing so, the victors would let go and instantly attack someone else while shouting: “Kill!”

The losing side eventually retreated. They didn't abandon their comrades who had been sucked dry of their imperial momentum

and instead carried them along to flee.

The victorious side didn't give chase. They headed for a different location with a mine.

After seeing this, many people learned quite a few things. A battle between imperial soldiers was completely different from that of cultivators. Moreover, it looked like imperial soldiers were quite united!

In fact, the wars between empires here were all like this. They happened quite often as competitions for the mines.

Chen Baojiao saw the losing side retreat and asked: "Do imperial soldiers want to absorb their enemies' momentum to become stronger?"

"That's one of the methods. Outside of absorbing momentum, the other is excavating the mines." Li Qiye explained: "Regal Gold is a very magical type of gold in these mines. Outside of increasing their momentum, it has other important uses as well."

"Such as?" Li Shuangyan asked further.

Li Qiye watched the victorious side rush into the mine and didn't answer. Mei Suyao had to answer instead: "For the Expedition Path. If the soldiers want to go there, they have to use Regal Gold. Something that is different about dark cultivators and imperial soldiers is that dark cultivators are solitary beings. For example,

when boarding the platform, they will not form teams. This is not the case for imperial soldiers. If they wanted to embark on the Expedition Path, their entire empire would do so. All of the soldiers would follow their imperial monarch, so they require a huge amount of Regal Gold.”

At this point, the victorious side had entered the mine shaft. This mine could be described as spectacular. From the ground to the area where the veins were located, a mighty imperial momentum could be found surging to the sky like a spring. The unsuspecting would think that it was spewing out pure gold.

“Can we dig up Regal Gold as well?” Chen Baojiao asked curiously.

“Just watch and find out.” Li Qiye smilingly responded.

At this time, a cultivator had watched the whole event play out for the first time in their life. He noticed that the entire army was inside and that there was no one guarding the entrance, so he sneaked in, wishing to excavate some Regal Gold as well.

He jumped to a vein inside the mine. What came next was a burst of screams. Everyone saw this cultivator being pushed out into the sky by the gushing momentum. He was instantly torn into pieces and created a bloody downpour.

After seeing this, the other cultivators who also wanted to get closer to the mine lost their courage and quickly retreated far away.

“Let’s go. Even though Regal Gold is essential to imperial soldiers, no one has found any uses of this material for cultivators, at least for now.” Li Qiye smiled and turned away.

The girls followed him as they continued on. They saw a huge citadel along the way. It was no lesser than a great city back in the Mortal Emperor World.

This sentence won’t make as much sense in English. The word 兵 has the following definitions: soldiers; a force; an army; weapons; arms; military; warlike. In ED, it is often translated to weapons, which is why this paragraph is necessary. I knew they were soldiers from the start due to the context.

Chapter 1087: Lost Era

The grand imperial momentum from the citadel gave an incomparable feeling of stateliness, the home of an emperor.

The citadel was closed and no one could enter. There were no signs of patrolling soldiers on the city walls either. The entire citadel was quiet, giving off the feeling that it was a city of the dead.

“Each kingdom will have a citadel, the gathering place of all their imperial soldiers.” Li Qiye glanced at the huge citadel from the distance and explained: “When imperial soldiers aren’t excavating or deployed, they will basically all be asleep.”

“Can an outsider enter such a citadel?” Li Shuangyan asked.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “In theory, outsiders can’t enter, but of course there are always exceptions. And there is only one method of entry — a direct assault.”

“Fighting against the entire kingdom!” Li Shuangyan understood the implications of fighting against an entire kingdom by attacking their city.

“It seems like the Space Trample Mountain is strong enough. Jikong Wudi actually barged into a royal palace and took a cauldron from there.” Chen Baojiao mentioned an exciting event that recently happened.

“They only dared to pick a minor kingdom. They wouldn’t dare to do so against a real empire with just Venerable Ninesword. It is simply impossible.” Li Qiye gently shook his head.

“How many kingdoms are there in the Imperial Border?” Li Shuangyan asked.

Li Qiye stared towards the horizon and replied: “Quite a few lesser kingdoms. However, in the older ages, there were more imperial soldiers compared to dark cultivators, even more than the monks at the plateau.”

He paused for a moment: “After millions of years, many kingdoms have embarked on the Expedition Path. Even though there are still many lesser kingdoms, there are not more than three or four empires left.”

With that, Li Qiye didn’t say anything else and continued forward. The girls followed him to a new location, an ordinary looking valley.

He took out the map drawn by Blazing Devil and did some calculations before confirming: “This is the place.”

Mei Suyao asked: “Isn’t Blazing Devil a dark cultivator? Why was he born at the Imperial Border?”

Li Qiye responded: “I am not looking for his location of birth but

a vein similar to that place.”

With that, he smiled at the girls and said: “Ladies, is everyone ready? What you will face is an unbelievable world, a lost civilization.”

“A lost civilization!” Mei Suyao was shocked after hearing this since she knew more than the others. When Li Qiye said the words “lost civilization”, she vaguely thought about a few things because she had read records of an extremely ancient era before.

Li Qiye took out the Insect Pipe and inserted it on top of a special location. With his motion, the countless little pieces on the pipe began to rotate.

“Let’s move a little further away.” He pulled the group back to a certain distance before stopping.

“Buzz!” The unbelievable happened. Earlier, the pipe was only a tiny item, but its little parts were continuously changing and building upon itself at this moment with extreme speed.

After a short amount of time, a fortress was erected in the sky from countless intricate parts. From the placing of the pipe to the creation of the city, this was truly a shocking and mysterious spectacle.

This fortress was supported by the tiny pipe on the ground so it seemed like a flying fortress.

“We need to go now or we’ll miss the chance.” Li Qiye took out the Mechanical World Vessel from Vedas Vajra. With its activation came a rumbling noise.

This small item also assembled itself into a huge ship with many different metals coming together in a very strange manner.

The group entered this vessel and, under Li Qiye’s control, it instantly flew into the fortress in the sky. There was a field hovering on top of the fortress where Li Qiye parked the vessel.

“Hum—” In the blink of an eye, the fortress instantly became tiny again and took the bronze vessel with it. It turned back into a small pipe and drilled deep into the ground.

At this moment, Li Qiye flew the vessel along. They were traveling inside an incredible world.

Here were countless huge parts with spinning gears and gigantic pendulum clocks swinging back and forth.

They had entered a metallic world as if they were inside a machine with countless wheels, gossamers, and moving iron teeth. The girls were instantly stunned. Despite their knowledge, all of them were still astounded. They didn’t know what world they were entering.

After a while, Li Qiye finally flew the vessel out of this area

towards a blue sky.

The ship eventually landed on the ground. Li Qiye jumped out first and took a deep breath: “It really is here.”

The girls disembarked one after another. They were still quite shaken since this was an entirely new experience. A bit later, they calmed down and looked up at the blue sky. Strangely, it was different from the sky of the nine worlds.

From a glance from afar, one would see the moon hanging in the sky. However, this moon was split in half. The sun was there as well, but something had penetrated it, leaving a huge hole in the middle.

The girls withdrew their gazes and noticed that they were standing in a desert. They had been through deserts before, so they felt that this desert was different somehow. There was a scorching feeling as if this place used to be a rich and verdant land, but later on, a terrifying power had incinerated it, leaving behind a desert.

“Just what is this place?” The quiet Bai Jianzhen stated her bewilderment.

Li Qiye flatly replied: “An ancient lost civilization with no records in the modern age.” His eyes swept through a faraway place and became quite profound.

“Before the Legendary Era.” Mei Suyao murmured. This was an

era that existed only in myths without any real records.

“This is unbelievable, the legend is real.” Mei Suyao was shaken. She was now standing on the ground of an actual lost civilization.

“Perhaps even older.” Li Qiye softly spoke: “Who knows how many eras have gone by amidst the river of time? Legendary Era, Desolate Era, Desolate Expansion Era, Ancient Ming Era, Emperors Era...”

“Right.” Mei Suyao added: “Some ancient people speculated that there are eras much older than the Legendary Era.”

The other girls were surprised too. In the present times, the oldest traceable era was the Desolate Era. Moreover, there weren't that many records of it. The Legendary Era only existed in speculations.

If there were even more eras before the Legendary Era, then it would be quite unimaginable.

“There are too many things purposely hidden from the world across the long eons.” Li Qiye lightly commented: “If we were to divide the river of time, then in fact, from the Desolate Era till now, it can only be counted as one era.”

“Why?” Bai Jianzhen was quite inquisitive at this moment.

“Development.” Li Qiye looked at her and answered: “Why did

the Legendary Era disappear? Why were cultivators during the Desolate Era so weak? From the barren Desolate Era to the rising Desolate Expansion Era to the prosperous Emperors Era, this is a process of development!”

“What happens after the development process?” Mei Suyao’s heart skipped a beat. She knew a little about this, especially after Li Qiye let her see some of his past.

“War!” Li Qiye’s expression sank. He didn’t say anything else and continued forward with the girls.

“This is...” They didn’t get too far before Chen Baojiao felt that she stepped on something. She dug it up but she found that this item buried in the sand was much bigger than expected. The other girls came to help her.

After a while, Mei Suyao finally excavated the item underground. It was a huge iron man that looked just like a god of war.

Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao both exclaimed after seeing this iron man: “The Mortal Monarch!”

Chapter 1088: Metal Corpses

The girls dug out this corpse. To be exact, it was a corpse made out of metal. It was very similar to the Mortal Monarch who had an iron-cast body. Each part of the body was made from exquisite parts arranged in a truly breathtaking manner.

However, there was one difference between this metal corpse and the monarch. The monarch had a human head with flesh and blood while the head of this corpse was made from metal. Its skull was even more meticulous and awe-inspiring. It was simply the epitome of craftsmanship.

No cultivators could create such an exquisite skull. Furthermore, this corpse was much bigger than the Mortal Monarch. If the monarch was a growing boy, then this corpse was a mature adult.

The girls glanced at each other after fully digging out this metal corpse. They had seen the monarch before and felt that his body was incredible. Some thought that he was the only one in this world with such a unique constitution. However, they managed to find a body so incredibly similar to his in this lost civilization.

“There are more down there.” Bai Jianzhen noticed that there were even more corpses underground and got started right away.

They were experts who could move mountains and flip oceans. In the blink of an eye, these metal corpses were all excavated. There were dozens of them, not just one.

The girls were perplexed and ended up staring at Li Qiye. During this whole process, Li Qiye only stood there and watched without being surprised at all; it was as if everything was within his expectations.

Li Shuangyan had to ask while looking at the corpses: “Is the Mortal Monarch related to this lost civilization?”

Li Qiye looked at the corpses. After a while, he looked away while answering: “Maybe, but one can argue otherwise as well.”

“What do you mean by that?” The knowledgeable Mei Suyao found the answer too cryptic.

Li Qiye glanced into the far distance and said: “In a sense, the Mortal Monarch was born in this era. However, he also has nothing to do with this era.”

“He has lived from this lost civilization all the way until now?” This was the most shocking thing the girls had heard yet.

Li Qiye gently shook his head and smiled: “It is impossible to live for that long with regular means. At a young age, the Mortal Monarch was imprisoned in the darkness and banished for an eternity. Even so, when he saw the sunlight again, he was on the brink of death.”

Li Qiye left out the tales afterward. When he found the Mortal Monarch back then, the monarch was already halfway to hell. Li

Qiye used extremely heaven-defying means to save him. Because of this, the monarch had a humanoid head.

“Just what is this lost civilization?” Mei Suyao was very curious about this mythical era.

Li Qiye said: “Who knows? The Mortal Monarch doesn’t either because he doesn’t have any memories of it.”

Mei Suyao was about to say something else, but she refrained from doing so. She knew that even if the Mortal Monarch didn’t know, Li Qiye certainly did.

“Okay, ladies, we have to keep going. We probably still have a long way to go.” He smiled at the group.

They continued on the road. It seemed like Li Qiye knew where he was going since he was only going straight. From the beginning, the girls thought that this place was only a desert, but they soon found out that this wasn’t the case.

Not long after, they saw a huge citadel in this vast desert world, a citadel made out of metal.

Judging by its appearance, it was very similar to the fortress that the Insect Pipe transformed into. Who knows what kind of metals made up this great citadel. In terms of construction, it resembled an iron man, as it was made from countless tiny pieces.

From an architectural perspective, this incredible citadel should be towering all the way into the sky. However, it was collapsed on top of the golden sand. Looking around, one would find broken parts scattered everywhere.

Chen Baojiao carefully looked at it and murmured: “It was burned down.”

From the crumbling ruins, this citadel must have been incinerated by an extremely ferocious fire of an unimaginable scale.

“Not just ordinary flames, it must at least be of the heavenly flame level.” Mei Suyao noticed some clues.

Li Qiye only gave it a glance and didn’t say anything. He led the girls onward.

The even more astonishing matter came after as they went further into this land. They saw an iron man, an extremely gigantic one of an unbelievable height. He was as big as a mountain with billions of exquisite parts placed together.

Also, there wasn’t just one gigantic iron man, there were several hundred! This scene gave the feeling that one was entering a forest of metal, resulting in an indescribable sensation.

The majority of these iron men were destroyed. Some were split into two, others had their chests penetrated. Some were torn into

little pieces, but of course, there were still some completely intact...

Regardless of their form, none of them were alive. They did not fall down on the ground due to supporting their bodies with mighty divine swords.

Without a doubt, they had experienced a terrible war while they were still alive. There was even a chance that this once-prosperous land was broken into little pieces and became submerged in sand later on.

“Just what exactly are these iron men?” Chen Baojiao spoke in awe.

“They fought to the very last moment! I’m afraid when they fell, their world was destroyed as well.” Bai Jianzhen was visually moved as well.

From the situation ahead, one could imagine the horrifying calamity that fell upon their era. Every single existence in this world stood up and fought to the very end. Alas, their valiant efforts still couldn’t save their world.

Li Qiye looked at one of the giants and slowly stated: “They’re extremely powerful. In the present day, they would still be at the level of God-Monarchs or Godkings.”

The group kept on going. Along the way, the girls saw even more

ruins of citadels buried in the sand as well as fallen metal giants. Many of them were completely broken.

The biggest iron man they saw was half buried underground. The parts that could be seen spanned for thousands of miles. From this, it was easy to imagine just how large it was when it was still alive.

“If placed in the present, it would be extremely close to an Immortal Emperor, if not already at that level. An Emperor Assailant at the very least.” Li Qiye gave a quick glance and made his assessment.

After hearing this, the girls were shocked once again. Li Shuangyan was astounded: “Just what kind of era was this!”

“An era that reached the peak of prosperity from the accumulation of millions and millions of years. There were too many experts to count.” Li Qiye said dismissively: “An era completely different from ours. The path they walked is completely different from us cultivators.”

“In the end, they were still destroyed.” Mei Suyao muttered: “What are they really? Just what kind of enemies did they face for an entire world to be destroyed like this?”

“Did they meet a formidable enemy like an Immortal Emperor?” Bai Jianzhen had to ask.

“Immortal Emperor?” Li Qiye chuckled and shook his head: “If

my guess is correct, their world had existences as powerful as Immortal Emperors, and not just one. However, even beings of this level couldn't save this world."

The girls felt breathless after hearing Li Qiye. Even a confident person like Mei Suyao felt quite suffocated.

In their minds, Immortal Emperors were invincible. This was the belief that everyone held. But now, even a world protected by Immortal Emperors was still annihilated in the end!

"Aren't emperors supposed to be the strongest?" It was Chen Baojiao's turn to ask: "There are existences even stronger than them?"

"There is no doubt that Immortal Emperors are the strongest." Li Qiye flatly said: "However, this is limited to the world of the living, the world of sentient beings."

"Then you mean there is a world of the dead?" Li Shuangyan followed the logic of his response.

"World of the dead?" Li Qiye shook his head: "I don't know if there is a world of the dead or not. Sometimes, the things Immortal Emperors have to face aren't necessarily people. To be more specific, they might not be living beings and could be something else entirely."

"Like what?" Bai Jianzhen couldn't help but ask: "Like the

existence that destroyed this world?”

Li Qiye didn't answer directly. He looked up at the distant sky and eventually spoke: “One day, you all will understand. Of course, this is predicated on you all being strong enough to see that day.” Li Qiye turned back and stared at the girls: “Thus, you all still have a long way to go. When you actually become an existence like an Immortal Emperor in the future... that is only the beginning.”

The girls felt a pressure right away from realizing how weak they were. Even though very few could stop them among the younger generation, they felt that they were quite trivial in the grand scheme of things.

Chapter 1089: Tiny Old Man

The excursion continued. Outside of ruins and metallic corpses, the rest was all yellow sand.

There were no rocky elevations in this world, let alone a scene of verdant hills and green water. Not to mention finding life in such a world, there were no traces of little blades of grass!

It was only silence and nothingness. The only thing that acted as a reminder of their existence was the occasional breeze slowly blowing by accompanied with hot sand. If it wasn't for this, they would be wondering if they were dead already.

This world was oppressive to a suffocating level. The girls had experienced harsh training before; they had been to even more dangerous locations than this.

For cultivators, crossing a desert was truly too ordinary. But today, they felt quite oppressed. Despite their firm dao hearts, walking through this world of golden sand left them in a weakened state.

In the past, no matter how dangerous their training locations were, there was hope that after leaving, they would come to see the wonderful nine worlds.

However, walking in this golden world gave them the feeling that there was no end, only more ruins and sand! The initial shock from seeing fallen iron men and ruins was gone after they continued

onward since they had grown numb to it.

They traveled quite far and eventually reached a place where there were only shattered ruins in sight.

This particular citadel was the largest that they had seen so far. It spanned boundlessly, as far as the eye could see. The sunlight always hit either the scattered parts on the ground or the collapsed walls due to their proliferation.

This metal citadel's sheer size exceeded everyone's imaginations. Perhaps even the largest city they had been to was not as big as this citadel.

Li Qiye glanced over this site with no end and murmured: "It should be this place."

Li Shuangyan asked: "Did we come here to look for something?"

He slowly answered with a focused look: "We are searching for an item in the legends, something that has never been seen before."

With that, he entered the ruins to search with the girls right behind him.

In fact, Li Qiye didn't really know what he was looking for because the records about this era had sunken into the river of time. He spent countless moons and flipped over all the ancient

sites in the nine heavens to finally understand a little bit about this world.

Traveling in this ruins gave the feeling of walking in a world of metal. Outside of the sand, there were little metallic parts everywhere.

After walking for a long time, they finally came to a place that slightly resembled a palace. Despite its broken state, one could still see how sacred and extravagant it used to be.

“It’s just ahead.” Li Qiye’s heart skipped a beat after seeing a high platform in front of him. This was exactly the same as what the ancient carving he had seen long ago depicted. He rushed forward with haste while the girls kept up.

After rushing up the platform, the first thing he saw was three green leaves.

Having been in this world for so long, this was their first time seeing the greenness of vegetation. This made them feel jubilated, as if they had come across an oasis in the dry desert. It was something that couldn’t be described with words.

The three leaves were growing on top of a withered tree. This tree was supposed to be quite large, but it was destroyed by something and only a three-foot-tall body remained. It was not overly thick and its cracked bark looked just like dragon scales. It was an extraordinary sight to behold.

However, such an incredible ancient tree was on the verge of death. The broken tree had withered. Even the three leaves hanging on its body were quite languished, as if they could fade away from existence at any moment.

What was even more shocking to the girls was that there was a person lying under the old tree. It was a tiny old man with a body only around the size of an adolescent boy.

His arms were quite long and seemed out of place compared to the rest of his body. His head was large as well, making people question whether his body could support it. His eyes were big even though they were closed.

His body had dried up with only his skin covering his bones. One couldn't see any signs of life coming from this old man. Who knows how long he had been dead for?

Li Shuangyan and the others were surprised to see this kind of corpse and exchanged glances with each other.

They wouldn't pay any mind if they saw this corpse in the outside world because it would be a very common occurrence — nothing shocking at all.

However, in a destroyed world of metal beings, it was astonishing to see a corpse so similar to a human.

Li Qiye pointed his finger at the old man's forehead. A very small

universal law traveled inside.

At this second, the old man suddenly opened his big eyes in a feeble manner. Even though it was only a small squint, one still felt that powerful glare within. Such a scene startled the girls.

“Someone has finally come.” The tiny old man spoke, but he was not speaking with his mouth. He was using his divine intent; this was a method of communication everyone could understand.

The dying old man didn't even have the strength to breathe. His eyes glanced over Li Qiye real fast as his divine intent spoke feebly: “I was wrong, I was wrong... I was the one who destroyed the entire Machine World...”

With that, the old man almost couldn't speak any further. He was definitely dead and only had one final breath. It was Li Qiye who prolonged this moment.

“Careful... careful... counterattack...” Eventually, the tiny man spent his last breath to say this. His eyes closed afterward as he parted from this world.

At this time, his right hand slowly loosened to reveal an item that he had been gripping the entire time. He finally revealed it for Li Qiye to see.

“Can we save him?” Mei Suyao asked. This old man definitely knew many things.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “Even if there were immortals in this world, they still wouldn’t be able to save him. He only persisted until now to say that one phrase.”

“Right, and by completely relying on this tree as well.” His eyes fell on the tree that the old man was leaning on.

He shifted his eyes to the item in the old man’s hand and reached out to take it.

It was not big and seemed to be made from ancient bronze. It looked a bit like a pocket watch that was assembled with many exquisite pieces in an indescribable manner. No one in this world could create such an item.

“What is that?” Bai Jianzhen asked. The old man was gripping this item the entire time. This made its unfathomable value apparent.

Li Qiye carefully looked at it, but there was suddenly an impact in his fate palace.

“Buzz!” Li Qiye opened his palace and something flew out from inside. It was the [Myriad Star Egg](#) that had always been in his thirteenth palace. It immediately went for the item in his hand, seemingly wanting to take it from Li Qiye.

He immediately grabbed the egg and slowly said: “Want this

treasure? Not so fast...”

The girls found this scene quite strange as well. They didn’t know the origin of the egg or why it wanted this item.

The egg was not happy with being held by Li Qiye. It shook quite violently as if it wanted to fly out from his suppression.

Li Qiye slowly said: “Don’t play with me, my temper is much worse than yours. I’m allowing you to be arrogant in my fate palace because you have some value to me. However, if you anger me, I’ll cook you!”

Eventually, the stone egg began to calm down. An existence like it knew that Li Qiye’s words were more than just a threat!

He glanced at the egg. Until now, the egg didn’t want anything, but it seemed to have a great desire for this item.

Li Qiye looked back at the treasure in his hand and asked: “You want this thing?” He had a general knowledge of this item. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have spent so much time in the Machine World.

The stone egg quaked once to convey its intent clearly.

The egg/stone from the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground.

Chapter 1090: Pinnacle Lifewater

Li Qiye looked at the treasure in his palm then back at the Myriad Star Egg: “It’s not like I can’t give this to you.”

Li Qiye had obtained many treasures without getting a single reaction from this egg. However, it had a particularly strong response to this item. This meant that this item had an extraordinary importance to the egg.

“However, there is no free lunch in this world.” Li Qiye smiled: “I know the value of this item so I can’t just give it out for no reason.”

After hearing this, the girls were quite astonished. Li Qiye would give imperial weapons to them as if they were mere cabbages. However, he held this item in such great esteem, signifying its great worth.

He continued on while looking at the egg: “If I give this treasure to you, you would first have to give me a good item of the same value in return. Second, I will be the boss from now on, everything will be up to me.”

The egg didn’t respond for a while. Eventually, it quaked to show that it agreed to Li Qiye’s proposal.

“Fine, for you then.” Li Qiye let go of the treasure.

The item floated up and instantly rushed for the egg. After

hearing a poof, contrary to everyone's expectations, there was no impact. The item looked as if it had fallen into water as it entered the egg.

At this time, the egg's shell seemed to ripple with something oozing out. Li Qiye turned serious and used his unrivaled speed to take out a treasure bottle.

A crystal clear liquid of an indescribable color dripped down from the egg. It held the blue of the sky as well as the yellow tint of gold along with the gorgeous shades of the mortal realm... This was a dreamy color that no one could accurately describe.

The girls also smelled a faint watery fragrance and had an incomparable reaction to it. The smell was so faint that it was almost undetectable. However, once it made its presence known, a pure lotus flower blossomed around Li Shuangyan's body. The petals of the flower slowly fanned out as she was drowned in a holy light. This light resembled flowing water washing every fiber of her being.

Chen Baojiao was greatly affected as well. An immortal spring full of life gushed out. This was the magical property of the Tyrannical Immortal Spring Physique. She was immersed in an ocean of life as her body was brimming with life force, making her unspeakably relaxed.

As for Bai Jianzhen, a sword hymn echoed across the nine heavens. One sword ray soared into the sky after another. Next, these heavenly swords emerged around her body. The entirety of the sword dao in this world was beneath her feet.

Mei Suyao had a tranquil feeling as immortal flowers descended from the sky. A transcendent portal opened above and illuminated her body. This made her even more otherworldly and refined. At this second, she gave off a feeling of ascension.

These strange phenomena left the girls shocked. They didn't channel any merit laws, yet these visions were emerging all the same.

Just smelling the fragrance of the immortal water bestowed them such great benefits. If they were to drink it, wouldn't this mean they could ascend and immediately become immortals?!

The Myriad Star Egg gave Li Qiye a fair amount of immortal water before flying back into his fate palace.

"What kind of water is this?" Chen Baojiao emotionally asked after Li Qiye put away the water.

Li Qiye answered slowly: "Pinnacle Lifewater..."

After hearing this, Mei Suyao loudly exclaimed in disbelief: "Pinnacle Lifewater! Don't people say that it doesn't exist?!"

The others didn't know about this water, but Mei Suyao did. However, she had only heard about it in legends and had never seen it before.

“It didn’t exist before, but it does now.” He slightly chuckled.

“What is this Pinnacle Lifewater?” Chen Baojiao asked with interest.

Mei Suyao explained: “An item of legends. The world has never heard of someone who has seen it, at least not in writings. Even though there have been rumors about its appearance or people who claimed to have obtained some, the rumors were fake or the water wasn’t the real deal.”

She paused for a bit before continuing: “It is said that Pinnacle Lifewater is a transformation of Myriad Star Water. One particular record states that one thousand drops of Myriad Star Water can turn into one drop of Pinnacle Lifewater. However, no one really knows the transformation process. Rumor has it that some Immortal Emperors tried to research it to no avail. Thus, Pinnacle Lifewater is the finest type of Myriad Star Water, it is truly supreme with no equals.”

Li Qiye nodded approvingly: “You are correct about that, it is indeed the finest type of Myriad Star Water. One would be hardpressed to find a more precious immortal water. Even real immortal water would have a hard time comparing to it. Outside of stealing the creation of this universe, this transformation also requires the power of time!”

Back then, the Myriad Star Egg sucked out all the Myriad Star Water, resulting in a huge reservoir within its body. Because of this, it was able to perform this conversion.

“This is actually a good thing. It is fortunate that the egg gave me Pinnacle Lifewater. Otherwise, things would be quite troublesome.” Li Qiye added.

“Troublesome? What kind of trouble?” Bai Jianzhen was surprised. It seemed that there was nothing in this world that could make things difficult for him.

“This old root.” Li Qiye slightly lifted his chin and looked at the tree that the tiny old man was leaning on.

This diverted all the girls’ attention to the broken tree. The truth was that prior to this, they didn’t really see what was magical about this old tree.

It was a broken tree with nothing special about it. Moreover, it was on the verge of dying with only three leaves left. No matter how one looked at it, it was not worthy of attention.

“What kind of tree is this?” After a careful observation, Mei Suyao failed to see through it despite hailing from a lineage with three emperors.

Li Qiye spoke while looking at the tree: “Myriad Age Tree, an existence of legends.”

“Myriad Age Tree... that, that isn’t possible!” After hearing this name, Mei Suyao, who had been through countless storms,

shouted out loud. She was even more shaken than when she heard about the Pinnacle Lifewater.

Li Qiye continued on: “He was seriously injured with only one breath remaining, so why was it possible for him to live on? It’s because the Myriad Age Tree was supporting him so that his last breath wouldn’t come until today. Unfortunately, this tree was grievously hurt back then as well and is now on the verge of death.”

The dazed Mei Suyao calmed down and murmured: “If there is something in this world that is capable of allowing him to live on for millions of years in that state, then the Myriad Age Tree would indeed be the only existence.”

“What is it?” Chen Baojiao asked.

Mei Suyao let out a wry smile and replied: “It is also a thing of legend, just like the Pinnacle Lifewater. You can also call it the Longevity Tree, the only item in this world comparable to the Longevity Grass. Nothing in this world can live longer than these two existences.”

“Longevity Grass... one of the legendary Nine Grand Heavenly Treasures!” Li Shuangyan almost jumped from astonishment.

She had heard Li Qiye talk about the Longevity Grass before.

“Yes, that’s it.” Mei Suyao went on: “In the legends, the

Longevity Grass can grant eternal life. The same goes for the Myriad Age Tree.”

“There is a big gap.” Li Qiye slightly shook his head: “If you can obtain the Longevity Grass and understand its true mysticisms, then there won’t be certain restraints like other types of immortality. By understanding its true secret of eternal life, its user will have real immortality! No matter what happens, they will not die unless they lose the grass.”

The girls took deep breaths after hearing this. Eternal life was the pursuit of everyone, including Immortal Emperors. However, no one had ever truly become immortal.

Mei Suyao asked: “Then what about the Myriad Age Tree?”

Li Qiye glanced at the broken tree and replied: “This tree can also grant immortality, but there is still a big gap between it and the Longevity Grass. With this tree, its user will still die from old age one day. Of course, that day is very far away. However, the Longevity Grass is different. Even if the heaven and earth are annihilated, its owner would still be able to live on.”

“Eternal life really exists in this world?” Bai Jianzhen asked since she wasn’t exposed to this question as often as the other girls.

“Who knows?” Li Qiye glanced towards the horizon and slowly uttered: “Everyone has a different definition of eternal life. For mortals, people like us who can live for several thousand years or even tens of thousands of years have eternal life. For cultivators

like us, existences who can live from one generation to another are also everlasting...”

“... As for beings who have lived for a very long time, immortality is being able to live until the heaven and earth collapse. And finally, for people who can live until the heaven and earth collapse, the ones who are able to survive even while myriad ages are annihilated, that is eternal life. No one truly knows what eternal life is.” With that, Li Qiye let out a quiet sigh.

Chapter 1091: Transplanting The Myriad Age Tree

The girls became absent-minded after hearing Li Qiye. Eternal life was too far away for them since they were still young and felt no pressure about growing older.

But as for cultivators with feeble blood energies, especially the invincible ones, eternal life became their only pursuit.

Li Qiye withdrew his gaze and said: “Okay, I want to save this Myriad Age Tree.”

Li Shuangyan looked at the broken tree and asked: “Is it still savable?”

“Without the Pinnacle Lifewater, it would definitely be troublesome, very troublesome and require many heaven-defying means.” Li Qiye smirked: “But with this water, it will be simple.”

There wasn't a need for Li Qiye's command, the girls buried the old man in the ruins and erected a nameless tombstone for him. They didn't know his name or his origin.

However, after the tombstone was erected, Li Qiye personally carved several words on it — Overlord of the Machine World.

“Overlord of the Machine World...” Mei Suyao murmured:

“What kind of existence was this?”

Despite being very well-informed, she had never heard of such a title.

“An existence that reigned over all things.” Li Qiye only said this, not willing to dwell more on the old man’s origin.

Back at the platform, Li Qiye opened his fate palace. The alchemy field and divine earth emerged. At this time, the Immortal Injury Peony, the Ancestor Ginseng, the Yang Vine... all of these immortal plants jumped down one after another.

“Mmm...” The Yang Vine took a whiff and looked at the broken old tree in shock: “What kind of immortal tree is this? Why is it so wondrous?”

“Definitely a longevity type.” The Ancestor Ginseng circled around the tree and declared his verdict.

“Myriad Age Tree.” Li Qiye answered: “I want to save it from death, so I require your assistance.”

The Alchemy Fowl shouted in disbelief: “Mommy! This is the ancestor of all divine grasses and immortal medicines, only the Longevity Grass is above it.”

“Damn! Finding an amazing item like this is the same as striking it rich.” The Reincarnation Heavenly Soulvine was salivating with

greed as well.

Bai Jianzhen was tongue-tied after seeing so many immortal medicines. This was too unbelievable for her. Even having just one immortal grass would be amazing for an imperial lineage, yet Li Qiye actually had so many. This was more than enough to make the whole world jealous.

Mei Suyao only gently sighed. She wouldn't be surprised nowadays regardless of what Li Qiye had in his possession.

“Okay, stop chatting. Let's do it.” Li Qiye commanded.

“It's impossible, it is running out of vitality since it was gravely wounded. Its assailant is of the emperor level or might even be the old heavens itself, this is simply incurable. If it was some other immortal medicine, it would have died already. It was only able to live till now because it is the Myriad Age Tree.” The Immortal Injury Peony carefully diagnosed the tree and made an assessment.

Li Qiye took out the Pinnacle Lifewater and stated: “With this, everything will be easy.”

“Wow, Pinnacle Lifewater, something only in legends!” The immortal medicines' saliva dripped to the ground after seeing this.

Li Qiye summoned the Myriad Heavenly Cauldron. The cauldron actually turned into flowing water and seeped into the ground. He then commanded: “Peony, check its wound. Ancestor Ginseng,

replenish its energy. Soulvine, stabilize it for me to avoid new injuries. Alchemy Fowl, go loosen the soil and open its roots...”

With his command, the immortal medicines quickly busied themselves without the slightest delay.

The girls weren’t versed in alchemy so they couldn’t help and had to watch on the sideline. However, they soon found something to do as well.

Saving the Myriad Age Tree wasn’t something that could be done in one or two days, so the idle girls decided to clean up this world.

They were all powerful experts capable of moving the land and sea. Such a matter was nothing more than exercise for them.

Meanwhile, in order to save the tree, Li Qiye exerted many heaven-defying means, including using a divine item like the Heaven Restoration Salve. He wanted to take it a step further as well by moving the tree into the alchemy field.

The entire process was quite difficult, it was a trial for his dao of alchemy. If one only had immortal medicines and didn’t have sufficient mastery of the alchemy dao, they wouldn’t be able to save the tree, let alone replant it.

In this lost world, the sun and moon were shattered, thus the concept of time was gone. Everything seemed to have stopped. In this place, there were only the busy shadows of Li Qiye’s group and

the girls.

Eventually, under Li Qiye's great methods and the help from the Ancestor Ginseng's group, they were finally successful in saving and replanting the Myriad Age Tree.

"We did it..." The medicines excitedly shouted after seeing the tree being successfully moved into the alchemy field.

They instantly forgot about their fatigue while looking at the three green leaves slowly stretching from the tree and heaved sighs of relief.

Prior to this, these leaves were wilted and seemed as if they would fall down at any moment. Now, their vitality was restored.

"Finally done." Li Qiye was relieved as well. This was a magnificent project. He could even guarantee that no one in history had been successful in saving a Myriad Age Tree!

"Okay, all of you have worked hard, so divide this ginseng root among yourselves." Li Qiye took out a Five Immortal Phoenix Ginseng Root, the very last one. Moreover, he gave each of them one drop of Pinnacle Lifewater as well.

"Wow, our boss is still the most generous. We've been wanting to try this thing for forever now." The medicines applauded.

They all had illustrious contributions in saving the tree, so it was

natural that Li Qiye rewarded them.

In the beginning, they were slightly unwilling to follow Li Qiye. But from today on, they would be quite eager to follow him. If they stayed back at their old place, they wouldn't have been able to try this supreme item.

They did pay a big price to save the tree, but with the ginseng root and the lifewater, they had enough nutrients to help them break through again in the future.

In the end, Li Qiye recalled his fate palaces and let out a long sigh while sitting on the high platform. At this moment, the girls were not here.

He knew that they had been keeping themselves busy, but he didn't pay much attention since his focus was completely on the tree. He was enjoying this moment of rest since the process of saving the tree was even more arduous than a great battle.

Li Qiye stood up and walked outside. Before he could leave the ruins, the girls came back.

"We are done as well." After seeing Li Qiye, Chen Baojiao couldn't hide her excitement.

"Done digging out everything?" Li Qiye smiled as well after seeing the girls' dusty and fatigued appearances.

“Just go and have a look.” She enthusiastically dragged him outside.

The others smiled as well with an inconceivable excitement as they followed the two.

After leaving the ruins, the scene ahead was truly shocking no matter who the spectator may be.

There were countless giant metal corpses standing on the golden sand as far as the eye could see. These corpses varied in shape and size. Some had divine swords while others had steel hammers; spears could be found as well...

Each of these iron men was extremely mighty and terrifying while standing there en masse. It was a great army of steel!

Although they were only corpses without an aura suppressing the heavens, spectators would still be shocked and tongue-tied by their sheer number.

“Truly incredible. Just how amazing was that era?” Li Qiye emotionally commented after seeing this.

“We have excavated all the metal corpses from the sand and fixed them to an extent. Sister Mei was putting a couple together before bringing them here.” Chen Baojiao spoke excitedly.

“I am merely replicating their forms with minor mends. This is

possible thanks to the huge number of corpses present. However, there are a few areas beyond my ability to repair, such as the injuries on their heads. That area is too complex.” Mei Suyao had a natural Immortal Bone so she had advantages not found in others. Nevertheless, it still took her a while to understand a few structures of these iron men.

Luckily, there were materials right here in the golden sand, allowing her to fix many of them. Just imagine, the prettiest beauty in the Mortal Emperor World doing such hard work as a mechanic — this was an unimaginably charming scene.

“I can see that.” Li Qiye looked at her and revealed a slight smirk.

“Don’t think about that, I was only curious about what kind of lifeforms they were.” Mei Suyao couldn’t help but blush. Ever since her childhood, this was her first time taking up the task of labor!

Chapter 1092: Nine Worlds' Chief Ambassador

In fact, Mei Suyao was not the only one who was curious about the life of these iron men, the other girls were quite interested as well.

The reserved Bai Jianzhen asked: “After cleaning up all of these metal bodies, we noticed that they don’t have flesh and blood, so what kind of lifeforms are they?”

There were many stones and metals that turned into demons among cultivators. However, stones and metals all had a particular characteristic after being enlightened by the dao — a physical body with flesh and blood.

This was because nothing else was more suitable to resonate with the grand dao while bearing its power than this medium.

For millions of years, the majority of cultivators and wise sages believed that the physical flesh was the best spiritual carrier!

But now, after digging out these iron men, the common sense of cultivators was challenged. Their entire body was made from exquisite metal pieces assembled together, not just a simple mold-cast.

It was more suitable to call this type of body a machine rather than man.

Li Qiye glanced at the giants and slowly spoke: “Who knows? Maybe this will forever be a mystery. With the death of the Machine World Overlord, it will be buried along the river of time.”

“Young Noble is saying that these iron men were only metal puppets created by this overlord?” Li Shuangyan was quite startled by this thought.

“No, that’s not the case here. They were neither machine nor puppets.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “They were all living existences with life. Even though their bodies were made in a different manner, they did have life, just like us with their own souls and sentience.” He pointed at his head at this point.

“Moreover, they weren’t created by the Machine World Overlord.” Li Qiye said: “This overlord couldn’t create life. This is a matter left to the villainous heavens alone. Despite not having the ability to do so, he indeed made some changes in this world during that era.”

“The Machine World Overlord was in charge?” Chen Baojiao was confused: “He seemed more like a human, but outside of him, the rest are all iron men. Just what is his background?”

Li Qiye didn’t answer the question and gazed into the distance. After a long time, he withdrew his gaze and murmured: “The Machine World Overlord is a legend in the river of time. Unfortunately, he still failed in the end.”

Even though the girls didn't know what happened in that distant era, they could imagine just how terrifying the calamity was back then. An entire era was destroyed and forsaken by history. This was an era with countless experts and existences similar to Immortal Emperors.

However, such an era was still annihilated by an unbelievably powerful and unknown enemy.

Eventually, Li Qiye looked at the forest of machines ahead and ordered: "Take all of these iron men along."

"All of them?" Even Mei Suyao was taken aback: "Are they still useful?"

"They are pretty much scrap metal at this moment." Li Qiye explained: "However, there are still many things worth testing despite my inability to create life."

"Perhaps one day, there will be a legion of metal beings!" Li Qiye revealed a mysterious smile.

The girls were jolted after hearing this. If this gigantic metal legion came out one day, they would be able to sweep through this world.

Eventually, the group brought along all the iron men and even many of the broken ones. Li Qiye hoped that these things would come in handy in the future.

While Li Qiye's group was inside the Machine World, a grand character came to the Lesser Imperial Devil World!

“The Nine Worlds' Chief Ambassador personally came...” Before this person arrived, someone had already delivered the news to the lesser world.

“The Nine Worlds' Chief Ambassador?” The younger generation didn't know the significance of this name, but the older cultivators were all shaken!

“The Chief Ambassador hasn't shown up for several generations, what is he here for this time?” A demon king pondered after receiving this message.

Nine Worlds' Chief Ambassador could be said to be an extremely arrogant title. Even an invincible Godking wouldn't dare to claim this title.

Having this title didn't mean that the person was powerful and unbeatable. This identity and title represented his status and position.

The Soaring Immortal Sect's Nine Worlds' Chief Ambassador — this meant that the person represented the soaring sect in the nine worlds. He was able to deal with all the sect's business in these

realms.

The Soaring Immortal Sect was illustrious with its five emperors. However, for millions of years, no one knew where the sect and its ancestral ground were located.

Some people even speculated that it was erected in a mysterious lesser world that no one knew about. Others believed that it was a floating continent, forever moving about the nine worlds.

The arrival of this sect would definitely be a grand matter. Ancestors of this sect normally wouldn't show up or come to the nine worlds. The majority of affairs were dealt with by the chief ambassador.

If, say, all nine of its ancestors personally came out, then an earth-shattering event would definitely ensue.

Someone murmured: "If the chief ambassador is coming himself, then it looks like the Soaring Immortal Sect will definitely be coming to the Mortal Emperor World."

Not everyone was happy to see this happen, especially the imperial lineages. If the soaring sect truly descended and personally interfered with the Mortal Emperor World's affairs, the imperial lineages would be quite displeased.

Everyone understood that without the soaring sect, the other imperial lineages ruled their own domains. However, once the sect

came down, it was a different story. Even these great imperial lineages would be affected.

“Here comes the chief ambassador...” The ambassador finally entered the lesser world at this time.

A divine carriage slowly arrived with an illuminating brilliance. It emitted an aura that made no one dare to approach. It was actually pulled by a huge White Tiger.

The tiger was the size of a mountain. Each of its steps would cause the earth to tremble. What was even more frightening was that its tyrannical aura resembled a primordial beast. A normal demon king wouldn't have an aura that could instill such a primal fear in other living beings.

“This White Tiger has some divine blood.” People shivered before its might.

To have a White Tiger with some divine blood as one's mount proved the person's great status. If the Soaring Immortal Sect Master himself arrived, just what kind of beast would he have?

The carriage was accompanied by many Soaring Immortal disciples. The person sitting in the carriage was a middle-aged man.

He wore a Confucian robe and had an elegant and scholarly appearance. However, he emitted the suffocating aura of a God-

Monarch.

He didn't put on airs and only quietly sat on the carriage with both hands naturally placed on his knees. This was the Nine Worlds' Chief Ambassador. This quiet posture alone made many experts tremble.

This was absolutely a real God-Monarch at an extremely high level; he wasn't someone a fake God-Monarch like the self-proclaimed Storm God could compare to.

"Greetings to the chief ambassador..." Many great powers in the lesser world all sent experts to greet the ambassador. Even a few imperial lineages did the same.

The chief ambassador, in his unreachable carriage up high, gently nodded and slowly spoke: "Gentlemen, you all have worked hard."

After everyone stood up straight, he began to speak: "I came here this time not to hunt treasures or out of curiosity, but to deal with a few matters."

These words made many people nervous because they could vaguely guess a few things.

The chief ambassador glanced over the experts here and stated: "I heard a junior named Li Qiye killed an emissary from my sect."

The hearts of everyone in the crowd skipped a beat. They had faintly guessed that this was the reason, but now, the ambassador had stated it publicly. Not many dared to respond at this moment.

An expert from a great power spoke: “Yes, that did happen.”

“Very well, since everyone is here, you all can send a message on my behalf.” The ambassador spoke: “Tell Li Qiye that I will give him five days to come and meet me. The Soaring Immortal Sect will determine who is right and who is wrong, then we will give him a fair answer. If not, tell him to prepare for the consequences.”

The experts here felt their scalps tingling. No one wanted to offend the Soaring Immortal Sect, but nowadays, not many wanted to offend Fiercest either.

They all knew that offending Fiercest Li Qiye would absolutely not end well. He was someone who liked to clean with blood. But at this moment, if they didn’t help the Soaring Immortal Sect, they would have lost a good opportunity once the sect actually descends.

“We, we will be sure to send the message.” Eventually, an expert from a great power complied.

Chapter 1093: Northbound

Li Qiye and the girls left the Machine World and came back to the Imperial Border.

Returning to the Imperial Border and actually stepping on ground made the girls let out sighs of relief; they felt as if they could see the sunlight once more.

Even though the imperial soldiers here were existences without life and flesh, this place at least had beautiful sceneries, unlike the Machine World. That place was like a solitary painting devoid of life. Anyone who stayed there would feel an atmosphere of death and a terrifying loneliness.

The group also heard about the chief ambassador after coming back.

“I’m afraid the Soaring Immortal Sect will not let this go!” Mei Suyao stated.

Li Qiye smiled and didn’t care about it, he only leisurely said: “Let him bark if he wants. A dog that truly knows how to bite won’t bark.”

“The soaring sect will definitely come down this generation.” Li Shuangyan felt a bit worried because Cleansing Incense and the Heavenly God Sect were mortal enemies, but the Heavenly God Sect might have the Soaring Immortal Sect as their backing. If the soaring sect was really going to descend, the situation would be

quite unfavorable for Cleansing Incense.

“It is only the Soaring Immortal Sect.” Li Qiye noticed her concern and smiled freely: “If the geezers in the sect can grow some eyes, then it will be a good thing. However, if they are blind, then they are simply seeking death.”

Mei Suyao smiled wryly after hearing this. In all of the nine worlds, Li Qiye might be the only one who dared to look down on the soaring sect like this. Other people, even imperial lineages, wouldn't easily declare war on the soaring sect.

He completely disregarded the five days grace period from the ambassador and led the girls towards the northern region of the Imperial Border.

Along the way, they met many imperial soldiers and a few kingdoms as well. These imperial soldiers ignored cultivators from the outside like Li Qiye's group.

Of course, if someone dared to provoke them, they would have to suffer the wrath of an entire kingdom. Because of this, ordinary people would never mess with these imperial soldiers. Plus, Regal Gold was not useful for them.

Naturally, within the vast land of the border, there were other minerals and metals besides Regal Gold. This made it so that cultivators and imperial soldiers didn't have too much conflict. Imperial soldiers could go on excavating their Regal Gold while cultivators dug their own ores.

In the border, powerful sects had fruitful harvests because they had the power for large-scale excavations. Nevertheless, it was not hopeless for vagrant cultivators and smaller sects.

The smart ones specialized in finding abandoned mines that the imperial soldiers had gone through or just picked up the rubbish left behind.

Calling these things rubbish was slightly exaggerated. Many of them received decent treasure metals and divine ores. This was because the imperial soldiers only went after Regal Gold and wouldn't take another glance at other items. Thus, this was quite a fortune for the cultivators picking up the "trash."

"A little vagabond obtained a Blood Transformation Stone." At the border, there was news of people getting treasures by the day.

No one found it strange when the bigger sects found things through excavation. After all, they had this power. In turn, it was much more exciting when the little sects or vagabonds found some treasures.

"This guy is quite clever. After finding the stone, he immediately fled the lesser world and the plateau." Someone felt like praising him.

"Picking up the Blood Transformation Stone is nothing. The White-cloud Shrine found a Soul Splitting Diamond. Unfortunately, they were too stupid and greedy and wanted to find

more treasures. A great power took notice and immediately killed their disciples and the diamond changed owners.”

The greedy ones were often punished for not choosing to run away after finding some treasures. They would often be destroyed by stronger cultivators or sects.

While many cultivators were searching for treasures, Li Qiye’s group continued north and entered a frozen world.

Snow and ice were all over the place. Snowflakes floated down from the vast expanse.

Even imperial soldiers were a rare sight this far up north. This location was not only extremely cold, it had been piled up with glaciers for millions of years. Excavating this place for treasures and Regal Gold was extremely difficult.

There was another reason why imperial soldiers didn’t come here, a reason unknown to outsiders.

“Where are we going now?” Chen Baojiao asked along the way.

“Kingdom of the Emperors!” Li Qiye walked on the snow and glanced at the snowy flakes drifting down while smilingly.

“Kingdom of the Emperors?” The girls were intrigued by this title. Li Shuangyan murmured: “What a domineering title!”

“Because it really is that domineering!” Li Qiye leisurely responded: “At the Imperial Border, it can be considered the number one empire. No other kingdom can compare to it!”

“Number one!” Mei Suyao was surprised: “I’ve never seen any writings about this kind of empire in my sect.”

“Because your Eternal River School doesn’t know about it.” Li Qiye smiled: “Right now, there are three strong empires known to others, but there is still one that has slumbered for millions of years. It is understandable that no one knows about it.”

Mei Suyao pondered for a bit before stating: “Our records claim that once an empire reaches a certain level of power, they would embark on the Expedition Path.”

“I understand what you are saying.” Li Qiye gently nodded: “Your sect is correct about this. However, there are always exceptions. The Kingdom of Emperors isn’t the number one power throughout the history of the Imperial Border, but it is definitely among the top five. However, all the other extremely strong empires have embarked on the expedition while they remained here until now.”

“Are they sealed in this frozen world?” Bai Jianzhen, who was very sparing with her words, still asked.

Li Qiye glanced at this place and murmured: “Yes, right inside this frozen world.”

They continued forward and eventually stopped before a vast snow-capped mountain. It towered into the sky with no end in sight. It was practically piercing through the firmament.

Li Qiye stood before a straight cliff covered in ice. The ice slowly melted and revealed an inexplicable formation array underground.

“Buzz!” Several universal laws flew out from Li Qiye’s forehead and activated the formation.

“Boom!” An imperial momentum gushed up into the sky like a geyser in a ferocious and endless manner.

Li Qiye was like a whale drinking water. In just a split second, he immediately swallowed all of the momentum, resulting in a humming sound.

Blinding imperial lights emanated from his back. At this second, his appearance didn’t change, but something about his aura definitely did.

He resembled an Imperial King that sat above the nine layers of the heavens. Behind him were countless existences floating and prostrating. Among them were unreachable deities, but regardless of their own prestige, all were on their knees.

Such an image was too shocking. It was even more moving than the aura of Heaven Relinquish.

The girls couldn't help but tremble while standing in front of Li Qiye who had transformed into an Imperial King. His powerful imperial momentum was too oppressive and gave others the urge to kneel.

At this time, he put on an imperial armor. It was the one given to him by the Eternal River ancestor, the same one that he had lost back then.

After adorning this outfit, only his eyes were visible, the rest of his body was wrapped in this imperial armor.

Not only was his aura heavenly and oppressive, others felt that he had become an emperor of war that had carried out expeditions all over the world!

'The War Emperor fighting against myriad realms, he alone is invincible!' This was the feeling that the girls got while looking at him right now.

"It looks like you were possessed by a War Emperor." Chen Baojiao commented.

"I'm not possessed." Li Qiye smiled with an invincible imperial momentum: "I am the War Emperor, the supreme grand ruler of the Kingdom of Emperors!"

With this declaration, his eyes turned serious. His entire being

became extremely profound. Anyone would shiver if they looked at Li Qiye right now.

“Clank—” The sound of something heavy moving came about. When Li Qiye made a mudra with his hands and spewed out an eternal mantra, the entire snowy mountain slowly collapsed. A huge gate appeared before them.

At this time, the girls found out that this huge mountain wasn't actually a mountain, it was a gigantic imperial citadel. However, it was sealed below the snow, so no one could see it fully.

He slowly walked into the city, his every step containing a particular rhythm. His steps slowly woke the entire city. The huge gate closed behind them to block off all prying eyes.

Chapter 1094: Kingdom Of Emperors

After entering the city, the girls were astonished by the scene before them. It was gigantic, capable of housing millions. There were no pavilions or houses here, the architecture was completely flat. Instead of calling it a city, it was more accurate to call it a massive martial arts stage.

This martial stage held imperial soldiers sitting down in a meditative pose with their eyes closed. Their weapons were placed on their knees during their slumber.

Each soldier emitted a terrifying imperial momentum like a flood dragon flying in the sky. This scene was more than just majestic and awe-inspiring. There were hundreds of thousands of imperial soldiers. All of them were masters with powerful auras.

What was more astounding than these soldiers was the huge pyramid in the center of the city. It was of an unbelievable scale and towered up high like a mountain.

Moreover, this pyramid was built upon many blocks of Regal Gold. Each was as big as a brick and had been through many refinements, making them quite pure. They emitted the golden luster unique to this type of metal.

A project of this size must have required millions and millions of golden blocks. This quantity was truly shocking and left people aghast.

The luster of this pyramid enveloped the entire city. The unique imperial momentum from the gold gently poured down and bathed all of the imperial soldiers.

It seemed that these meditating soldiers were receiving great benefits from just breathing in this atmosphere.

At this time, Li Qiye gestured for the girls not to follow him. He walked to the pyramid alone. As he crossed through the huge stage and passed by the soldiers, they remained asleep as if they didn't notice his arrival.

Eventually, he climbed to the top of the pyramid. At this time, the girls noticed that there was an imperial throne at the peak. Next to the throne was a meditating general whose goal was to protect it.

At the top of the pyramid, he could scan the entire city with a glance. This grand army, this invincible legion standing before him.

He slowly sat down on the throne in a leisurely manner. The imperial momentum coming from his body was still suffocating all the same, regardless of how powerful one might be.

As sat down, all the meditating soldiers suddenly opened their eyes; they had awakened from their slumber.

In this instant, the girls became nervous and found it difficult to

breathe as they trembled. As all the soldiers opened their eyes, the girls clearly felt something akin to an eternal giant waking up.

They immediately understood that this grand army shared the same mind, heartbeat, and rhythm. They must have incomparable unity!

The general guarding the throne knelt on the ground and held a treasure box in front of Li Qiye with both hands.

Li Qiye opened the box and slowly took out an item — an imperial sword.

“Clank.” The sword left its scabbard and exuded a boundless light all the way into the sky. This light engulfed Li Qiye, making him resemble a supreme God-Emperor among deities!

“Clang—” The boundless light intertwined to form an imperial seal, resulting in an old and mysterious totem emerging on top of Li Qiye’s head.

At this moment, he was a God-Emperor with a supreme totem from the kingdom of gods. He was capable of ordering the heavens with the universe in his grasp.

The kneeling general shouted with reverence: “Your Majesty is everlasting and invincible across the eons!”

“Boom!” The great army instantly got down on one knee as well.

Their motion was uniform and the earth shook from the force.

This army cried out: “Your Majesty is everlasting and invincible across the eons!” Their chant was like a tsunami that shattered the sky and shook the stars. Even a Godking would be scared out of their wits if they were standing here.

Li Qiye’s imperial momentum surged through the great army. He was imperious; both gods and devils would have to kneel before him right now.

The girls quivered as well. Even though they were quite far away, they still felt an urge to kneel before his invincible and threatening aura!

Li Qiye slowly spoke before the army: “Rise, my warriors.” At this time, he was the emperor of gods!

War Emperor — in a distant year, this was a title that deterred the entire Imperial Border! It was even more threatening than the title Heaven Relinquish back at the Devil World.

Li Qiye had stayed at the lesser world by himself in the past. He trained his imperial heart to become a soldier. His troops slowly grew stronger from the journey, from having just a few men to building a great empire!

The million-strong army stood up at the same time with a majestic momentum.

He spoke in a stately manner: “Zhan Qi, how is the harvest?”

“Your Majesty, our soldiers and the Regal Gold share the same rhythm. The resonance is quite great.” The defending general of the throne reported: “Our men are absolutely as strong as any other empire in the history of the Imperial Border! With your order, we can rush to the Expedition Path any time.”

This imperial general’s name was [Zhan Qi](#). He was the first soldier to follow Li Qiye, so Li Qiye gave him this name.

Li Qiye looked over the army and declared: “Time passes quickly; tens of millions of years have gone by in just one slumber. This is the time for us to begin the expedition. Our eternal wait, our success will depend on this.”

The army stood there silently with solemn demeanors while listening to Li Qiye. Outside of Li Qiye’s voice, there was no other sound.

Back then when he established the Kingdom of Emperors, he had promised that he would lead them to embark on the Expedition Path one day.

“However, the path is unfathomable. No one knows the challenges that await us ahead, so we need brave men to open the way.” Li Qiye stated: “The day when I find the right vanguard shall be the day we embark on our journey!”

He paused for a moment to examine the troops: “Even though we don’t know what is waiting for us, I trust that our heroic soldiers will be carrying a victorious banner!”

“Heroic soldiers of the Kingdom of Emperors shall wave the banner of victory!” The army shouted in unison, causing the earth to shake in fear. Under this momentum, masters would feel their legs shaking while weaker cultivators would be paralyzed by fear and fall to the ground.

“Zhan Qi, send a message to the three Imperial Kings. Tell them that I wish to have a discussion.” After the cry of the army, Li Qiye ordered: “I will meet them at the City of Emperors!”

Zhan Qi acknowledged the order and sent out some soldiers.

Li Qiye didn’t stay behind in the city. After giving the command, he took the girls out of the city.

Chen Baojiao curiously asked: “Where did the real War Emperor go?”

She thought that Li Qiye was doing the same thing he did back in the Devil World and was pretending to be the War Emperor. They didn’t know that Li Qiye was the real deal.

Li Qiye didn’t answer and only smiled while staring into the distance.

“Such a great army should be invincible. If this heroic legion showed up in the nine worlds, all lineages would quiver. Even the legion of an Immortal Emperor can’t be any better than this.” Mei Suyao gently sighed.

“That’s impossible. They will never be able to appear in the nine worlds.” Li Qiye gently shook his head and sighed as well.

If imperial soldiers could leave the lesser world, he would have brought this legion to the nine worlds already.

Bai Jianzhen asked: “Could it be that the only way out for imperial soldiers is the Expedition Path?”

“Perhaps. They can choose to stay as well. The path is full of uncertainty, who knows what awaits them?” Li Qiye spoke with a tinge of emotion.

If he could continue to wait, he wouldn’t let the army of the Kingdom of Emperors enter the Expedition Path. He would rather them continue to wait just like before.

However, since he knew a few secrets and that the Buddhist Funeral Plateau was planning to take action very soon, perhaps even in this generation, he had to send his army on their way.

There was another reason for this. It was because he must fight to the end in this generation, so this could be their final parting.

No matter the reason, his army must leave this place. Staying would only turn them into cannon-fodder for the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. It was better for them to take that gamble and enter the Expedition Path.

Li Shuangyan wondered out loud: “What in the world is here that keeps them from leaving?”

This was a question that had haunted countless minds for millions of years. It remained an unsolved mystery.

For example, it wasn't that the sacred monks of Spirit Mountain couldn't leave the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. However, they wouldn't leave after converting because ascension would become their new pursuit. Throughout history, there were invincible sacred monks who left the plateau for some reason or another, but the story always ended with their passing not long after leaving the plateau.

Zhan means war, Qi means seven.

Chapter 1095: Deterring The World

After returning to the Imperial Frontier, Li Qiye ignored the chief ambassador, much to the guy's chagrin.

For the ambassador, this was a kind of humiliation. His Soaring Immortal Sect was an unreachable existence. Sects with two or three emperors all had to give his sect some face and wouldn't dare to oppose them.

As the chief ambassador, even ancestors from these lineages would have to personally greet him. But now, this Li Qiye ignored to his order. How could he not become furious?

The five days deadline quickly passed. The ambassador immediately sent out a message to the great powers: "Within ten days, Li Qiye has to personally admit his sins in front of me! Otherwise, Cleansing Incense will pay in his stead. From then on, it shall no longer exist in the nine worlds!"

Such an order worried many big shots. It was not only a maneuver to settle the score with Li Qiye, but also to set an example by killing a chicken to warn the monkeys.

The soaring sect had not descended to the nine worlds for several generations, especially the period when the Black Dragon King was in charge. Back then, the soaring sect was even more distant with zero news coming out. Their arrival this time was met with silent contempt from some of the other imperial lineages.

If the soaring sect were to destroy a few lineages, then they would once more be able to establish their unquestionable prestige.

Some were secretly happy after hearing this command. A mortal feud between Li Qiye and the soaring sect was a good thing. In their eyes, they could benefit by just watching on the sidelines.

The ambassador's message was quickly spread with the help of many experts, even to the remote corners of the Imperial Border.

“Li, get your ass to the Nine Worlds' Chief Ambassador and commit suicide or else he'll destroy your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!” Outside of many experts spreading the message, some spoke arrogant words as well.

This type of harsh message was not said thoughtlessly. Some intentionally did so in this manner because they secretly want to see Fiercest fighting against the Soaring Immortal Sect.

If the soaring sect could destroy Li Qiye, this would eradicate the fear in many people's minds. With his death, the path of becoming the Immortal Emperor in the future would be much flatter.

If Li Qiye could take the soaring sect down with him, it would be even more exciting. Of course, this probability was practically negligible. Across history, many imperial lineages had turned into ashes with only the soaring sect remained standing.

“Li, accept your death or else the ambassador will destroy your sect!” In a short period of time, people started to scream across the Imperial Border. Moreover, the ones who were sending these strong messages tried not to show their faces and only fanned the flames.

In the face of this undercurrent that was about to surge, many sects chose to only observe on the sidelines. They weren’t willing to provoke Fiercest or the Soaring Immortal Sect.

“Destroy my Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?!” Li Qiye, who had been ignoring the ambassador, finally showed his face after hearing this message.

He flew to the sky with the ladies right behind him. A supreme imperial pathway emerged beneath his feet and stretched through the sky. This pathway emitted a peerless imperial momentum.

He was still wearing his imperial armor with its oppressive aura. The entire frontier was suppressed by his might as he walked forward step by step, causing the sun and moon to spin and the stars to be flipped upside down.

He was an untouchable Imperial King at this moment. Appalling visual phenomena emerged behind him. In these images were billions of existences worshipping him. He alone was the sovereign and ruler of the universe with the ability to control the Yin and Yang or sever the five elements!

Everyone in the border quivered under this supreme momentum.

Even experts at the Virtuous Paragon level trembled. Needless to say about the weaker ones, they felt an impulse to submit to this atmosphere.

“The Soaring Immortal Sect is nothing! In my world, you dare to utter about destroying my sect?!” The moment Li Qiye spoke, these images poured down an imperial might as if he had a great army accompanying him, as if he was the invincible War Emperor on an expedition!

These words were extremely overbearing. No one in this world would ever dare to say this to the soaring sect!

“Fiercest is indeed the fiercest. His overbearingness is still somehow justified. In the nine worlds, no one is more fierce than him.” Even those from the previous generation took deep breaths and commented after seeing Li Qiye’s grand stance.

Such words were directly humiliating the soaring sect. The ambassador acting as the sect’s representative naturally wouldn’t swallow this anger.

“Junior, don’t be so presumptuous!” As Li Qiye was walking in the sky, the ambassador slowly rose from an abandoned imperial city.

At this moment, his figure was gigantic. His head wore the heavens while his feet trampled the earth. Layers of suns appeared behind him alongside other visual phenomena. A blinding radiance emanated from his core so no one could look straight at him. These

lights were truly too dazzling.

He released all of his blood energy at this time.

“Boom!” A force as unrelenting as an undercurrent assaulting the deep reefs emerged. This energy slammed into the firmament as if it wished to take down the stars in the nine heavens. It supported the might of a God-Monarch and aimed to stop Li Qiye’s imperial momentum.

“Junior, kneel and accept your death, then I can forgive your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!” The ambassador’s God-Monarch aura was at its limit and was seemingly causing the sky to crack.

A real monarch was beyond self-proclaimed monarchs. Moreover, the ambassador was from a lineage with five emperors, thus he was far more frightening than an ordinary one. For example, the Night Scorpion God-Monarch was simply no match for him!

Due to Li Qiye’s public disdain for the soaring sect, the ambassador was absolutely going to subdue him. Whether Li Qiye was powerful or not no longer mattered, he must eliminate Li Qiye to show the nine worlds that the soaring sect’s prestige was not something to be trifled with.

One side was Fiercest while the other was the unreachable chief ambassador. Neither side would yield, causing the cultivators in the Imperial Border and even the entire lesser world to hold their breaths. Everyone knew that a storm was swiftly approaching.

“Only a God-Monarch, not worth mentioning.” With his imperial armor, Li Qiye loomed over myriad realms.

“Boom!” His boundless blood energy surged outside and instantly burst through the vault of the heavens.

“A Virtuous Paragon.” Someone murmured after seeing his energy that resembled a soaring true dragon.

In fact, him being a Virtuous Paragon wouldn’t shock anyone. The only thing was that people wanted to know which level of the paragon realm he was currently at.

“Buzz!” His fate palaces also rose one after another.

“One, two, three...” People started counting after seeing so many palaces: “Twelve! No, thirteen! Wait a minute, it isn’t twelve! There really are thirteen palaces!”

The counter thought that he was mistaken. Just counting to twelve already left people in disbelief, so when they saw the thirteenth palace, they assumed that their eyes were mistaken, but this wasn’t the case at all.

“Impossible...” Many screamed after counting several times and confirmed the amount.

“Impossible! Impossible! This can’t be!” Some were so aghast that they instantly dropped to the ground. They couldn’t believe the scene in front of them.

“Thirteen, thirteen palaces!” A few young geniuses with aspirations of competing for the Heaven’s Will squatted down on the ground. In this second, their eyes lost their focus and they didn’t know what they were saying any longer.

“Thirteen palaces can’t be real!” Even the invincible experts of the previous generation like Old Immortal from the Heaven Rampaging Mountain was shocked to see this. He had been through countless storms before, but his eyes were still dazzled at this moment.

“Legend states that Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng had twelve palaces. This was enough for him to remain undefeated throughout his life, but now, someone with thirteen palaces has appeared...” He murmured.

The progenitor of the Heaven Rampaging Mountain was an old servant of Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, so they knew a few of his secrets. For everyone in the sect, including Old Immortal, they took pride in the emperor’s twelve palaces. After all, there were quite a few emperors across history, but not many had twelve palaces.

But today, someone actually had thirteen! How could an existence like Old Immortal not be astounded?

A hiding God-Monarch muttered in astonishment: “Thirteen palaces... this simply breaks all pre-existing beliefs, a unique miracle across the eons. Compared to thirteen palaces, three saint aptitudes or whatever are all not worth mentioning.”

Everyone knew that twelve palaces was the limit for cultivators. Through the ages, not many people had twelve. As for thirteen, this was something no one had even thought about since it was simply impossible. But now, this miracle appeared before everyone and completely overwhelmed them.

Chapter 1096: Standing Strong Against An Imperial Weapon

Thirteen palaces were supreme, especially the thirteenth one. It was higher than the nine heavens, higher than all in this world and myriad realms. Only by having thirteen palaces would one be able to escape all restraints as the pinnacle of existences.

Many people felt despair after seeing them. The young masters and prodigies had dreams and aspirations. Even though they were not as great as Li Qiye or even Jikong Wudi's group right now, they thought that as long as they kept on trying, they would be able to surpass even Li Qiye one day.

But now, the supreme palaces left them devoid of hope. It was not something that could be surpassed with effort!

Jikong Wudi's face twisted while looking at the thirteen palaces. An unspeakable jealousy completely distorted his heart.

All along, the glory had always been his. He was the most impressive genius, the one most qualified to become the Immortal Emperor. His three saint aptitudes were incomparable and gave him an unparalleled advantage.

But now, Li Qiye had deprived him of his spotlight. Before the thirteen palaces, all of his advantages and talents were worthless. His teeth clattered from rage as he swore that he would never exist alongside Li Qiye!

Heavenly Emperor Lin and Zhan Shi training in the far distance also saw this scene. Their expressions quickly shifted to the point of being pale. Both of them lost their minds.

They were confident with firm dao hearts. They accepted that Li Qiye was stronger than them, but they were still determined all the same as they had one chance to fight against Li Qiye. However, when the palaces appeared, it was as if they could see their confidence collapsing before their very eyes.

After a long time, the two finally calmed down and glanced at each other. They felt a bit helpless at this moment. This feeling left them greatly frustrated.

The two thought about how it didn't matter how powerful they became or what achievements they have, they would never be able to surpass the thirteen palaces. Even if they became Immortal Emperors in the future, it was still impossible to surpass them. These palaces would forever be a shadow in their hearts.

“Why did we have to be born in the same generation as him?” Zhan Shi murmured. Despite his unwavering, nigh-peerless dao heart, he was still lamenting his ill fate at this moment.

“We were still underestimating Li Qiye.” Lin bitterly smiled and was speechless.

In a different location, Bing Yuxia was embracing two beauties on both sides and saw the thirteen palaces. She also became shocked

and let go of the two girls. After a long time, she struggled to regain her sanity: “Is he still a human? Even gods and devils wouldn’t be able to create such a miracle.”

The world went silent before the palaces. None of the cultivators in the lesser world dared to breathe lest they break this tranquil moment.

In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye stood before the abandoned city where the chief ambassador resided.

At this time, the ambassador was seated on the imperial throne with an attitude full of disdain for the rest of the world. His God-Monarch aura rampaged, causing people to feel fear. The disciples of the soaring sect stood to his left and right in lines. There were also cultivators from great powers who wanted to curry favor.

The ambassador was not pleased to see Li Qiye’s blatant provocation. This was simply a slap to their faces. His eyes turned cold after seeing Li Qiye’s thirteen palaces. In his eyes, regardless of the cost, he must eliminate this junior. The reason was not only because of Li Qiye’s slight towards the sect, but also because he must pave the way for the Soaring Immortal descendant in the future. Otherwise, if this junior ahead became the Immortal Emperor, it would be a disaster for their sect.

“Just the Soaring Immortal Sect alone dares to posture before me?!” Li Qiye hovered in the sky and coldly glared at the ambassador.

At this moment, no one said anything. None of them felt that Li Qiye was being arrogant after seeing his thirteen palaces. His eligibility for acting imperious was proven.

A disciple of the soaring sect shouted: “Junior! Cease, cease your impudence!” Even though they understood just how scary and powerful Li Qiye was, they wouldn’t allow anyone to challenge their sect!

“Kneel!” Li Qiye glared at the guy. In the blink of an eye, an imperial momentum exploded and suppressed the heavens. Li Qiye was the emperor of gods; he was in control of myriad realms and all living beings must prostrate and worship him.

“Bang!” All the Soaring Immortal disciples here uncontrollably kneeled to the ground. Even though they struggled to get up, it was impossible under the pressure of the imperial momentum.

And it wasn’t just the disciples from the soaring sect, many experts all around who wanted to support the soaring sect fell to the ground as well. Among them were even paragons from the previous generation.

This result left them angry and ashamed. There were some rulers in this group, but today, they were kneeling before a junior. It was a truly humiliating crisis.

Li Qiye’s actions made the ambassador’s expression turn ugly. It was simply breaking all pretenses while fiercely shattering his prestige.

In a fury, the ambassador stepped into the sky with a terrifying blood energy that could support an entire world.

“Junior, don’t you think you are being too arrogant?” He spoke: “Your achievement is indeed astonishing, but the Soaring Immortal Sect is something you will never be able to provoke. Your future path is still very long, antagonizing my soaring sect—”

“Haven’t I provoked it by now?” Li Qiye gave him a quick glance in a domineering manner. His imperial momentum pressed on as he coldly said: “Even if this world was bigger, there is no one that I can’t afford to provoke!”

“How insolent!” The ambassador could stand it no longer. He shouted and prepared to attack. In an instant, the Heaven’s Will cried out. Supreme strands of grand dao emerged. His first attack was a Heaven’s Will Secret Law!

To be able to start with such a great technique showed that he was indeed a monarch of the soaring sect. This capability didn’t only display his confidence but also proved the frightening power of the soaring sect.

It was a God-Monarch attacking with a secret law. With just one move, Yin and Yang were buried, myriad dao were boiled dry while the reincarnation cycle was disintegrated.

Even a God-Monarch would be aghast in the face of this move and wouldn’t be able to block it.

However, Li Qiye didn't even bat an eye. He gently pushed his palm forward. This was the Dragon Subduing Palm.

“Boom!” It easily struck down this secret attack.

The ambassador was caught off guard and knew that he had met a powerful foe. Even though this junior was not of the God-Monarch level, he could challenge one due to his thirteen palaces!

“Junior, you are strong enough, but there are many people who are stronger than you in this world.” He coldly uttered while taking out an imperial weapon.

The weapon in his hand poured down strands of imperial auras. Each strand was as wondrous as a galaxy and capable of crushing the whole world.

The terrifying imperial weapon in his hand seemed to be waking, causing others to tremble. Even though it was not a true treasure, it wasn't so simple when the wielder was the ambassador.

“Junior, accept your death!” He didn't waste words. He cried out and jumped into the sky before unleashing his imperial weapon.

“Boom!” The void was shattered by its might. An imperial light soared to the nine layers of the heavens with meteors raining down. This was a painting of an apocalypse. A huge black hole emerged, causing the world to turn dark as if the sun had been cut

down.

In just a second, many people were terrified and scared out of their wits. They prostrated on the ground from the unstoppable pressure and couldn't get up even if they wanted to.

“Bang!” A powerful shockwave blew away all the debris in the void. Even the black hole was annihilated by this impact. The sky seemed to have been battered back to the origin, a vast nothingness.

Amidst this faint space, everyone saw an astonishing scene. Li Qiye actually used his fist to meet the imperial weapon head on. The crowd would never forget this scene for the rest of their lives. He was bare-handed without treasures or weapons.

Myriad Dao Fist, Indestructible Diamond Fist! Even imperial weapons couldn't destroy Li Qiye's indestructible fist. With the power of the thirteen palaces, he could directly withstand an attack from the imperial weapon.

“Stopping an imperial weapon with his bare hands, and an attack from a God-Monarch at that...” Many people were astounded. Not to mention the younger generation, even a God-Monarch wouldn't have been able to do this.

This was a miraculous feat for anyone. Before taking the gap in cultivation into consideration, even those on the same level wouldn't dare to take an imperial weapon straight on.

Another God-Monarch watched from the distance and emotionally murmured: “Everything is possible with thirteen fate palaces.”

Chapter 1097: Five Emperors

“Scram!” Li Qiye’s eyes narrowed and his inner physique lit up. At this moment, the Sky Destroyer Physique erupted with enough power to lift up the earth if it had a handle!

It was a physique with infinite might, capable of flipping over the earth and tearing apart the sky.

“Bang!” Even the imperial weapon couldn’t stop Li Qiye’s Sky Destroyer Physique. With a loud explosion, it was smashed away.

The emissary went flying as well while crazily spurting blood. At this moment, even a God-Monarch wouldn’t do.

The crowd was out of breath just by watching this battle.

“You can’t even use an Imperial Massacre yet you still dare to talk big in front of me?” Li Qiye snorted and slammed his foot down, smashing myriad dao and stars alike.

The Hell Suppressing Physique came out and astounded the crowd. They all saw gods and devils screaming and even the heavenly dao shattered from its immensity.

An Immortal Physique cultivated by Li Qiye was completely different from everything else. It was perfection without flaws. No one could challenge the immortal energy in the sky. This was a real Immortal Physique.

“Boom!” The skydome broke apart from Li Qiye’s stomp. However, it was still stopped before crushing the ambassador into a pulp.

In the face of life and death, the ambassador instantly took out an immortal diagram!

“Buzz—” Five majestic figures came out of the radiating diagram to stop Li Qiye’s stomp.

The five stalwart giants were accompanied by extremely powerful imperial auras that suppressed the entire lesser world. All living beings became insignificant and trivial; the celestials above lost their brilliance.

These were five imperial energies. Their appearance caused everyone here to be struck with awe and fear.

“Five Emperors Diagram!” Someone shouted after recognizing the painting.

This diagram was left behind by the emperors of the soaring sect. In the legends, Immortal Emperor Fei was the first to draw his picture. Later on, the four generations of emperors in the sect also drew their pictures as well.

Just imagine, the power of one emperor was frightening enough, but five of them? It was beyond human comprehension. Even gods

and devils would prostrate before their figures.

The ambassador heaved a sigh of relief after seeing his Five Emperors Diagram stop Li Qiye. This was his ultimate move. Even though the imperial energies inside weren't necessarily more powerful than an imperial weapon, in truth it was the other way around by a large margin, the crux of the problem was that he couldn't unleash an Imperial Massacre!

“It's just your sect's power.” Li Qiye opened his forehead.

“Buzz—” A huge hand emerged from his sea of memories. Its reach destroyed all worlds in a tyrannical manner. Even deities would be deterred before its extinguishing might!

The presence of the world-destroying hand caused the five supreme figures to suddenly flash with uncertainty. After a whoosh, this hand easily took away the Five Emperors Diagram.

“No way...” The crowd shouted after seeing this horrifying scene. Even the pale ambassador cried out with a pained expression.

It was simply impossible. How could an outsider take away their soaring sect's Five Emperors Diagram? Who could actually suppress these imperial energies?!

But the impossible had happened.

Of course, no one knew that although these energies were

frightening, Li Qiye's memory which had been blessed by numerous emperors was even more horrifying.

Remember that even emperors from the soaring sect, such as Immortal Emperor Tun Ri and Immortal Emperor Ba Mie, had blessed Li Qiye's sea of memories before. The world-destroying hand that reached out earlier was the blessing from Immortal Emperor [Ba Mie](#).

Think about it, Immortal Emperor Ba Mie himself took action, so how could he not take the diagram away from the soaring sect?

“Go!” In the split second in which Li Qiye recalled the Five Emperors Diagram, a spatial portal was suddenly opened by someone next to the ambassador and a shout came about.

The ambassador didn't need to think, he immediately rushed into the portal to escape. At this point, he didn't even care for the other disciples.

The Five Emperors Diagram had fallen into the hands of an enemy — this was truly a great disaster, so he needed to save his life first.

“Hmph.” Li Qiye snorted after seeing the ambassador escape and casually handed the Five Emperors Diagram to Chen Baojiao standing next to him.

At this time in the abandoned city, the soaring sect's disciples

were all kneeling along with the experts from the other great powers. Although they were not willing to prostrate, Li Qiye's invincible momentum left them unable to stand up.

The soaring sect's disciples were in despair after seeing the ambassador run away. Their sect always had smooth sailings no matter what business they dabbled in, but now, even their ambassador had to run to stay alive. This truly shattered their confidence.

The crowd watched with bated breaths. It didn't matter if they were big shots or truly powerful, at this moment, they all obediently shut their mouths!

Li Qiye looked down at the kneeling disciples and smiled: "I will not kill you all today. It is not because I am merciful, it is so that you can scam back and tell the old geezers from the Soaring Immortal Sect one thing. When I, Li Qiye, am in this world, stay the hell out of my way. If they dare to hinder me, I will personally crush your Soaring Immortal Sect! Moreover, for anyone who dares to touch the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, I will make them regret being born into this world!"

These domineering words were too much to take in. For millions of years now, who has ever dared to threaten about crushing the Soaring Immortal Sect? But today, Li Qiye was overbearing and did so before everyone. This tyrannical attitude was met with silence. No one dared to utter a single word.

At this time, even though some Soaring Immortal disciples wanted to shout to win back a little dignity for their sect, they

couldn't even stand up due to the pressure. The only thing they could do was to kneel there obediently. All of them became quite docile.

“Scram.” Li Qiye scowled and recalled his imperial momentum.

The kneeling disciples looked as if they were just pardoned and immediately left. They didn't want to linger since it would only bring about further disgrace.

As for the experts from the great powers, they didn't dare to fart at this moment. They quickly crawled and rolled away. They wanted to run as far away as possible to never see Fiercest again.

Li Qiye coldly glanced at the crowd. His piercing gaze caused many people to shiver. From today on, even God-Monarchs would be afraid of Li Qiye and no longer want to oppose him. He was truly too frightening.

He turned around and left with the girls.

A beautiful successor from a great power watched Li Qiye's group leave and murmured: “No wonder why even Mei Suyao wants to go with him. If I could meet such a master, I would be willing to follow him as well.”

The crowd could finally breathe easy now that Li Qiye was gone. From now on, wherever Li Qiye appeared, it would create a lot of pressure for everyone. He was just like a Godfiend looming in their

minds.

A few geniuses calmed down and slowly got up.

“Let’s go back, we should all just go back.” These geniuses became quite discouraged.

Someone next to him had to ask: “Young Noble, are we really leaving just like this? No more digging for treasures?”

This descendant bitterly smiled and gazed towards the distance and spoke forlornly: “Treasures? For what? No one can stop him. That is true invincibility. I might as well go grazing in the southern mountain.”

Li Qiye’s achievement was too big of a blow for these people, especially the once-ambitious geniuses. They were at the point of being drowned in despair.

Later on, rumors of Li Qiye began to spread. Many youths decided to go back to their sects and never came out again. They didn’t want to talk about competing for the Heaven’s Will any longer because they knew that it was completely hopeless in this generation.

Even Jikong Wudi was pale. He gritted his teeth and walked away without saying anything.

“Thirteen palaces...” Lin wasn’t feeling so good either this time.

“This is hopeless, we definitely can’t fight Li Qiye. He is too strong.” The indomitable Zhan Shi spoke weakly as well.

Lin eventually regained his mind. He looked at the sky and gently shook his head: “It seems like my senior brother is in trouble. He might not be able to compete against Li Qiye either.”

“Forget it, even though defeat is imminent, we still have to fight Li Qiye again.” Zhan Shi sighed and stated: “We must lose in a heroic manner without any room for doubts! We can’t be cowards who run from battles.”

“Even if we lose, we will still have to fight!” Lin agreed with this sentiment and forcefully said: “We will fight with honor. Even if we lose, it won’t be shameful at all!”

Zhan Shi bitterly smiled and self-deprecatingly commented: “Shameful? To be able to fight against thirteen palaces can be regarded as a type of glory, a worthwhile life. It is not that we are weak, it is that our enemy is too strong.”

They felt a bit desperate at this time. Li Qiye’s achievements were too much for them, but no matter what, they must remain strong unlike others who became disheartened right away.

Ba Mie = Tyrannical Extinguisher.

Chapter 1098: Three Grand Imperial Kings

Li Qiye's thirteen palaces left many people feeble and despairing.

"Thirteen palaces..." So many people lost their minds as they murmured: "Why was I born into this generation? Do the heavens want to oppress me so? Li Qiye will certainly become the Immortal Emperor of this era!" Even the previous generation who considered Li Qiye an enemy had to admit as much.

Li Qiye ignored the crowd and took the girls to the City of Emperors.

The City of Emperors was gigantic. In the Imperial Border, there was not another city of the same size. In the old ages, this city belonged to the Imperial Lord. He used to rule over the border from this location.

After so many years, the city had lost its master, resulting in its appearance becoming a bit gloomy. Its imperial momentum no longer soared to the sky.

A huge bell was hanging above the city. It had not been rung for who knew how many years and had a greenish bronze tint to it.

According to legends, only Imperial Kings could ring this bell. Other people, regardless of how powerful they may be, wouldn't be able to.

Li Qiye glanced at this bell hanging high in the sky and gently knocked on it.

“Clang! Clang! Clang!” The bell echoed across the entire border. Every single soldier heard the noise.

In fact, it wasn't only Imperial Kings who could ring the bell, it was only those who had an imperial sword. Li Qiye intended on summoning the three other Imperial Kings holding the special swords by ringing this bell.

“Creakk—” The shut gate of the city slowly opened after the bell sounded. It had been closed for so long that when it opened, an ancient gust of air immediately rushed out.

“You guys stay outside.” Li Qiye told the girls before entering by himself.

The girls didn't question it and waited outside.

Many people saw this scene and were quite surprised. All along, outsiders couldn't open the gate to this city, not even Godkings. But today, Li Qiye managed to do so with ease.

A common cultivator murmured: “First it was the Dark Maxim Palace, now it is the City of Emperors. Fiercest is truly too devilish, it's as if nothing in this world can trouble him.”

“What is more devilish in this world than having thirteen

palaces?” Someone next to him responded: “If he has thirteen palaces, nothing else really matters.”

The first speaker couldn't help but smile wryly after hearing this. It was indeed the truth. Nothing in this world was more astonishing than having that many palaces.

“Evil Buddha, Devil King, Imperial King, he can transform so freely. Just what is his dao heart?” A knowledgeable expert became quite curious.

Even if he could put on the disguise, the evil energy and imperial momentum weren't things that could be fabricated. It truly required the person to have a devil or an imperial heart.

“Boom, boom, boom!” While many were curious, the sky suddenly shook. A cavalry approached from the sky. It was a huge imperial army.

Leading this army was an Imperial King with an engulfing imperial momentum. He was blind in one eye while the other one had a demonic feel to it.

This was one of the three grand Imperial Kings of the border — Evil-eyed Emperor!

Even though the border had many kingdoms, only the kings of the three great empires were eligible to show up!

This cavalry quickly reached the City of Emperors. The Evil-eyed Emperor jumped down from his chariot and ordered the soldiers: “Stay outside.”

With that, he entered the city. Right afterward, another explosion detonated. A different cavalry approached. The Imperial King leading this troop looked quite scholarly. He was titled [Erudite Emperor](#).

He also left his troops outside of the city and went in alone. Not long after, the last emperor came — Triumphant Emperor. He did the same as the previous two and entered by himself.

Inside the City of Emperors, Li Qiye, in his imperial armor, sat imperiously above and glanced at the three new arrivals.

Erudite slowly spoke: “War, you have finally returned.”

Li Qiye only smiled. His imperial momentum was even stronger than the other three.

“Hah...” Evil-eyed Emperor sneered: “War, you think it is appropriate for an outsider like you to sit here and give out orders?”

Li Qiye only glanced at him and answered: “Evil-eyed, don’t try that sarcastic tone in front of me. Does it matter whether I am an outsider or not? The important thing is that I have an imperial heart, one that is stronger than yours!” His eyes turned cold as he

went on: “If you aren’t convinced, you can challenge me. I will suck you dry of your momentum so that you can start as a foot soldier all over again! I trust that there are many Imperial Kings at the border right now who would be more than happy to have your sword!”

Evil-eyed only scowled and didn’t want to continue this conversation. He was only a junior before War Emperor. Moreover, Li Qiye was right. One’s identity didn’t matter here, only the dao heart had importance.

War Emperor had received an imperial sword, this meant that the Imperial Border recognized him! In fact, he was the only outsider for millions of years to have been accepted by this place.

“It isn’t easy for all of us to come together, let’s have a nice talk.” Triumphant Emperor mediated.

“I’m an easy person to speak to.” Li Qiye lazily sat there while still having an unreachable temperament: “However, if someone wants to challenge my authority, it won’t be a nice talk anymore.”

Evil-eyed snorted in response. Even though he had an unfavorable view of War Emperor, he wasn’t willing to break all pretenses of cordiality with him. After all, the border knew just how strong the Kingdom of Emperors was.

“What is your plan for coming back this time?” Erudite Emperor quickly changed the topic.

The Kingdom of Emperors had been sealed in the icy mountain for a very long time now without coming out. This was a great matter for the Imperial Border and especially for the three great empires.

Triumphant Emperor also inquired: “Do you want to enter the Expedition Path?!”

It has been a long time since an empire has embarked on the path.

Li Qiye glanced at the emperors and flatly asked: “You three don’t want to do it?”

Erudite Emperor wanted to say something, but he only gently sighed in the end. Triumphant Emperor spoke instead with some hesitation: “I do! But compared to the empires that have done so in the past, my empire is still not capable enough, so I want to wait for several more generations before going.”

For the imperial soldiers and everyone at the border, time was not an issue. Normally, if they weren’t fighting or mining, they would be slumbering.

“You actually think that is possible?” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “Waiting for a few generations?”

“What do you mean?” Evil-eyed Emperor raised his brows at Li Qiye and asked right away.

“For us, time is not an issue, the last thing we needed was time. However, that is all in the past. Right now, time is especially precious for the entire border.” Li Qiye explained.

The other two emperors were startled. Triumphant tried to get some clarification right away: “War Emperor, what do you mean...”

“The Buddhist Funeral Plateau will not give you time.” Li Qiye elaborated: “According to a quick estimation, the plateau might take action in this generation.”

“This is only your speculation.” Evil-eyed scowled with distrust.

Li Qiye coldly stared at him: “Evil-eyed, do you think I need to deceive you? If I wanted to rob you of everything, must I resort to treachery? With my imperial heart, I can control all the momentum in the border. With that, I can devour your momentum. It would be as easy as turning my hand over!”

Evil-eyed’s expression sank. Even though he was not happy about it, he had to admit that this was true. He would lose everything and have to start over again as a new soldier.

“Don’t forget, I can come and go whenever I want.” Li Qiye slowly said: “I understand the plateau and those old monks much more than the three of you. I have seen his current status and he is ready to fight whenever!”

The emperors glanced at each other for a bit. If the plateau was really ready to fight, then time was not on their side anymore. What was in abundance before had become quite scarce, resulting in an urgent situation.

Erudite Emperor asked: “Do you have any suggestions?”

Li Qiye stared at the three and answered: “I came this time to discuss this matter with the three of you. My Kingdom of Emperors along with your three empires can work together to enter the Expedition Path.”

“Work together?” The emperors became quite moved after hearing this. They knew just how strong the Kingdom of Emperors was. Plus, it had a frightening amount of Regal Gold.

“However, there is no free lunch in this world.” Li Qiye slowly added: “Our kingdom can let you come along on the path, but I have a condition.”

This title is a bit weird. It is (prime/best) combined with (page/leaf). I didn't find any references to this title and translating it literally can be weird. I'm guessing “page” here stands for being an intellectual, so erudite can fit well.

Chapter 1099: Decision

“What kind of condition?” Evil-eyed cautiously stared at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye promptly replied: “It is very simple, I want your three empires to be the vanguard!”

“So it boils down to you wanting us as cannon fodder.” Evil-eyed snorted: “If we act as your vanguard, only your kingdom will benefit. We will not participate in a matter like this.”

Li Qiye only coldly stared at him and spoke: “Evil-eyed, how many years have you lived for? Your vision is still so short. It seems that you have wasted all of these years living.”

“You!” Evil-eyed became angry right away. He stood up and glared at Li Qiye.

“Gentlemen, harmony is to be prized, harmony is to be prized.” Erudite Emperor quickly interjected: “Can we just sit down and discuss nicely instead of fighting after two or three sentences? This is a rare occasion for us to be together.”

Evil-eyed scowled and still sat down despite being discontent.

Li Qiye stared at the emperors and went on: “After entering the path, all of our kingdoms will be in the same boat. Everyone will work together, so there is no such thing as cannon fodder. Having my Kingdom of Emperors in the rear will only make your

kingdoms safer! On this journey, this is the only way for you all to be worry-free. It is not that I'm looking down on you all, but what do you think the chances of your three kingdoms successfully crossing are? Plus, do you have enough Regal Gold?"

"It is not that we can't work together. We know your kingdom's strength full well, but if you can't give us some kind of guarantee, how can we trust you?" Triumphant Emperor added.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: "Triumphant, the three of you are still too narrow-minded. Compared to the great emperors before you, there is still a big gap. It is not that you are not powerful enough, it is because of your insight and insufficient knowledge. However, this isn't your fault. After all, the previous emperors all came under the Imperial Lord. They knew and understood much more than the three of you."

He stared at them and continued on: "Your eyes are fixated on territory. The thing that you want to do is to protect your throne and maintain your kingdom."

"You feel that my Kingdom of Emperors might maneuver and seize your resources." Li Qiye chuckled: "But if I really wanted to do so, why would I wait until now? When my Kingdom of Emperors was on the same level as the emperors from the previous generation, you all only led lesser nations. In that generation, it is not difficult for me to unify the Imperial Border."

"But why is it that I still haven't done so? To be frank, it is because this land alone is not enough for me, and I have no interest in this little authority. If I truly desired such power, would it be

your three empires' turn to rise?"

Li Qiye coldly went on while glaring at the three: "In my eyes, your little authorities are not worth mentioning."

Such words were quite arrogant, but even Evil-eyed Emperor did not retort this time.

"The Kingdom of Emperors working with your three empires is due to my hope that everyone can cross the Expedition Path. It really is that simple." Li Qiye coldly said: "There would be no need for any scheming if I wanted your empires. My kingdom could just mobilize our troops and not long after, my endless cavalries would be able to wipe out everything!"

In an instant, the three emperors turned quiet. Despite their reluctance, they had to admit that Li Qiye's kingdom had such power.

After a long silence, the first to speak was Erudite Emperor: "My empire is willing to embark on the Expedition Path with the Kingdom of Emperors."

"If time doesn't wait for us, our destination shall be the Expedition Path. My empire is willing to go together as well." Triumphant Emperor added.

"Then add my empire as well." Evil-eyed finished it off.

“Very well, this is a wise decision.” Li Qiye nodded: “Hopefully, everyone will be able to tide over any difficulty. Regardless what is waiting for us on the other side, we will at least tread forward with courage!”

Both sides agreed and set up an agreement for the four empires to enter the Expedition Path together.

“I also have another little request.” After the agreement was made, Li Qiye looked at the emperors and spoke: “I want to borrow your imperial swords for a bit to open the imperial cave.”

The emperors glanced at each other for a bit. Erudite Emperor nodded his head: “I have no objections. When we enter the path, these swords will change masters anyway, so why not let War Emperor borrow them?”

Triumphant pondered for a bit before agreeing as well: “If War Emperor needs it, then you can take it.”

“War Emperor, didn’t you say that there is no free lunch in this world?” Evil-eyed more or less had a grudge towards Li Qiye, so he spoke with some annoyance.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Yes, there is no free lunch in this world, but that depends on the parties. I am asking you to lend the sword to show my respect. If I didn’t respect you, do you think I would need to ask?”

Evil-eyed scowled and didn't want to speak further. He threw his imperial sword at Li Qiye and coldly uttered: "Take it then, no need to thank me."

"Thank you then." Li Qiye leisurely smiled after catching the sword.

Evil-eyed snorted. He was very annoyed, but there was no point in talking since he couldn't beat War Emperor.

"War Emperor, will you also be going with us on the Expedition Path?" Erudite was curious.

Li Qiye gently sighed and shook his head: "No, I will not enter the path. At that time, I will pass down my imperial portal and momentum to Zhan Qi. He will be the Kingdom of Emperors' new ruler!"

"I still have a lot of unfinished business in this vast mundane world." Li Qiye slowly said: "This is where I envy the three of you. Completely carefree without emotions and restraints, you can leave at a moment's notice."

The emperors had no comment about Li Qiye not going because he was going to pass down his imperial momentum to his general, Zhan Qi. With this legacy, Zhan Qi would be as powerful as War Emperor, so it was essentially the same.

After a while, Triumphant spoke: "There is something that I

don't know if I should ask or not.”

“Who knows if we will meet each other again? So there's no need to be reserved.” Li Qiye nodded.

Triumphant contemplated his wording before speaking: “In the Imperial Border, there is a rumor. It states that back then, you, War Emperor, walked through the Expedition Path by yourself. Is this true?”

“Oh? About that.” Li Qiye smiled: “It doesn't matter if it is true or not. In short, I will not let the children of the Kingdom of Emperors perish in vain. After all, they have followed me from one generation to the next.”

Li Qiye stared at the emperors to stress his point: “However, this does not mean that the path will be flat. Who knows what the result of the expedition will be? In other words, each person might see something different, it might vary depending on the generation as well.”

“One must prepare for the worst before going.” He said: “Whether it is fate or a natural progression, in short, everyone will have to gamble it all. Only by walking forward without fear will you be able to reach the other shore.”

“The other shore...” Erudite suddenly felt a strange sadness: “Who knows what is waiting for us on the other side... What kind of world will it be? The Imperial Lord left along with all the other great emperors, and now it is our turn.”

For millions of years, ever since the Imperial Lord entered the Expedition Path, all of his powerful generals followed right after him. Along the river of time, one empire embarked on this journey after another.

Today, emperors like Triumphant, Erudite, and Evil-eyed were only little characters during the Imperial Lord's era. Among them, one used to be a foot soldier while another was a captain, and now, they finally became Imperial Kings.

Nevertheless, they still had to face the same choice as their predecessors — embarking on the Expedition Path.

Li Qiye said: “No matter what is waiting for us on the other side, it will be the closing of a curtain, an end.”

If there were other options, he wouldn't let the Kingdom of Emperors enter the path. There were too many uncertainties in this decision.

However, there was no other way. If he could take imperial soldiers out of the Lesser Imperial Devil World, he would have done so long ago for his millions of troops.

Rather than waiting to become the cannon fodder of the plateau, he would rather let them take a gamble and enter the path. Perhaps there was still hope.

On the other hand, being tied to the war chariot of the Buddhist Funeral Plateau had an easily predictable end. Regardless of the ultimate outcome, cannon fodder would not have a good ending.

“Okay, there is nothing worth remembering here anyway, let us go for it.” In the end, even Evil-eyed Emperor said this.

Chapter 1100: Di Wei

In the end, the negotiation was a success. The three great kings left the City of Emperors and brought their troops back to their kingdoms. They also had to prepare for the expedition.

Li Qiye took the four imperial swords outside and told the girls: “Let’s go.”

Many people were staring at him from the outskirts of the city. They saw the three emperors arriving, so they could guess that the emperors were here to see Li Qiye.

At this time, they watched from the distance with many speculations about what Li Qiye obtained from the city running through their minds.

“Just what kind of treasure did he get in there?” Someone quietly wondered.

A big shot from the previous generation shook his head: “For Li Qiye, treasures are only supporting items, they might not be important to him at all. I think this summoning might be to discuss something important.”

“This Li Qiye is too much. He actually became an Imperial King and managed to summon the other three Imperial Kings from the border — completely inconceivable. I’ve never heard of an outsider able to become an imperial soldier, let alone a king.” Regardless of how knowledgeable someone was, they would still find this

unbelievable.

“There is a rumor that once an Imperial King is powerful enough, they can summon the other kings. No one knows whether this is true or not, though.” A paragon from the previous generation commented.

Li Qiye and the girls left the City of Emperors and went southward across the border. Eventually, they came to the southernmost tip of the region and met a beautiful scene.

They arrived at a valley with scintillating imperial lights. Each of these rays resembled a divine sword. No one could enter this valley. It was said that some experts had tried to force an entry, but they were all turned into bloody mists by this terrifying imperial light. A God-Monarch had tried to do so as well, but he didn't make it far into the entrance before losing an arm. He was scared out of his mind and instantly fled, not daring to come close again.

“You guys wait out here.” Li Qiye commanded while standing at the entrance.

He looked at the valley for a bit before entering by himself. The moment he set his foot inside, one could hear a clunk. Countless lights instantly fused into a sea of swords, wishing to chop him into a bloody rain.

“Zhang—” Amidst the action, the four imperial swords left their scabbards and hovered behind his back. They created a huge

barrier to block the approaching sword sea.

However, after this barrier was formed, it seemed like the sea of swords purposely granted him entry. It slowly disappeared and let him pass.

After seeing this scene, the girls became quite curious, wanting to know what was inside the valley.

After stepping into the valley, Li Qiye found gurgling streams flowing everywhere. There was lush vegetation here along with a refreshing atmosphere.

The depths of the valley was where all the imperial lights came from. There was a big tree here, seemingly carved from a piece of divine jade. However, the incredibly terrifying imperial might emanating from it made it look more like an invincible king standing there than a tree.

Others did not even know its name — Sovereign Tree. It was a regal tree with an extremely powerful imperial momentum!

Under the tree was an old man silently meditating. He wore an embroidered robe with an indifferent expression. There was a gigantic sword in front of his knees.

He also emitted a horrifying imperial momentum. Without a doubt, he was an extremely strong imperial soldier, much stronger than Evil-eyed's group.

The moment Li Qiye approached, the old man suddenly opened his eyes with a glare capable of penetrating everything. This terrifying glare fell upon Li Qiye.

“War Emperor, long time no see.” The old man slowly spoke after seeing Li Qiye adorned in the imperial armor. His voice was full of a wondrous rhythm like jade and gold.

Li Qiye met his gaze and said: “Grandpa Wei, long time no see. Millions of years passed in a flash, your venerable self is even greater than before.”

This old man ahead was called [Di Wei](#). He was a personal guard of the Imperial Lord, but after the lord embarked on the expedition, he was the only one who stayed behind.

There were essentially no solitary soldiers at the border, but Di Wei was an exception. He had always been alone, guarding this place.

Di Wei looked at Li Qiye and spoke: “You are in an even better state with your own flesh and blood. It means that you will take over this generation.”

“Thank you, thank you. It is all thanks to Grandpa Wei’s blessing. This generation will definitely be mine.” Li Qiye chuckled.

In an ancient era, Li Qiye had stayed at the border for a long time. He schemed in this world and eventually became a king. Di Wei gave advice to him several times and told him secrets that the other Imperial Kings weren't privy to.

"This generation, eh." Di Wei sat there and gently sighed with an indescribable sadness as well as a sense of relief.

Li Qiye sat down and told him: "It seems like Grandpa Wei has also sensed the changes at the plateau. I don't need to say anything, I'm sure you already know what will happen in the future."

Di Wei gazed into the horizon and eventually commented: "A different path. Perhaps this was a chosen ending."

"Who knows what will happen?" Li Qiye gently shook his head: "Both Di Shi and the Buddhist Lord have their own path."

"You also have one as well." Di Wei smiled at Li Qiye with an air of sadness.

Li Qiye smiled back: "Yes, I have my own path. Or should I say, my pursuit is the same as Di Shi's. The only difference is the path we chose."

"Why didn't the Imperial Lord choose a different path?" Di Wei gently sighed: "But then again, who knows what will happen. Maybe all paths lead to a dead end..."

“Grandpa Wei, you are being too pessimistic.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “There will be an ending no matter what, the only difference is whether it is a good or bad end.”

“Finding out now isn’t necessarily a good thing.” Di Wei smiled wryly: “Eternal life or the final world, there will be no good that comes of this.”

Li Qiye then wondered: “Then what about the Imperial Lord?”

Di Wei pondered for a bit before answering quietly: “I don’t know. After he left for the Expedition Path, there hasn’t been any news. I don’t think he himself knows what awaits us.”

Li Qiye plainly stated: “If he has chosen this path, I’m sure he is confident.”

Di Wei eventually movingly exclaimed: “Eternal life. There really are some things that cause too much trouble. For many people, eternal life is full of temptation, a lifelong pursuit. But ultimately, they only become abominations that are neither humans nor ghosts!”

“If I could choose once more in my next life, maybe I would like to be an ordinary mortal.” The vicissitudes of life were embodied by the helplessness in his voice: “Even though life is short, there will be happiness and sadness through the struggles and blessings.”

“There is no medicine for regret for mortals and cultivators.” Li Qiye had to smile: “A mortal might have a house full of children that randomly die in the wild. I have no regrets. Since I have chosen this path, I will walk straight to the very end.”

“Nevertheless, I am different from you. You didn’t have any other choice, but I did. You were forced to become the Dark Crow while I was born into a wealthy family, never having to worry about food or clothing.”

“Maybe so.” Li Qiye gently nodded. It wasn’t his own choice to take this path.

“It is all in the past, let us not talk about it.” Di Wei softly sighed and shook his head as if he wanted to put all the troubles behind him.

Li Qiye asked: “Grandpa Wei, what is your plan?”

Di Wei pondered for a moment before answering: “The truth is that I don’t really know. Maybe I should go to the Expedition Path or just be cannon fodder and test my luck. If the plateau wins, I can still survive and kill my way out!”

Li Qiye nodded and revealed: “Yes, that is also an opportunity. However, if you want to enter the path, you can try that as well. My Kingdom of Emperors will be working with three other empires for the expedition.”

“Let me think about it.” Di Wei mused it over: “If I decide to go on the expedition with your Kingdom of Emperors, I can borrow your Regal Gold as well.”

“Grandpa Wei, you are too reserved.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Your advice back then was quite beneficial and allowed me to become the War Emperor in a short amount of time. Just a little Regal Gold is nothing.”

Di Wei smilingly denied: “I do not dare to accept the credit. If you didn’t have an imperial heart, even more advice would have been useless.”

Di Wei means imperial guard.